



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

Clar. Press.

31. 6. 87.

THE
H I S T O R Y
OF THE
REFORMATION
OF THE
CHURCH OF ENGLAND.

BY
GILBERT BURNET, D.D.
LATE LORD BISHOP OF SARUM.

A NEW EDITION.

VOL. III.



OXFORD,
AT THE CLARENDON PRESS.
MDCCCKVI.



THE
H I S T O R Y
OF THE
REFORMATION
OF THE
CHURCH OF ENGLAND.

PART III.
BEING A SUPPLEMENT TO THE TWO FORMER
PARTS.

TO THE
K I N G.

SIR,

THIS work, which is designed to finish the History of our Reformation, seems reserved to be laid at your MAJESTY's feet ; who, we trust, is designed by God to complete the Reformation itself.

To rectify what may be yet amiss, and to supply what is defective among us ; to oblige us to live and to labour more suitably to our profession ; to unite us more firmly among ourselves ; to bury, and for ever to extinguish, the fears of our relapsing again into Popery ; and to establish a confidence and correspondence with the Protestant and Reformed Churches abroad.

The eminent moderation of the most serene house from which your MAJESTY is descended, gives us auspicious hopes, that as God has now raised your MAJESTY, with signal characters of an amazing providence, to be the head and the chief strength of the Reformation ; so your MAJESTY will, by a wise and noble conduct, form all these churches into one body ; so that though they cannot agree to the same opinions and rituals with us in all points, yet they may join in

VOL. III.

a

one happy confederacy, for the support of the whole,
and of every particular branch of that sacred union.

May this be the peculiar glory of your MAJESTY's
reign ; and may all the blessings of heaven and earth
rest upon your most august person, and upon all your
royal posterity.

This is the daily prayer of him, who is with the
profoundest respect,

SIR,

Your MAJESTY's

most loyal, most obedient, and most
devoted subject and servant,

GI. SARUM.

THE
P R E F A C E.

I HAD in my Introduction to this volume, which I published a year ago, said all that then occurred to me in the way of preface: but some particulars coming to my knowledge since that time, give me an occasion to add a little to what was then copiously deduced.

I begin with Mr. Le Grand, who I understand is now in a considerable post in the court of France. He, being lately at Geneva, explained himself to my friends in these terms; "that he was young when he wrote against me, and that the heat of youth had carried him to some expressions, from which he would abstain, if he were to write now: he was glad to hear that I was upon the reviewing the History of the Reformation;" and named to them a Life that he had seen in Spain of Bartholomew Caranza, Archbishop of Toledo, who was King Philip's Confessor, and went with him to England; and was particularly employed in reforming (as they called it) the universities: and, as he said, he died when he was to be delivered out of the prison of the Inquisition. He added, that he had also seen a collection of Cardinal Pole's letters, with an account of what passed in England after the death of King Edward, which he believed I had not seen, and that could inform me of many particulars; but that he himself had other employments than to think of the

affairs of England. If I had received this civil message from Mr. Le Grand before I had published my Introduction, I would have said nothing at all with relation to him ; but what is past cannot be recalled : so I hope he will accept of this for all the reparation I can now make him.

As for Anthony Harmer, some have doubted if he could be capable of making three capital errors in one line : and since Mr. Strype has suggested to me that, in which I was under some reserve before, as having it from another hand, I am now free to set it down. For *capitulum ecclesiæ cathedralis*, he has printed, *epistolam conventus ecclesiæ catholicæ*. If the abbreviations may seem to excuse the reading *epistolam* for *capitulum*, and *catholicæ* for *cathedralis*, nothing can excuse the adding the word *conventus*, which he thought wanting to make a complete title, having read the others as he did : so I hope I have reason to have no regard to any thing that comes from him upon his bare authority. The weak and ill-natured attempts that some among ourselves have of late made upon me, give me no sort of concern, unless it is to pray for those who have despitely used me.

There was also a great poem lately prepared, and, I suppose, designed to be published, when that which our enemies hoped was near accomplished should have been effected. It was written in imitation of Hudibras, and so was a mock poem on the Reformation, composed by one Thomas Ward, of whom I can give no other account, but that it is said he is a priest. In it, Sanders's work was made the plot of the fable : it was full of impious abuse, put in a strain apt enough to take with those who were disposed to divert themselves with a show of wit and humour, dressed up to make the Reformation appear both odious and ridiculous ; not doubting of equal success with Butler's admired per-

THE PREFACE.

v

formance. It was no wonder, if, upon such a design, my History was treated with all the characters of scorn and contempt. This was what I might justly expect from those of that side: but I was sorry to find so much censure from those from whom I had no reason to expect it, and which seemed to be the effect only of envy and ill nature: God forgive them for it.

I must say a little more, with relation to a learned and copious writer of our ecclesiastical history, who finds my History often in his way: he treats me decently as to his expressions, but designs all through to set such remarks on my work, as, if they were well grounded, must destroy the credit that it has hitherto obtained. I will first give some instances to show what the spirit, the principles, and the design of that writer must be: I will name but four out of a great many.

When he sets forth King Henry the Eighth's proceedings against the memory of Thomas Becket, he has ^{P. 130. Vol. II. Col. I.} these words; "And though his conduct in this dispute was not altogether defensible, he was far, however, from being guilty of that gross mismanagement with which he is charged." I will leave the judgment that must be passed upon this period to all who are in any sort acquainted with the history of that time.

When he gives the character of King Edward the Sixth, immediately before he tells of his death, it is in ^{P. 332. Col. II.} these words: "His conscience was not always under a serviceable direction;" (the meaning of this dark expression I do not reach;) "he was tinctured with Erastian principles, and under wrong prepossessions as to church government; he seems to have had no notion of sacrilege;—and, which is somewhat remarkable, most of the hardships were put upon ecclesiastics in the latter end of his reign, when his judgment was in the best condition:" and without adding one word of

his good qualities, or to correct those severe reflections, he concludes with the account of his death.

P. 601.
Col. II.

He gives a very different account of the death of Mary Queen of Scots, in these words ; “ Her fortitude “ and devotion were very remarkable : she supported “ her character with all imaginable decency : she died “ like a Christian, and like a Queen.”

P. 671.
Col. II.

And, to mention no more, when he comes to Queen Elizabeth’s death and character, he runs a parallel between the two sisters, Mary and Elizabeth, in these words ; “ The one made martyrs, the other made beggars : the one executed the men, and the other the estates : and therefore, reserving the honour of the “ Reformation to Queen Elizabeth, the question will “ be, Whether the resuming the first-fruits and tenths, “ putting many vicarages in a deplorable condition, and “ settling a perpetuity of poverty on the church, was “ not much more prejudicial than fire and fagot? Whether destroying bishopricks was not a much greater “ hardship than the destroying bishops? because this “ severity affects succession, and reaches down to future “ ages. And lastly, Whether, as the world goes, it is “ not more easy to recruit bishops, than the revenues “ to support them?” These words give such an indication of the notion that the author has of the happiness or misery of a church, that they want no commentary.

Hist. of the
Reform.
Vol. II.
P. 266.

I will add this one remark of a fact upon a passage that I had writ concerning the book of Ordination, published in the third year of King Edward, which was in these words : “ Another difference between the Ordination book set out at that time, and that we now use, “ was, that the bishop was to lay his one hand on the “ priest’s head, and with his other to give him a Bible, “ with a chalice and bread in it, saying the words that “ are now said at the delivery of the Bible. In the “ consecration of a bishop, there is nothing more than

“ what is yet in use, save that a staff was put into his hand with this blessing, *Be to the flock of Christ a shepherd.*” Upon this his remark is in these words : ^{P. 290.}
 “ But here, as it happens, this learned person has been ^{Col. II.}
 “ led into a mistake; for the two first editions of the
 “ Ordinal made in King Edward’s reign have none of
 “ the different rites mentioned by this gentleman.” I
 was indeed surprised when I read this, and went to
 look into the first edition of that Ordinal, which I knew
 was in the Lambeth Library : for, by Archbishop San-
 croft’s order, I had the free use of every thing that lay
 there. There I went to examine it, and I found indeed
 a small variation from my History. The whole is in
 these words : In the ordination of a priest, after the
 imposition of hands, with the words still used, follows
 this rubric ; “ Then the bishop shall deliver to every one
 “ of them the Bible in the one hand, and the chalice,
 “ or cup, with the bread, in the other hand, and say,
 “ *Take thou authority, &c.*” In the consecration of a
 bishop, this rubric is ; “ The elected bishop, having
 “ upon him a surplice and a cope, shall be presented
 “ by two bishops, being also in surplices and copes,
 “ having their pastoral staves in their hands.” And
 after the form of the consecration, this rubric follows ;
 “ Then shall the archbishop lay the Bible upon his
 “ neck, saying, *Give heed to reading.*” The next ru-
 brick is, “ Then shall the archbishop put into his hand
 “ the pastoral staff, saying, *Be to the flock of Christ a*
 “ *shepherd;*” on to the end of the charge, now given all
 together, but then divided in two. This book was
 printed by Richard Grafton, the King’s printer, in
 March 1549 ; or by the Roman account, 1550. I have
 given this full account of that matter in my own justi-
 fication : I am sorry that I cannot return this learned
 person his compliment to myself, *that he was led into a*
mistake.

P. 310.
Col. II.

D. P. G.

The next, and indeed the last particular, that out of many more I will mention, is, the setting down the explanation, that was made upon the order for kneeling at the sacrament in King Edward's time, wrong in a very material word: for in that the words were, "That there was not in the sacrament any real or essential presence of Christ's natural flesh and blood;" but he instead of that puts, "corporal presence." It seems in this he only looked at the rubric, as it is now at the end of the communion service, upon a conceit that it stands now as it was in King Edward's book, though it was at that time changed: and we know who was the author of that change, and who pretended that a *corporal presence* signified such a presence as a body naturally has, which the assertors of transubstantiation itself do not, and cannot pretend is in this case; where they say the body is not present corporally, but spiritually, or as a spirit is present. And he who had the chief hand in procuring this alteration had a very extraordinary subtilty, by which he reconciled the opinion of a real presence in the sacrament with the last words of the rubric, "That the natural body and blood of Christ were in heaven, and not here; it being against the truth of Christ's natural body to be at one time in more places than one." It was thus: a body is in a place, if there is no intermediate body but a *vacuum* between it and the place; and he thought, that, by the virtue of the words of consecration, there was a *cylinder* of a *vacuum* made between the elements and Christ's body in heaven: so that, no body being between, it was both in heaven and in the elements. Such a solemn piece of folly as this can hardly be read without indignation. But if our author favours this conceit, yet, when he sets down that which was done in King Edward's reign, he ought not to have changed the word, especially such an important one. I shall say no more of that work,

but that there appeared to me, quite through the second volume, such a constant inclination to favour the popish doctrine, and to censure the Reformers, that I should have had a better opinion of the author's integrity, if he had professed himself not to be of our communion, nor of the communion of any other Protestant church.

But as I thought myself bound to give this warning to such as may have heard of that work, or that have seen it; so there is another History lately written in French, and which, I hope, is soon to appear in our own language, which I cannot recommend more than it deserves. It is Mr. L'Enfant's History of the Council of Constance; in which that excellent person has with great care, and a sincerity liable to no exception, given the world, in the history of that council, so true a view of the state of the church, and of religion, in the age before the Reformation, that I know no book so proper to prepare a man for reading the history of the Reformation, as the attentive reading of that noble work. He was indeed well furnished with a collection of excellent materials, gathered with great fidelity and industry by the learned Doctor Vander Hordt, Professor of Divinity in the University of Helmstadt; and procured for him by the noble zeal and princely bounty of that most serene and pious Prince Rodolph August, the late Duke of Brunswick Wolfenbuttle, who set himself with great care, and at a vast charge, to procure from all places the copies of all papers and manuscripts that could be found, to give light to the proceedings of that great assembly: that collection amounted to six volumes in folio. From these authentic vouchers the history of that council is now happily compiled. And if that learned author can find materials to give us as full and as clear a history of the council of Basil, as he has given of that of Constance, I know no greater service

can be done the world: for by it, popery will appear in its true and native colours, free from those palliating disguises which the progress of the Reformation, and the light which by that has been given the world, has forced upon those of that communion. We have the celebrated History of the Council of Trent, first published here at London, written with a true sublimity of judgment, and an unbiassed sincerity: which has received a great confirmation, even from Cardinal Palavici-*ni's* attempt to destroy its credit, and a much greater of late from that curious discovery of *Vargas's Letters*. But how well and how justly soever the history that *P. Paulo* gave the world of that council is esteemed, I am not afraid to compare the late History of the Council of Constance even to that admired work; so far at least, as that if it will not be allowed to be quite equal to it, yet it may be well reckoned among the best of all that have written after that noble pattern, which the famous Venetian friar has given to all the writers of ecclesiastical history.

Since I published my Introduction, I fell on many papers concerning the Reformation in Scotland, which had escaped the diligence of that grave and judicious writer Archbishop *Spotswood*; of which I have given a full account, and have used the best endeavours I could to be furnished with all the other materials that I could hear of. It is true, I never searched into a lately gathered famous library in this place; but yet I had from some, on whose good judgment and great care I might well depend, who had carefully looked through it, every thing that they found material to my purpose.

No curiosity pleased me more than that noble record of the Legate's proceedings in the matter of King Henry's divorce; of which I had the free use, as of every thing else that was in the library of my learned and dear brother, the late Bishop of Ely; in whose

death the church and all his friends, and none more than myself, have had an invaluable loss. I read that record very carefully twice or thrice over, and gave a full abstract of it, but did not then reflect on what has occurred to me since; for though, upon the credit of so noble a record, I have said that the King and Queen were never together in court, yet I find the contrary is affirmed by that King himself, in a letter bearing date the 23d of June, to his ambassadors at Rome, in these words; "Both we and the Queen appeared in person:" and he sets forth the assurances the cardinals gave of their proceeding without favour or partiality; "yet she departed out of court, though thrice called to appear, and was denounced contumacious." The only reconciling of this apparent contradiction seems to be this; that they were indeed together in the hall where the court sate, but that it was before the cardinals sate down, and had formed the court: for as it is not to be imagined that in the record so material a step could have been omitted, so highly to the honour of the court; so it is not likely that the Queen, after her appeal, would have owned the court, or have appeared before those judges: therefore the most probable account of that particular is this, that the King intending to appear in the court, the Queen went thither after him, and made that speech to him in the open hall, that I mentioned in my former work: but all this was over, and they were both gone, before the court was opened, or that the cardinals had taken their places; so that their appearance could be no part of the record of the court.

I am now to give an account of some papers that I add as an Appendix, for they relate to the former volumes. The first of these was sent me by one Mr. Thomas Granger, of whom I can give no other account, but that I understood he was a clergyman. He dated

his letter from Lammerton, near Tavistoke, in Devon, the seventh of February 168 $\frac{1}{2}$. I wrote him such a civil answer, as so kind a censure deserved : and I promised that I would make my acknowledgments more publicly to him whensoever I reviewed that work. Upon my settling at Salisbury, I inquired after him, but I was told he was dead : so I lost the occasion of returning my thanks to him in a more particular manner, which I now express thus publicly.

I had another letter, writ in another strain, full of expostulation, from Anthony (who affected to write himself) à Wood. He thought it incumbent on him to justify himself, since I had reflected on him : so he gave this vent to it. I wrote short remarks on it ; one of these I find is in the Bishop of Worcester's hand : they were sent to Bishop Fell, to be communicated to him ; but whether they were, or not, I cannot tell. The thing has escaped my memory, but the paper still remains with me ; and therefore I have thought it a justice to Mr. Wood's memory, and to his writings, to insert it here.

The third paper was drawn by me at Paris, in the year 1685. My History being then translated into French, was much read ; and as to the main conduct of our Reformation, it was approved by some men of great name. At that time there was an embroilment between the court of Rome and that of Versailles ; and the propositions that passed in the year 1682 seemed to threaten a greater rupture to follow. Upon that, the scheme of the English Reformation was a subject of common discourse ; and that was so much magnified by those who were called the *Converters*, that the hope of a reformation in France was one of the artifices that prevailed on some, who knew not the *depths of Satan*, and were easily wrought on to make their court by changing their religion, in hope that a great reformation of abuses

among them was then projected. But one of the learnedest men that ever I knew of that communion said then to myself, that all that was only done to fright Pope Innocent the Eleventh, who was then in the interests of the house of Austria; but that whensoever they should have a Pope in the interests of France, their court would not only declare him infallible in points of doctrine, but even in matters of fact: and he added, that it was an abuse that people put upon themselves, to imagine, that with what pomp or zeal soever the court seemed to support those articles passed in the assembly of the clergy, that this could have any other effect but to bring the court of Rome into their interests. He said, this had been Cardinal Mazarine's practice during his whole ministry: when he could not carry matters to his mind at Rome, he showed such favour to the Jansenists, as let many of them into great dignities; but when he had brought that court to what he designed, he presently changed his conduct towards them.

A person of distinction at Paris, finding my History so much liked, wrote a censure upon it. This run through many hands, but was never printed: it fell into Mr. Auzont's hands, and from him I had it. I wrote an answer to it, and got it to be translated into French: it was favourably received by many in Paris. I do not find the copy of that censure among my papers; but I have still the copy of my remarks on it, from which the substance of that censure may be gathered: so I have thought fit to add this to my Appendix.

The fourth paper is a large collection of many mistakes (descending even to literal ones) in both the volumes of my History, and in the Records published in them, which a learned and worthy person has read with more exactness than either my amanuensis or my-

self had done. I publish these sheets, as that unknown person sent them to me ; whom I never saw, as far as I remember, and who will not suffer me to give any other account of him, but that he lives in one of the universities. His copy of my work being of the second edition, only some very few of the errors marked that had crept into the second, but that were not in the first edition, are struck out. In several particulars I do not perfectly agree with these corrections : but I set them down as they were sent me, without any remarks on them ; and I give my hearty thanks in the fullest manner I can, to him who was first at the pains to make this collection, and then had the goodness to communicate it to me in so obliging a manner : for he gave me a much greater power over these papers than I have thought fit to assume.

The next paper is a much shorter one : it is indeed the abstract of a larger paper, but I have taken out of it only that which relates to my History, and have not meddled with some remarks made on Harmer's Specimen, and many more made on the Rights of an English Convocation. These did not belong to my subject ; so I have not copied them out. The writer has not let me know his name ; he sent the sheets to me in an unsubscribed letter, to which I wrote an answer by the conveyance that he marked out to me : but I have heard no more of him.

The sixth and last paper was sent me by the sincere and diligent Mr. Strype, who has descended to such a full and minute correction, both of my History, and of my copies of the Records, that I confess it gave me great satisfaction. Many of his corrections may seem so inconsiderable, that it may be suggested that they were not worth the while : but my whole concern in writing being to deliver the transactions of a former age faithfully down to posterity, nothing could please me

more than to have every error I had fallen into discovered ; and it was no small satisfaction to me, to find that a writer, who has been now above thirty years examining all that passed in that age, and has made great discoveries of many secrets hitherto not known ; and who was so kind as to pass over nothing, how small and inconsiderable soever it may appear to be, that was liable to correction ; yet did not touch upon any one thing that is of any moment in my whole work. This I look on as a very authentic confirmation of it all, except in the places thus censured, by one who has searched into all the transactions of that time with so much application and success.

This work was composed above a year ago, and after it was read and corrected by some proper judges, it was put in the press, and was printed off to the end of King Edward's reign, before the first of August last : nor has any thing been added to it since that time, except some very few particulars in the last book relating to Scotland.

I cannot conclude this Preface, and so dismiss this work out of my hands, without some reflections on what has appeared among us of late, but too evidently, in a course of some years. Many who profess great zeal for the legal establishment, yet seem to be set on forming a new scheme both of religion and government ; and are taking the very same methods, only a little diversified, that have been pursued in Popery, to bring the world into a blind dependance upon the clergy, and to draw the wealth and strength of the nation into their hands.

The opinion of the sacrament's being an expiatory sacrifice, and of the necessity of secret confession and absolution, and of the church's authority acting in an independence on the civil powers, were the foundations of Popery, and the seminal principles out of which that

mass of corruptions was formed. They have no colour for them in the New Testament, nor in the first ages of Christianity; and are directly contrary to all the principles on which the Reformation was carried on, and to every step that was made in the whole progress of that work: and yet these of late have been notions much favoured, and written for with much zeal, not to say indecency; besides a vast number of little superstitious practices, that in some places have grown to a great height, so that we were insensibly going off from the Reformation, and framing a new model of a church totally different from all our former principles, as well as from our present establishment: to all which they have added that singular and extravagant conceit of the invalidity of baptism, unless ministered by one episcopally ordained; though this not only cuts off all communion with the foreign Protestant churches; of which, perhaps, they make no great account; but makes doubtings to arise with relation to great numbers, both among ourselves, and in the Roman communion.

This I lament; not that I think that there is such a sacredness in any human constitution, that it is never to be called in question, or altered: for if we had the same reasons to alter any thing established at the Reformation, that our fathers had to alter the former establishment in the times of Popery, I should acknowledge we had now as good grounds to change the present, as our ancestors had then to change the former constitution. The Scriptures are the only sure foundation of our faith that is unalterable; all other constitutions being always to be governed by that perfect declaration of God's holy will with relation to mankind. But it gives a just indignation, to see the same men make wide steps to great alterations on the one hand, and yet make heavy complaints where there is no just occasion given, and that about points of mere speculation; whereas the

other relate to matters of practice, which had been in former ages so managed, that the whole complex of the Christian religion was totally depraved by them.

We have also rules and rubrics for worship that are our standards, fixed by law: and yet we see a humour of innovation making a great progress in these, without the least complaint, by the same persons who are apt to make tragical outcries on the smallest transgressions on the other hand.

Both are very culpable: but of the two, we find the growth of superstition has been so spreading, as well as so specious, that the extremes of that hand may be justly reckoned the more dangerous; one of the worst effects of superstition being that with which our Saviour charged the Pharisees of his time, that while they were exact in *tithing mint, anise, and cummin, they omitted the weightier matters of the Law, judgment, mercy, and faith*: in opposition to which, he gives a standing rule, applicable to all such cases; *These things ye ought to have done, and not to leave the other undone*. This relates to practices of a lower order, but such as are commanded; whereas voluntary and assumed ones, like the washings among the Jews in our Saviour's time, eat out the sense of the great duties of religion: instead of which, some trifling performances are set up and are highly magnified, while the others are spoken of more coldly. Nor does any thing feed a censorious and uncharitable temper more than these voluntary and distinguishing practices, which as they are the badges of different parties, so they are engines to keep up that wrath, emulation, and hatred, that has made such havoc among us of the great and indispensable duties of *peace, brotherly-kindness, and charity*.

These have been but too visibly the arts of Satan to divide and distract us, and have oftener than once brought us near the brink of ruin. God has often

rescued us, while the continuance and progress of these evil dispositions have as often made us relapse into a broken and disjointed state. Oh that we may at last *see the things that belong to our peace, and follow after those things that make for peace, and the things where-with we may edify one another.* In this prayer I will continue as long as I live, and I hope to end my days with it. We must ask it of God, and of him only : it is in vain to ask it of some men, who, when we *speak to them of peace, make them ready to battle* : we must look for it only to him who said, *Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you ; not as the world giveth, give I unto you.* The world will only give it to those of their own knot and party : but *the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be intreated ; full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy : and the fruits of righteousness are sown in peace of them that make peace.*

THE INTRODUCTION.

I COME, after a long interval of three and thirty years, to give all the finishing to the History of our REFORMATION, that I have been able to collect, either from new discoveries that have come in my own way, or the kind advertisements of friends, and the severe animadversions of critics; of which I have endeavoured to make the best use that I could. It has been objected to me, that I wrote in haste, and did not reflect enough on the matters I wrote about. That may be very true; and I will give an account how it happened to be so. When Sanders's History was published in France, it had so ill an effect there, that some of our best divines were often called on to hasten such an answer to it, as might stop the course of so virulent a book. Those to whom these advices were sent thought me a proper person to be engaged in it.

The ancient, the learned, and the pious Bishop of Worcester is the only person now alive that was concerned in the choice: and he having read all the printed books that he could hear of relating to those times, had taken the dates of every remarkable thing that passed out of them; which he caused to be copied out for me: they are about eight sheets of paper. Upon this stock I set out, and searched all the public offices about the town with a labour and diligence, that was then looked on as no contemptible performance. I marked every thing as exactly as I could. I might in such a variety make some mistakes, for which men of candour will make just allowances. But when I had gone through all that lay thus open to me, I knew what treasures were still in the Cotton Library.

The present Bishop of Worcester carried me to Sir John Cotton, to ask admittance: but a great Prelate had been be-

forehand with us, and had possessed him with such prejudices against me, as being no friend to the prerogative of the crown, nor to the constitution of our Church, that he said, (as he was prepared,) that unless the Archbishop of Canterbury and a Secretary of State would recommend me, as a person fit to have access to his library, he desired to be excused: and though that worthy Prelate said, he would be answerable for the use that I should make of it, yet he could not be prevailed on to depart from the answer that he had made us. Nor could that reverend person prevail with Archbishop Sancroft to interpose. And though I offered to deliver up all the collections I had made to any person that would undertake the work, yet no regard was had to that: so I saw it was resolved on, either not to let that work go on; or, at least, that I should not have the honour to be employed in it.

With this we were at a full stop, when, accidentally meeting with Sir John Marsham the younger, I told him how I was denied access to the Cotton Library: but he told me he was by marriage a nephew to the family, and that for many years he had free access to it, and he might carry with him whom he pleased. So I, with a copier, went thither under his protection; and we were hard at work from morning to night for ten days: but then the owner, with his family, coming to town, I could go no further. In that time, and in the haste we were in, I did make such a progress, that the good Bishop, together with the late Archbishop of Canterbury, Tillotson, and the late Bishop of Worcester, Stillingfleet, thought I was sufficiently furnished with materials for composing the first volume. Every part of it, as I wrote it, passed through their hands, and under their censure; and I submitted to their judgment in every particular.

I have been told, one that was much practised in that Library, who is now dead, has censured me for not comparing what my copier wrote carefully with the originals. To this all I can say is, that, as my copier by much practice was become pretty exact, so I made him read all over to me, having the originals in my hands. I cannot say, in such dull, though necessary work as the collating those things, I carried along with me all the attention that was requisite; but I did it as well as I could: and when I was lately in the Cotton Library, I read over several of the originals, but found no material differences

from the copies I had printed. One indeed runs through all those in the English language, which might perhaps offend a severe critic, that the old spelling is not every where exactly copied. I did recommend it to my copier, and he observed it often; but he said, when he wrote quick, it was impossible for him to carry an antiquated spelling along with his pen.

The first volume lay a year after I wrote it before it was put in the press, and was offered to be read and corrected by all who were willing to give themselves that trouble. When it was brought to Secretary Coventry for his licence, he was pleased to say, that he dipped into it out of curiosity; but added, that he found such an entertainment in it, that he could not part with it till he had read it quite through. The Earl of Nottingham, Lord Chancellor, took time to read and examine it, and to add many remarks in several parts of it; in all which I submitted to his censure: and some smaller matters coming in my way, they were added. So when those, under whose direction I made every step in it, advised me to put it in the press, I went on with it.

It happened to come out a few months after the discovery of the Popish Plot; and the ferment of that working powerfully over all the nation, the work was favourably received: and as I had the thanks of both Houses of Parliament for it, with a desire to finish what I had begun; so those who were the most zealous against Popery pressed me to make all possible haste with the second volume, when they understood that I had made considerable discoveries with relation to Queen Mary's reign. By that time Sir John Cotton, seeing the good use I had made of his library, was pleased to acknowledge the injustice of the suggestions that had been made to my prejudice, and allowed me free liberty to examine every thing in it: in which I ought to have been more exact than I was, in searching into the matters set forth in my first volume; but the repeated importunities of my friends for my publishing the second volume so far prevailed, that I only examined what belonged to that period. I took indeed some papers relating to the former reign, that accidentally fell in my way, and inserted them. I had also other materials brought me from several hands, upon the public notice that I gave of my design in the first volume.

That primitive bishop, Fell, of Oxford, engaged an acquaint-

ance of his, Mr. Fullman, to make remarks on it ; which he did with a particular acrimony of style : for which the Bishop had prepared me. I bore it, and drew out of it all that was material ; and sent it to him, to see if he did not find in it the substance of all his remarks on the first at the end of the second volume. It has been published over and over again, that he complained that I did not print a full account of his censure. The fact was thus : I sent it to him by the carrier, and begged of him, that, if he had any exception to the abstract I had made of his remarks, he would return it back to me as soon as was possible ; for the press was to be stopped till it came. I staid for it till the second return of the carrier ; and when no answer came, I reckoned he acquiesced in my abstract : so I put it in the press. But before it was printed off, his answer came by the third return of the carrier ; and I, finding that he excepted to some few parts of my paper, was at the charge of reprinting it exactly to his mind : and he afterwards received the present that I made him, without any insinuation of any complaint.

Thus this work was sent abroad into the world : nor do I yet see, what more I could have done to procure me better information, nor what other steps I could have made. It took quiet possession of the belief of the nation at home, and of a great part of Europe abroad, being translated into four languages : and for some years I heard of neither censure nor answer.

When I went to Paris in the year 1685, I found there was a censure going about, written, but not printed. It came into my hands, and I presently wrote an answer to it, which I got to be put into French ; and all who read both papers seemed fully satisfied with my answer : which will be found at the end of this volume. I was told, that it was writ by Mr. Le Grand ; who had given out in many companies, that he had great objections ready to be made to my History. Upon that, two learned and worthy men, Mr. Auzont and Mr. Thevenot, designed to bring us together, and to hear what Mr. Le Grand had to object. We dined at Mr. Thevenot's ; and after dinner, for the space of three hours, Mr. Le Grand proposed his objections, and I answered them on the sudden, far from charming them with my eloquence ; which Mr. Le Grand must certainly mean as a jest, for I pretend to no more French, than to

be understood when I speak it. What he said was mean and trifling; and yet it was so fully answered by me, that we parted civilly, and (as I thought) good friends: and when he was gone, both Thevenot and Auzont said, they were ashamed to hear such poor things objected, (*pauvretés* was their word,) after the noise that Mr. Le Grand had made. But two days after, Mr. Auzont came to me, both in his own name and in Mr. Thevenot's, and desired me not to speak of that matter to any person. The court was then so set on extirpating heresy, that they apprehended any thing said by me might bring me into trouble: they would do me justice, so I needed not be concerned to do it to myself.

I must also add, that Mr. Le Grand said, after he had offered his objections, that, as to the main of my History, he could furnish me with many materials to support it: and he made me a present of a very valuable book, published by Camusat at Troyes, 1613, with the title of *Mélanges Historiques*; of which I have made good use in the following work. The matter rested thus till the year 1688, that Mr. Le Grand published the History of King Henry the Eighth's Divorce: and soon after that, two other volumes of his appeared: one was a severe invective against me and my History; the other was a collection of letters, by which his History was justified. In this last there are some very valuable ones, to which I have had occasion oftener than once to refer my reader. In the two first of these tomes, Mr. Le Grand thought fit to lay aside all sort of good manners, and to treat me more in the style of an angry monk, than of one that had lived long in the company of well-bred men. I imputed this to a management he was under by some of the court of that unfortunate Prince, who soon after felt the tragical effects of such unhappy counsellors as had then the ascendant. To these I did believe Mr. Le Grand had dedicated his pen: and that drew from me a severe Postscript to a censure that I published upon the Bishop of Meaux's Book of Variations; for which I am heartily sorry, and ask his pardon.

The truth is, the first paper in his third tome seemed to justify any thing that could have been said, to expose a man that could offer such an abstract as he gave of it in his History, and them that judged so ill as to think fit to print that letter, that does plainly contradict the sense he gave of it. The letter is writ by Pace, Dean of St. Paul's, to King Henry, (said by him

to be written in the year 1526 ; but in that he is mistaken, as will appear afterwards,) on the subject of the divorce. He owns that he writ the book, which had been brought to the King the day before, by the advice and assistance of Dr. Wakefield ; who was ready to defend it all, either in writing, or in a public disputation. “^a And since he heard from the King, that “ some of his learned counsellors wrote, that Deuteronomy “ abrogated Leviticus, he shows him how false that was. It “ was only a recapitulation of the Mosaic Law. It seems they “ thought this was the importance of the Greek word *Deuteronomy*, (or a second Law ;) but he shows, that it imported “ only a repetition of the former Law, and the book had another title in the Hebrew. Then he says, that Wakefield “ desired him to let him know, whether the King had a mind “ to know the truth in that matter, whether it stood for him, “ or against him. To this Pace answered, that the King desired nothing but what became a noble and a virtuous Prince ; “ and that he would do a most acceptable thing to him, if he “ would take pains to let him know what was the pure verity. “ Then he, being under some fear, said he could not set about “ it, unless his Majesty would enjoin and command it ; but “ when he received his commands, he would set forth such “ things both against him, and for him, as no other person “ within his kingdom could do.” There is nothing here but what is honourable both for the King, for Pace, and for Wakefield.

Mr. Le Grand has made a very particular abstract of this.

^a Et quoniam Majestas tua mihi significavit, nescio quos e suis literatis consiliariis scripsisse Deuteronomium abrogare Leviticum, diligenter perquisivi quid id sibi vellet ; et tandem inveni id indubitato falsum esse : est compendium, ac repetitio, seu, ut ita dicam, recapitulatio Legis Mosaicæ. Et illud Græcum nomen *Deuteronomium*, quantum ad sensum rei attinet illud, idem significat quod habetur in Hebræo ; id est, liber, in quo continetur secunda Lex, vel repetitio primæ Legis. Post meum a Majestate tua discessum, D. R. Wakefeldus unice me rogavit, ut sibi significarem, an placeret tibi veritatem hac in re intelligere, utrum staret a te an contra te ? Ei ita respondi, Te nihil velle quod esset alienum a nobili Principe, et singularibus virtutibus prædito ; illum Majestati tuæ rem gratissimam facturum si laboraret ut puram veritatem tibi declararet. Tum ille nescio quo ductus timore negavit se hoc posse facere, nisi Majestas tua id sibi injungeret et mandaret ; et si mandares se producturum in medium tam contra te quam pro te illa quæ nemo alius in hoc tuo regno producere posset.

He says : “^b Pace, designing to flatter his Prince’s passion, “thought they should not stand either on the Vulgar, or the “LXX. Translators, but have recourse only to the Hebrew, “which he maintained was more favourable to the King. He “had written to Wakefield, and showed him the trouble the “King was in, and desired he would clear up the matter. “Wakefield, ravished to be thus employed, said he would justify all that Pace had said to the King : but then, apprehending that Pace might deceive him, or be deceived himself, or perhaps that the King might change his mind, he desired that “the King himself would let him know what he would have “him to do ; whether he should defend the one side, or the “other : and he would do according to the orders he should “receive, and make such discoveries for or against it as should “pass the capacity of all Englishmen. Thus (ends he) Wakefield, who had more vanity than religion, was driving a traffic “with his sentiments.”

I have put in the margin the Latin of Pace’s letters, and the account that Mr. Le Grand gives of it in French, that the reader may judge what can be thought of a man that represents things so unfairly, and makes such inferences from them. I confess this raised in me too much indignation to be governed as it ought to have been : I therefore thought such a writer deserved not to be followed in every step. I likewise employed at several times some who went to Paris, to try in what esteem that performance was ; and if I was not much deceived in the accounts sent me from thence, the book had lost the esteem of all persons there, so that it was no more talked of, nor read.

^b Nous avons la lettre de ce dernier, (Pace,) qui cherchant à flatter la passion de son Prince, vouloit que sans s’arreter ni à la Vulgate ni à la Traduction des Septante, on eût recours au texte Hebreu ; qu’il soutenoit luy estre plus favorable. Il en escrivit à Robert Wakefield, et luy decouvrit l’embarras où le Roy se trouvoit, le priant de luy vouloir éclaircir cette matiere. Wakefield, ravy de travailler pour le Roy, repondit d’abord, qu’il appuieroit ce que Pace avoit dit à Henry. Puis faisant reflexion que Pace pouvoit le tromper ou se tromper luy meme, ou que le Roy changeroit peut estre, il alla trouver Pace, et luy temoignoit, qu’il souhaitoit que sa Majesté luy escrivit elle meme, ce qu’elle vouloit qu’il fit, et si il devoit defendre le pour ou le contre, et qu’alors selon les ordres qu’il recevroit, il donneroit des éclaircissemens ou pour ou contre, qui passeroient la capacite de tous les Anglois. C’est ainsi que Wakefield, qui avoit plus de vanité que de religion, trafiquoit de ses sentiments.

I cannot therefore bring myself to examine it minutely; yet where any matter of weight requires it, I shall either justify or retract what I had delivered in my History. I shall say no more of that work in this place, save only that the original judgment of the Sorbonne, about which Mr. Le Grand seemed to be chiefly concerned, both in the conference I had with him, and in his book, is now found by Mr. Rymer, among the other judgments of the universities, in the secret treasury, out of which that laborious searcher into our original treaties has already published fifteen great volumes in folio. Of this I shall give a more particular account in its proper place.

The next attack that was made on my work was in the year 1693, under the title of, *A Specimen of some Errors and Defects in the History of the Reformation of the Church of England; by Anthony Harmer*. It is well known that was a disguised name, and that the author was Mr. Henry Wharton, who had published two volumes with the title of *Anglia Sacra*. He had examined the dark ages before the Reformation with much diligence, and so knew many things relating to those times beyond any man of the age. He pretended that he had many more errors in reserve, and that this Specimen was only a hasty collection of a few out of many other discoveries he could make. This consisted of some trifling and minute differences in some dates of transactions of no importance, upon which nothing depended: so I cannot tell whether I took these too easily from printed books, or if I committed any errors in my notes taken in the several offices. He likewise follows me through the several recapitulations I had made of the state of things before the Reformation, and finds errors and omissions in most of these: he adds some things out of papers I had never seen. The whole was writ with so much malice and such contempt, that I must give some account of the man, and of his motives. He had expressed great zeal against Popery in the end of King James's reign, being then Chaplain to Archbishop Sancroft, who, as he said, had promised him the first of those prebends of Canterbury that should fall in his gift. So when he saw that the Archbishop was resolved not to take the oaths, but to forsake his post, he made an earnest application to me, to secure that for him at Archbishop Tillotson's hands. I pressed him in it as much as was decent for me to do; but he said he would not encourage these aspiring men,

by promising any thing before it should fall; as indeed none of them fell during his time. Wharton upon this answer thought I had neglected him, looking on it as a civil denial, and said he would be revenged; and so he published that Specimen. Upon which I, in a letter that I printed, addressed to the present Bishop of Worcester, charged him again and again to bring forth all that he pretended to have reserved at that time; for, till that was done, I would not enter upon the examination of that Specimen. It was received with contempt; and Tillotson justified my pressing him to take Wharton under his particular protection so fully, that he sent and asked me pardon: he said he was set on to it, and that, if I would procure any thing for him, he would discover every thing to me. I despised that offer; but said, that I would at any price buy of him those discoveries that he pretended to have in reserve: but Mr. Chiswel (at whose house he then lay, being sick) said, he could draw nothing of that from him, and he believed he had nothing. He died about a year after: so I will say no more of him, only this, that where I see a voucher for any thing that he objects, I will submit and own my error; but I have no reason to take any thing on his word. I have a work lying on my table, which shows how little regard is due to his collections. It was sent me by a worthy person in one of the universities, and is a collating of ten pages of his *Anglia Sacra* with the manuscript that he vouches: it swells indeed to a book. Wharton omits the most material passage of an instrument that blemished one of his heroes. In some places there are errors in every line; and there are three capital errors in one line, and about fifty in that small compass. I have showed the book to a great many persons, and will show it to any who desire to see it; but do not descend here to further particulars, for that perhaps might discover the author, and expose him to the malice of an ill-natured cabal. Since that time, a writer of a greater name has with abundance of ill-natured scorn pretended to undervalue my work. I name him not, for I love not to transmit the remembrance of such things to posterity. Where he gives such vouchers as can be come at, I will be ready to retract; but when he appeals to some nameless manuscript in his own possession, I will have no regard to this: for a writer that has been found too faulty in citing such vouchers as can be examined, ought not to expect belief when

he has recourse to such as are kept by him as secrets, not to be communicated but to a few confidants; nor entirely to these, as I have been informed. All that has been hitherto objected to me, though with airs of great assurance and scorn, has been so trifling, that some good judges have thought I showed them too much respect to take any notice of them: they thought it was enough to mark down such small mistakes as I saw had been made by me, without so much as mentioning those who made such reflections. I would have complied with their advice, if I had not a just zeal to maintain the credit of that work: which I cannot do better than by acknowledging the discoveries that had been made, even in the minutest matters, though with all the indecency and contempt possible.

A very worthy person in one of the universities has sent me a copious collection of remarks on both my former volumes, but upon condition not to name him; which I will observe religiously, because I promised it, though it is not easy to myself, since I may not own to whom I owe so great an obligation: but I suppress none of them, and give them entirely as he offered them to me. I have had assistance from some other hands, which I will gratefully own as I come to mention them in their proper places.

I have chosen rather to publish all that is of new offered to me in a volume apart, than to reprint my former volumes with these corrections, as some have advised me to do. There are some thousands of the former impressions abroad in the nation, that would be of little value, if any such new edition should appear. I have ever looked on such new enlarged editions as little less than a robbing the public: besides that in so doing I should only drop those errors of my former work, without that formal disowning and retracting of them, which I think I owe the public. I have ever looked on falsehoods in history, when fallen into deliberately, as the worst sort of lying; both the most public, and the most lasting. But if they are more innocently committed, and are yet persisted in after a discovery, they are as bad as when done on design. I writ before as well and as carefully as I could: and if, in so great a variety of materials, some are spurious, and others appear doubtful; and if, in the haste in which the circumstances of that time almost forced me to publish that work, without looking out for more aid, and without waiting for further discoveries, there

are some inconsiderable errors and defects in the less important parts of my work, that relate not to the main of things; I hope the world will be so just and so favourable, as to make fair allowances for them, and to accept all the reparation I can make for past errors, when I own my failing, and set my readers right.

I come next to give an account of the reasons that moved me to set about this work at this time. The reasons of my engaging in it at first seem now to return upon me, and have determined me to delay the doing of it no longer. The danger of a popish successor then in view, and the dreadful apprehensions we had of the power of France, and of the zeal with which the extirpating that which some called the *pestilent heresy, that had so long infested those northern kingdoms*, was then driven on, made it seem a proper time to awaken the nation, by showing both what Popery, and what the Reformation was; by showing the cruelty and falsehood of the former, and what the patience and courage of our Reformers was: and the work had generally so good an effect then, that, if the like dangers seem to revert, it may not be an improper attempt to try once more to awaken a nation that has perhaps forgot past dangers, and yet may be nearer them than ever.

If there is any difference between the present state of things, and that we were in above thirty years ago, it is, that we are now more naked and defenceless, more insensible and stupid, and much more depraved in all respects than we were then. We are sunk in our learning, vitiated in principle; tainted, some with atheism, others with superstition; both which, though by different ways, prepare us for Popery. Our old breaches are not healed; and new ones, not known in former times, are raised and fomented with much industry and great art, as well as much heat: many are barefacedly going back to that misery, from which God with such a mighty hand rescued us, and has hitherto preserved us with an amazing chain of happy providences; but *the deaf adder stops her ear, let the charmer charm never so wisely*.

All books relating to those controversies lie dead in shops, few calling for them; many of them (as men of the trade have told me) being looked on as waste paper, and turned to paste-board. There are, after all, some real and sensible arguments, that may perhaps have some effect on those, who let not them-

selves be moved with matters of dry speculation, or with cold reasoning. I have made many discoveries, that may awaken some, on whom the clearest demonstrations will perhaps make no impression.

In Queen Mary's time, beside all that scene which I had formerly opened, of a perfidious breach of solemn promises, of the corrupting and packing of parliaments, and of that unrelenting cruelty, which was pursued to the end of that reign without intermission; I have had occasion to see much farther into the spirit which then prevailed. I have had the perusal of the original Council-Book, that went from the beginning of her reign to the last day of the year 1557; in which such a spirit of cruelty and bigotry appears through the whole course of that reign, that I was indeed amazed to find a poor harmless woman, weak though learned, guilty of nothing but what her religion infused in her, so carried to an indecency of barbarity, that it appears that Bonner himself was not cruel enough for her, or at least for her Confessor. She believed herself with child, and when the time came in which she expected to be delivered, she continued looking for it every day above a month: then a conceit was put in her head, that she could not bear her child as long as there was a heretic left in the kingdom.

It was a great part of the business of the Council, to quicken the persecution every where. Letters were writ to the men of quality in the several counties, to assist at the execution of those who suffered for heresy, and to call on all their friends to attend on them. Letters of thanks were writ to such officious persons as expressed their zeal, ordering them to commit all to prison who came not to the service, and to keep them in prison till the comfort of their amendment appeared. Directions were given to put such as would not discover others to the torture. Thanks were in a particular style sent to some gentlemen, who (as it is expressed) came *so honestly, and of themselves, to assist the sheriffs at those executions*. Pretences of conspiracies were every where under examination: many were committed, and tried for words. Letters were writ to corporations, about the elections of mayors; and the lords had many letters, to look carefully to the elections of parliament-men, and to engage the electors to reserve their voices for such as they should name. Sheriffs began to grow backward, and

to delay executions, in hopes of reclaiming persons so condemned : but they were ordered to do so no more.

Letters were on one day wrote to the sheriffs of Kent, Essex, Suffolk, and Staffordshire, and to several mayors, to signify what had moved them to stay the executions of such persons as had been delivered to them by the ordinaries, being condemned for heresy. One letter, of a more singular strain, was wrote to the Lord Mayor and the Sheriffs of London, to give substantial orders, (I give the words in the Council-Book,) "that when
 "any obstinate man, condemned by order of the law, shall be
 "delivered to be punished for heresy, there be a good number
 "of officers and other men appointed to be at the execution ;
 "who may be charged to see such as shall misuse themselves,
 "either by comforting, aiding, or praising the offenders, or
 "otherwise use themselves to the ill example of others, to be
 "apprehended and committed to ward : and, besides, to give
 "commandment that no householder suffer any of his appren-
 "tices or other servants to be abroad, other than such as their
 "masters will answer for : and that this order be always ob-
 "served in like cases hereafter." Such pains were taken to
 extinguish all the impressions of humanity, or at least to punish
 every expression of it. And this was so constantly pursued,
 that three men and two women were burnt at Canterbury on
 the tenth of November, a week before her death ; for she died
 on the 17th.

Nor were they satisfied with all these arts of cruelty in Eng-
 land ; but hearing that there were some of that sort in Ireland,
 one Cole was sent over with a commission to set a persecution
 on foot there. When he was at Chester, the corporation
 waited on him, in respect to his being sent by the Queen : he
 showed them his powers and letters to the government of Ire-
 land ; but leaving his papers on the table, when he went, in re-
 spect to this body, to conduct them down stairs, the mistress of
 the house, being secretly a zealous woman, did with a par-
 ticular address make up a packet like his, in which she put a
 pack of cards, the knave of clubs being turned uppermost :
 and so she took away his papers, putting this instead of them.
 He suspecting nothing, nor looking into them, went over to
 Dublin, and delivered his message and packet to the council
 there ; which was certainly received with scorn and indigna-
 tion. He came back to London, and got new powers, a few

Cox's His-
 tory of
 Ireland.

days before the Queen's death ; for the news of it overtook him before he had his passage. The levity of this story made me at first suspect it, till I found it in several books, in which it is said that the woman had for this service a pension from Queen Elizabeth.

I have in my former History showed what steps were made in that reign towards the setting up an Inquisition in England ; which was very probably suggested by King Philip and some of his Spaniards as the only sure method to extirpate heresy : but I have since seen some further steps made towards it. Ratcliffe, Earl of Sussex, was in high favour ; and he, who saw what was the method to secure and advance it, moved, that, instead of the dilatory proceedings in the ordinary courts, such offenders should be proceeded against by martial law. To this the Council wrote answer ; They commended his zeal, and acknowledged that such persons deserved to be so used : yet it was not thought the best way ; but they were to be punished as the laws did order. But when they had had their punishment, he was ordered to keep them in prison and in irons, till they came to know themselves and their duty. I have also found what he did towards the setting up an Inquisition. I did formerly print the instructions that were sent to the county of

Hist. of the Reform.
Vol. II.
Part II.
Book II.
Collect.
Numb. 19.

Norfolk : of these the sixth did run thus ; " They shall procure to have in every parish, or part of the shire, as near as may be, some one or more honest men, secretly instructed to give information of the inhabitants amongst or about them." I find in a register of the Earl of Sussex, that to the sixth article it is agreed, " That the justices of the peace, in every of their limits, shall call secretly before them one or two honest and secret persons, or more, by their discretions, and such as they shall think good ; and command them by oath, or otherways, as the same justices shall think good, that they shall secretly learn and search out such person or persons, as shall evil behave themselves idly at church ; or despise openly by words the King and Queen's proceedings ; or go about to make or move any stir, commotion, or unlawful gathering together of the people ; or that shall tell any seditious or lewd tales, rumours, or news, to move or stir any person or persons to rise, stir, or make any commotion or insurrection, or to consent to any such intent or purpose. And also, that the same persons, so to be appointed, shall

“ declare to the same justices of the peace, the ill behaviour of
“ lewd, disordered persons, whether it shall be for using un-
“ lawful games, idleness, and such other light behaviour of such
“ suspected persons, as shall be within the same town, or near
“ thereabouts. And that the same information shall be given
“ secretly to the justices : and the same justices shall call such
“ accused persons before them, and examine them, without de-
“ claring by whom they be accused. And that the same jus-
“ tices shall upon their examinations punish the offenders, ac-
“ cording as their offences shall appear to them upon the ac-
“ cusement and examination, by their discretion, either by open
“ punishment, or good aberring.” Here are sworn spies ap-
pointed, like the familiars of the Inquisition : secret depositions
not to be discovered ; and upon these further proceedings are
ordered. If this had been well settled, what remained to com-
plete a court of Inquisition would have been more easily-car-
ried.

Here is that, which those who look towards a Popish suc-
cessor must look for, when that evil day comes. All this will
make little impression on those, who have no fixed belief of
any thing in religion themselves, and so may reckon it a small
matter to be of any religion that comes to have the law and
the government on its side ; and resolve to change with every
wind and tide, rather than put any thing to hazard by strug-
gling against it. Yet some compassion to those who have a
more firm belief of those great truths might be expected from
men of the same country, kindred, and who have hitherto pro-
fessed to be of the same religion. The reviving the fires in
Smithfield, and from thence over the whole nation, has no
amiable view, to make any haste to it ; and least of all to those,
who, if they have any principles at all, must look for nothing
less than the being turned out of their livings, or forced to
abandon their families, and upon every surmise or suspicion to
be hunted from place to place, glad if they can get out of the
paw of the lion into parts beyond the seas : and then they may
expect to meet with some of that haughty contempt, with
which too many have treated foreigners who took sanctuary
among us.

But when this fatal revolution comes upon us, if God for our
sins abandons us into the hands of treacherous and bloody men,
whither can we hope to fly ? For, with us, the whole Reform-

ation must fall under such an universal ruin, that, humanly speaking, there is no view left beyond that.

Yet since that set of men is so impiously corrupted in the point of religion, that no scene of cruelty can fright them from leaping into it, and perhaps from acting such a part in it, as may be assigned them; there are other considerations of another sort, arising from some papers, (put in my hands since I wrote the History,) that may perhaps affect them deeper, because they touch in a more sensible part.

It is well known, how great and how valuable a part of the whole soil of England the abbey-lands, the estates of the bishops, of the cathedrals, and the tithes are. I will not enter into any strict computation of what the whole may amount to. The resumption of these would be no easy matter to many families: and yet all these must be thrown up; for sacrilege in the church of Rome is a mortal sin. And therefore Cardinal Pole, even in that pretended confirmation of the grants that were then made, laid a heavy charge on those who had the goods of the church in their hands, to remember the judgments of God that fell on Belshazzar for profaning the holy vessels, though they had not been taken by himself, but by his father. It is true, this may be supposed to relate only to church-plate; though there is no reason to restrain such a solemn charge to so inconsiderable a part of what had been taken from the church: no doubt, he had the whole in his view. And this showed, that, though he seemed to secure them from any claim that the church might have, or any suit or proceeding upon that account, yet he left the weight of the sin on their consciences; which a dexterous confessor might manage so as to make the possessors yield up their rights, especially when they themselves could hold them no longer: the thing was still a sin, and the possession was unjust. And to make it easy to restore in the last minutes, the statute of Mortmain was repealed for twenty years; in which time, no doubt, they reckoned they would recover the best part of what they had lost. Besides that, the engaging the clergy to renew no leases was a thing entirely in their own power; and that in forty years time would raise their revenues to be about ten times their present value.

But setting all this aside, it has appeared evidently to me, from some papers sent me some years after I wrote my His-

THE INTRODUCTION.

XXXV

tory, that all that transaction was fraudulent, and had so many nullities in it, that it may be broke through, whensoever there is a power strong enough to set about it. In the first powers that are in that collection, all the grace and favour that the Pope intended to the possessors of those lands was, to indemnify them for the mean profits they had received, and for the goods that had been consumed: *They restoring first (if that shall seem expedient) the lands themselves that are unjustly detained by them.* This was only the forgiving what was past; but the right of the church was insisted on for the restitution of those lands. The reservation in these words, (*If that shall seem expedient to you,*) can be understood in no other sense, but that it was referred to his discretion, whether he should insist to have the restitution first made before he granted the indemnity for the mean profits, or not.

It is true, the Council in England, who were in that supported by the Emperor, thought these powers were too narrow, and insisted to have them enlarged. That was done; but in so artificial a manner, that the whole settlement made by Pole signified nothing, but to lay the nation once asleep, under a false apprehension of their being secured in those possessions, when no such thing was intended: nor was it at all granted, even by the latest powers that were sent to Cardinal Pole. For in these, after the Pope had referred the settling that matter to him, that he might transact it with such possessors for whom the Queen should intercede, and dispense with their enjoying them for the future without any scruple, a salvo is added, by which the whole matter is still reserved to the Pope for his final confirmation, in these words; *Salvo tamen in his quibus propter rerum magnitudinem et gravitatem hæc sancta sedes merito tibi videretur consulenda, nostro et præfatæ sedis beneplacito et confirmatione:* "Saving always in such things, in which for their greatness and importance it shall appear to you that this holy see ought in reason to be consulted, our and the said see's good pleasure and confirmation." By these words it is very plain, that as in the powers granted they seemed to be limited to a few, to such for whom the QUEEN should intercede, since it is not expressed that the Pope thought that she should intercede for all that possessed them; so they were only provisional: and therefore, since no bull of confirmation was ever obtained, all these provisional powers were null and void when

the confirmation was asked and denied ; as all the historians of that time agree it was : and this was so suitable to Pope Paul the Fourth's temper and principles, that no doubt is to be made of his persisting steadfastly in that resolution.

I know there was a mercenary writer found in King James's reign, who studied to lay all people asleep, in a secure persuasion of their titles to those lands. He pretends there was a confirmation of all that Pole did sent over to England. He brings indeed some proof that it was given out and believed ; which might be a part of the fraud to be used in that matter : but as no such thing appears in the Bullary, so he does not tell us who saw it, or where it was laid up. He indeed supports this by an argument that destroys it quite: for he tells us, that two year after this, Secretary Petre had a particular bull, confirming him in his possession of some church-lands. This shows, that either that person, who was Secretary of State, knew that no confirmation was sent over, so that it was necessary for him to procure a particular bull for securing his own estate ; or, whatever might be in Pole's powers, he might think such a general transaction, which the necessity of that time made reasonable, would be no longer stood to, than while that necessity continued.

General treaties and transactions have had such a fate, that few will trust to them : the spirit of the church, as well as the spirit of a treaty, will be preferred to the words of all transactions. Have not we seen, in our own days, an edict that was passed with all solemnity possible, and declared perpetual and irrevocable ; yet recalled with this very preamble, that it was made in compliance to the necessity of that time, and on design to bring those that were promised to be for ever tolerated by it into the bosom of the church ? There is so much in the canon law against all sacrilege, and all alienations of what is once dedicated to God, that though some canonists may have carried the plenitude of the papal power so far as to reach even to this, which this hired writer builds on ; yet there is so much affirmed to the contrary by others, that it is certain, whensoever the papacy has strength enough to set aside all the settlement then made, they will find sufficient grounds in law to proceed to the overturning all that was then done. The princes of Germany, whose settlements he appeals to, do not trust to any treaty with either emperor or popish princes, with

relation to the church-lands, of which they possessed themselves; but to the treaties and guarantees into which they entered with one another: and so they are engaged by their faith and by their mutual interests to maintain one another and themselves in their possessions. Nor does it appear that a papal bull was ever obtained to confirm them: on the contrary, the Pope's legates protested against them; and, as will appear afterwards, Charles the Fifth's Confessor refused to give him absolution for his consenting to edicts of that sort. If the necessity of the time makes it necessary to maintain that settlement, so long it will be maintained, and no longer.

But to put this matter out of all doubt, that same Pope did, soon after our ambassadors were sent to him, by a bull dated the twelfth of July 1555, within three weeks after the English ambassadors had their audience, condemn all the alienations of church-lands, and even all leases for one or more lives, or for a term longer than three years. This he extends to all cathedrals, monasteries, and hospitals; and annuls all leases, grants, exchanges, mortgages, and obligations of lands, castles, towns, and cities, even though made by Popes themselves, or by their authority and order, and by the presidents, prelates, or rectors of churches, monasteries, or hospitals, of what rank and dignity soever, cardinals by name being expressed, that were done to the prejudice of the church, the solemnity by law required not being observed: and that which was null in the first making, but supplied by subsequent contracts, in what form soever made, though by proofs upon oath, and by what length of time soever it may claim prescription, is all rescinded, and made void and null: and the detainers of goods upon those titles are required to quit possession, and to make full satisfaction for what they have received; and to be thereto compelled, if they obey not, both by ecclesiastical censures and pecuniary punishments.

It is true, in all this England is not expressly named; and perhaps the Pope had the recovering from the family of the Farnese, that which Paul the Third had alienated to it, chiefly in his eye: but the words of this bull do plainly take in the late settlement in England; for though the English ambassadors were then newly come to Rome, demanding the confirmation of what Pole had done, yet no exceptions are made for England: so, it seems, it was intended by these general words,

put in on design, to overthrow it. Now because this matter is of such great concern, and every one has not a Bullary to examine into this bull, I will begin my Collection of Records with it, as no small piece of instruction to all who are possessed of any estate so alienated from churches, monasteries, or hospitals.

Upon the conclusion of this head, I cannot but take notice of one insinuation, that I hear some are not ashamed to make; that such a resumption may be indeed a prejudice to the laity, but that the clergy will be enriched by it. If this had been brought me by an ordinary hand, I should not have thought it worth mentioning; but since some have the impudence to set it on foot, I must add, that these are vain hopes, as well as they are suggested on black designs: for though the church, take it in the bulk, has immense riches in the Roman communion; yet in no church that ever I saw are the parochial clergy kept poorer, and made more despicable; they are as the hewers of wood and drawers of water, kept at hard labour on a very poor subsistence. The several orders among them, the governing clergy, and the outward magnificence of their churches and services, devours all that treasure: so that the poor clergy, even in that state of celibate, have scarce necessary sustenance, unless it be in some capital cities, and in very vast parishes in them; they are starved, to maintain the luxury and vanity of others. This was the true occasion of all the poverty of the parochial clergy among us; to which some remedies have been sought for, and to some degree found, ever since the Reformation was first settled among us.

But none of these things will move an insensible and degenerate race, who are thinking of nothing but present advantages; and so they may now support a luxurious and brutal course of irregular and voluptuous practices, they are easily hired to betray their religion, to sell their country, and to give up that liberty and those properties, which are the present felicities and glories of this nation. The giving them up will be a lasting infamy on those who are guilty of it, and will draw after it the heaviest curses of posterity on such perfidious betrayers of their trust: by this they will bring slavery on themselves, (which they well deserve, being indeed the worst sort of slaves,) and entail it on the succeeding generation.

I return to prosecute the account of my design in this work.

I went through those volumes in the Cotton Library, of which I had only a transient view formerly, and laid together all that I thought necessary to complete it. I saw a great and a fair prospect of such a change ready to be made in France, as King Henry had made in England. Mr. Le Vassor has, out of an invaluable collection of original papers that are in Sir William Trumball's hands, published instructions sent by the Duke of Orleans to the Princes of Germany; by which, as he declared himself a Protestant, so he gave in general words good hopes of his father Francis. I found also, both in papers and printed books, that King Henry often reproached Francis for not keeping his word to him; and in a long dispatch of a negotiation that Paget was employed in with the Admiral of France, I saw further evidence of this. I was by these indications set on to see how far I could penetrate into that secret.

I was by the favour of the Earl of Dartmouth admitted to a free search of the Paper-Office, which is now in much better order and method than it was above thirty years ago, when I saw it last: and there, among other very valuable papers, I found the copy of that solemn promise that Francis made to Henry, minuted on the back by Cromwell's hand as a true copy, in these words; *An instrument devised from the French King, for his justification and defence of the invalidity of the King's Highness's first marriage, and the validity of the second.* "By this, he in express words condemns the Pope's bull dispensing with the marriage with Queen Katharine, which he, "by the unanimous consent of those learned men whom he "had appointed to examine it, condemns as incestuous and "unlawful; and reputes the daughter born in it spurious and "illegitimate: and that the second marriage with Anne, then "Queen, was lawful and just; and that Queen Elizabeth, born "of it, was lawfully born: and he promises to assist and maintain the King in this against all the world. In this instrument he owns King Henry to be, under God, the Supreme "Head of the Church of England: and he affirms, that many "of the cardinals, in particular the late Cardinal of Ancona, "and even Pope Clement the Seventh himself, did, both to his "ambassador, and to himself at Marseilles, plainly confess, "that the Pope's bull, and the marriage made upon it, were "null and void; and that he would have given a definitive sentence, if some private affections and human regards had not

"hindered it." This makes me conclude, that he gave other instruments of a further extent to King Henry ; for failing in which, I find he was often reproached, though this single instrument is all that I could find out : but the Lord Herbert reckons among the chief causes of King Henry's last rupture with Francis, that he had not deserted the Bishop of Rome, and consented to a reformation, as he once promised.

I saw, when I passed through Zurick, a volume of letters that passed between Bullinger and those English divines that had been so kindly entertained by him in that noble canton : and by the interposition of my learned, judicious, and pious friend, Mr. Turretin of Geneva, Mr. Otto, a worthy Professor there, has taken such care, that copies of them are procured for me ; in which we may see the sense of those who revived our Reformation in Queen Elizabeth's time. Men who had been abroad, and had seen all things about them in a true light, that saw in what the strength of Popery lay, and what fortified or weakened the body of the reformed, were liker to have truer views than can be expected from retired or sullen men, who have lived in a corner, and have but a small horizon.

It has been objected to me, that I have said little of proceedings in Convocation, and of the struggle that the clergy made before they were brought to make the submission, which brought those bodies under restraints, that seem now uneasy to the advocates for church power. I must confess I have been very defective here : I understood that the books of Convocation were burnt : none of those great men, under whose direction that work went on, knew any thing of those discoveries that have been of late made ; so no wonder if I passed over what was then so little known. Yet now I have examined all that I could find of those matters, I confess I am not inclined to expect much from the assemblies of clergymen. I have seen nothing in church history to incline me to depart from Gregory Nazianzen's opinion of those assemblies ; what has happened among ourselves of late has not made me of another mind : and I will not deny, but that my copiousness on these matters is, in my own opinion, one of the meanest parts of my work. The wisest and worthiest man in that Convocation, Archbishop Warham, was the person that promoted the submission the most : it was no wonder if a corrupt clergy, that made such ill use of their power, had no mind to part with

any branch of it. Yet since these things have been of late such a subject of debate among us, I have taken what pains I could to gather all that is left of those times in such copies, or rather abstracts, as have been of late found in private hands: only I will set down the opinion of Sir Thomas More, the best man of the popish side in that age, of those meetings. "It is true," he says, "the clergy's assembling at the Convocation was called by the name of confederacies. But," he adds, "if they did assemble often, and there did such things, for which such assemblies of the clergy in every province through all Christendom from the beginning were instituted and devised, much more good might have grown thereof than the long disuse can suffer us now to perceive. But all my days, as far as I have heard, nor (I suppose) a good part of my father's neither, they came never together to Convocation, but at the request of the King; and at such their assemblies, concerning spiritual things have very little done. Wherefore that they have been in that necessary part of their duty so negligent, whether God suffer to grow to an unperceived cause of division and grudge against them, God, whom their such negligence hath, I fear me, sore offended, knoweth."

More's
Apol.
1533.
fol. 241.

The affinity of the matter has led me to reflect on a great transaction, with relation to the church of France, which was carried on, and finally settled, in the very time that King Henry was breaking with the court of Rome. It was the Concordate, that Francis the First made with Pope Leo the Tenth: the King and the Pope came to a bargain, by which they divided the liberties of the Gallican church between them, and indeed quite enslaved it. There are so many curious passages in the progress of that matter, that I hope the opening these will be a very acceptable entertainment to the nation: and the rather, because in it this nation will see, what it is to deliver up the essential liberties of a free constitution to a court, and to trust to the integrity and firmness of courts of justice, when an assembly of the states is no more necessary to the raising of money, and the support of the government. I know nothing writ in our language with relation to this matter, besides that account I gave of it in a book concerning the Regale. It was taken from a very exact history of that

1532.

transaction, that was written by Mr. Pinsons, printed anno 1666; and that seemed to some very proper judges to relate so much to our affairs, that, as they thought, it very probably disposed the nation more easily to throw off the Papal authority: they saw what a filthy merchandise the court of Rome had made of the liberties of the neighbouring church, taking care only to secure their own profits, and delivering up the rest to the crown. The best writers of that church have, on many occasions, lamented the loss of their liberties by that detestable bargain, into which Francis's necessities, wrought on by the practices of the court of Rome, drew him. "By this the church of France, from being a queen, became" (as Bishop Godeau expresses it) "a slave;" and he adds, "Our fathers have groaned, and all that love the order of the house of God will still groan, as long as elections continue to be put down; so that we must needs enter into the sanctuary by the way of the court." In another place, "These promotions have been always fatal to the church; and the bishops that the court has made have been ordinarily the chief advancers of schisms, heresies, and of the oppression of the church." And he concludes, "One cannot read Nazianzen's verses of the prelates of his time, without being struck with horror, and forced to acknowledge, that a secular temper is entirely contrary to the episcopal spirit." Of this a Greek writer makes a severe remark, in the history of Andronicus's reign, which may perhaps be as justly applied to other reigns, telling what sort of bishops were then made: "Princes choose such men to that charge, who may be their slaves, and in all things obsequious to what they prescribe; and may lie at their feet, and have not so much as a thought contrary to their commands." This change in their constitution has put an end not only to national, but even to provincial synods in that kingdom. Some were indeed held, upon the progress that Luther's doctrine was beginning to make in France; and others, during the civil wars, in order to the getting the council of Trent received in France: but now in the space of ninety years last past, these are no more brought together. The assemblies of the clergy meet only to give subsidies and to present their grievances; but do not pretend to the authority of a regular synod: and though in the year 1682 they

drew up some articles, yet these had their authority only from the severity of the King's edict, till by a transaction with the court of Rome that was let fall.

I have now gone over all the matters that do properly fall within this Introduction: it remains, that I leave the sense of the subject of this, and of my two former volumes, upon the consciences of my readers. Can it be possible, that any are so depraved, as to wish we had no religion at all; or to be enemies to the Christian religion? Would these men reduce us to be a sort of Hottentots? And yet this must grow to be the effect of our being without all religion. Mankind is a creature, by his make and frame disposed to religion; and if this is not managed by true principles, all the jugglings of heathenism would again take possession of the world. If the principles of truth, justice, temperance, and of universal love, do not govern men, they will soon grow curses and plagues to one another; and a crew of priests will grow up, who will teach them to compound for all crimes, and to expiate the blackest practices by some rituals.

Religion has so much to struggle with, that if it is not believed to be revealed by God, it will not have strength enough to resist those ill inclinations, those appetites and passions, that are apt to rise up in our minds against its dictates. What is there in the true and unsophisticated Christian religion that can give a colour to prejudices against it? The whole complex of that rule of life which it prescribes is so plainly suited to our composition, both in our souls and their faculties, and in our bodies, with relation to good health, to industry and long life; and to all the interests of human society, to the order and peace of the world, and to the truth and love that are the cements and securities of the body politic; that, without any laboured proof of its divine original, these are such characters, that they may serve to prove, it is sent into the world by a lover of mankind, who knew our nature, and what was proper both to perfect it, and to render it not only safe, but happy.

But when to all this we add the evidence that was given at its appearing in the world; that he who was the first Author of it, and those whom he employed first to propagate it, did upon many occasions, in full daylight, and in the sight of great multitudes, do things so far above the powers of nature, in such uncontested miracles, that by these it evidently appeared they

were assisted by somewhat superior to nature, that could command it at pleasure ; here is the fullest ground of conviction possible. These things were written, published, and received in the age in which they were transacted : and those writings have been preserved with great care, and are transmitted down to us, at the distance of above sixteen ages, pure and uncorrupted. In these we have the fixed standard of our religion ; and by them we can satisfy ourselves concerning all such practices as have been made upon it, or such inferences as are drawn from it. I wish those, who take to themselves the name of Freethinkers, would consider well, if they think it is possible to bring a nation to be without any religion at all ; and what the consequences of that may prove ; and then see, if there is any religion so little liable to be corrupted, and that tends so much to the good of mankind, as the true Christian religion reformed among us.

As for those that do truly believe this religion, and have an ingenuous sense and taste of liberty, can they admit a comparison to be made between a religion restrained to a fixed standard, (into which every one is admitted to examine the sense of it in the best method he can,) and that which sets up another uncertain standard, of which they pretend to be the depositaries ; I mean, traditions : and pretend further, they are the infallible expounders of it ; and that the true standard itself is not to be exposed to common view ? that God is to be worshipped in a language not understood ; that, instead of a competent provision to those who labour in this work, the head of them is to become a great prince, and may pretend to a power to dispose of kingdoms and states, to pardon sins, and to redeem sinners out of the miseries of a future state ; and that the character derived from him is so sacred, that, in defiance to sense and reason, a priest by a few words can work a miracle, in comparison to which the greatest of miracles is nothing ; and who by these means have possessed themselves of an immense wealth and a vast authority ?

These are all things of so strange a nature, and so contrary to the genius and design of the Christian religion, that it is not easy to imagine how they could ever gain credit and success in the world. But when men's eyes have been once opened ; when they have shaken off the yoke, and got out of the noose ; when the simplicity of true religion has been seen into, and the

sweets of liberty have been tasted ; it looks like charm and witchcraft, to see so many looking back so tamely on that servitude, under which this nation groaned so heavily for so many ages. They may soon see and know what our happy condition is, in the freedom we enjoy from these impositions ; and what their misery is that are condemned to them. It is not enough for such as understand this matter to be contented in their own thoughts with this, that they resolve not to turn Papists themselves ; they ought to awaken all about them, even the most ignorant and the most stupid, to apprehend their danger, and to exert themselves with their utmost industry to guard against it, and to resist it : they ought to use all their efforts to prevent it, and earnestly to pray to God for his blessing upon them. If, after all men's endeavours to prevent it, the corruption of the age, and the art and power of our enemies, prove too hard for us, then, and not till then, we must submit to the will of God, be silent, and prepare ourselves for all the extremities of suffering and of misery ; and if we fall under a persecution, and cannot fly from it, we must resolve to glorify God by bearing our cross patiently. Illegal sufferings are no more to be borne than the violences of a robber : but if the law comes once to be in the hands of those wicked men, who will not only revive the repealed laws against heretics, but, if they can, carry their cruelty up to the height of an Inquisition, then we must try by *the faith and patience of the saints to go through fire and through water*, and in all things to be *more than conquerors*.

I know some, who are either apt to deceive themselves, or hope to deceive others, have this in their mouths, that Popery is not what it was before the Reformation ; things are much mended, many abuses are detected, and things are not so gross as they were then : and they tell us, that further corrections might be expected, if we would enter into a treaty with them ; in particular, they fancy they see the error of proceeding severely with heretics ; so that there is no reason to apprehend the return of such cruelties as were practised an age and a half ago.

In answer to this, and to lay open the falsehood of it, we are to look back to the first beginning of Luther's breach. It was occasioned by the scandalous sale of pardons and indulgences, which all the writers of the popish side give up, and

acknowledge it was a great abuse ; so in the countries where the Reformation has got an entrance, or in the neighbourhood of them, this is no more heard of : and it has been taken for granted, that such an infamous traffic was now no more practised. But of late, that we have had armies in Spain and Portugal, we are well assured that it is still carried on there in the most barefaced manner possible. It is true, the proclaiming a sale is forbid by a bull ; but there is a commissary in every place, who manages the sale with the most infamous circumstances imaginable. In Spain, by an agreement with the Pope, the King has the profits of this bull ; and it is no small branch of his revenue. In Portugal, the King and the Pope go shares. Dr. Colbatch has given a very particular account of the managing the bull there : for as there is nothing so impudent, that those men are ashamed to venture on ; so they may safely do what they please, where the terror of the Inquisition is so severe a restraint, that men dare not whisper against any thing that is under that protection.

A notable instance of this has appeared lately, when, in the year 1709, the privateers of Bristol took the Galleon, in which they found 500 bales of these bulls, and 16 reams were in a bale ; so that they reckoned the whole came to 3,840,000. These bulls are imposed on the people, and sold, the lowest at three rials, a little more than 20d. but to some at fifty pieces of eight, about 11l. of our money ; and this to be valued according to the ability of the purchaser, once in two years : all are obliged to buy them against Lent. Besides the account given of this in the cruising voyage, I have a particular attestation of it by Captain Dampier ; and one of the bulls was brought me printed, but so that it cannot be read. He was not concerned in casting up the number of them ; but he says, that there was such a vast quantity of them, that they careened their ship with them.

As for any changes that may be made in Popery, it is certain, infallibility is their basis ; so nothing can be altered where a decision is once made. And as for the treatment of heretics, there has been such a scene of cruelty of late opened in France, and continued there now almost thirty years without intermission, that even in the kingdom where Popery has affected to put the best face on things possible, we have seen a cruel course of severity, beyond any thing in history. I saw

it in its first and sharpest fury, and can never forget the impression that made on me.

A discovery lately made, shows what the spirit of those at Rome, who manage the concerns of that religion, is, even in a mild reign, such as Odischalci's was; and we may well suppose, that, because it was too mild, this was ordered to be laid before him, to animate him with a spirit of persecution. When the abbey of St. Gall was taken in the late war in Switzerland, a manuscript was found, that the court of Propaganda ordered their Secretary to prepare for Innocent the Eleventh's own use; which after his death came into the hands of Cardinal Sfondrato, who was Abbot of St. Gall, and so at his death left this book there. It gives a particular account of all the missions they have in all the parts of the world, and of the rules and instructions given them; with which I hope those worthy persons, in whose hands this valuable book is now fallen, will quickly acquaint the world. The conclusion of it is an address to the Pope, in which they lay his duty before him, from two of the words in the New Testament, directed to St. Peter. The first was, *Feed my sheep*; which obliged him not only to feed the flock that was gathered at that time, but to prosecute the constant increase of it, and to bring those sheep into it that were not of that fold. But the other word was addressed to him by a voice from heaven, when the sheet was let down to him full of all sorts of beasts, of which some were unclean, *Rise, Peter, kill and eat*; to let all see that it is the duty of the Great Pontiff to rise up with apostolical vigilance, to kill and to extinguish in the infidels their present life, and then to eat them, to consubstantiate their false and brutal doctrine into the verity of our faith. There is an affectation in these last words suitable to the genius of the Italians. This application of these two passages, as containing the duties of a Pope, was formerly made by Baronius, in a flattering speech to encourage Pope Paul the Fifth in the war he was designing against the Venetians.

By this we see, that how much soever we may let the fears of Popery wear out of our thoughts, they are never asleep, but go on steadily prosecuting their designs against us. Popery is Popery still, acted by a cruel and persecuting spirit: and with what caution soever they may hide or disown some scandalous practices, where heretics dare look into their proceedings, and

lay them open; yet even these are still practised by them, when they know they may safely do it, and where none dare open their mouth against them; and therefore we see what reason we have to be ever watching, and on our guard against them.

This is the duty of every single Christian among us; but certainly those peers and commoners, whom our constitution has made the trustees and depositaries of our laws and liberties, and of the legal security of our religion, are under a more particular obligation of watching carefully over this sacred trust, for which they must give a severe account in the last day, if they do not guard it against all danger, at what distance soever it may appear. If they do not maintain all the fences and outworks of it, or suffer breaches to be made on any of them; if they suffer any part of our legal establishment to be craftily undermined; if they are either absent or remiss on critical occasions; and if any views of advantage to themselves prevail on them to give up or abandon the establishment and security of our religion; God may work a deliverance for us another way, and, if it seem good in his eyes, he will deliver us: but they and their families shall perish, their names will rot and be held in detestation; posterity will curse them, and the judgments of God will overtake them, because they have sold that which was the most sacred of all things, and have let in an inundation of idolatry, superstition, tyranny, and cruelty upon their church and country.

But, in the last place, those who are appointed to be the *watchmen*, who ought to give warning, and to *lift up their voice as a trumpet*, when they see those wolves ready to break in and devour the flock, have the heaviest account of all others to make, if they neglect their duty; much more if they betray their trust. If they are so set on some smaller matters, and are so sharpened upon that account, that they will not see their danger, nor awaken others to see it, and to fly from it; the guilt of those souls who have perished by their means *God will require at their hands*, if they, in the view of any advantage to themselves, are silent when they ought to cry out day and night: they will fall under the character given by the Prophet of the watchmen in his time; *They are blind, they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs that cannot bark, sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber; yea, they are greedy dogs, which*

can never have enough : and they are shepherds that cannot understand ; they all look to their own way, every one for his gain from his quarter ; that say, Come, I will fetch wine, and we will fill ourselves with strong drink ; to-morrow shall be as this day, and much more abundant.

This is a lively description of such pastors as will not so much as study controversies, and that will not know the depths of Satan ; that put the evil day far off, and, as the men in the days of Noah or Lot, live on at their ease, satisfying themselves in running round a circle of dry and dead performances ; that do neither awaken themselves, nor others. When the day of trial comes, what will they say ? to whom will they fly for help ? Their spirits will either sink within them, or they will swim with the tide : the cry will be, The church, the church, even when all is ruin and a desolation. I hope they will seriously reflect on the few particulars that I have, out of many more, laid together in this Introduction, and see what weight may be in them ; and look about them to consider the dangers we are in, before it is too late. But what can be said of those, who are already going into some of the worst parts of Popery ? It is well known, that in practice the necessity of auricular confession, and the priestly absolution, with the conceit of the sacrifice of the mass, are the most gainful parts of Popery, and are indeed those that do most effectually subdue the world to it. The independence of the church on the state is also so contended for, as if it were on design to disgrace our Reformation. The indispensable necessity of the priesthood to all sacred functions is carried in the point of baptism further than Popery. Their devotions are openly recommended, and a union with the Gallican church has been impudently proposed : the Reformation and the Reformers are by many daily vilified ; and that doctrine, that has been most universally maintained by our best writers, I mean the supremacy of the crown, is on many occasions arraigned. What will all these things end in ? and on what design are they driven ? Alas ! it is too visible.

God be thanked, there are many among us that stand upon the *watch-tower*, and that give faithful warning ; that stand in the *breach*, and make themselves a *wall for their church and country* ; that cry to God day and night, and lie in the dust mourning before him, to avert those judgments that seem to

hasten towards us. They search into the mystery of iniquity that is working among us, and acquaint themselves with all that mass of corruption that is in Popery. They have another notion of the worship of God, than to dress it up as a splendid opera. They have a just notion of priesthood, as a function that imports a care of souls, and a solemn performing the public homage we owe to God; but do not invert it to a political piece of craft, by which men's secrets are to be discovered, and all are subdued by a tyranny that reaches to men's souls, as well as to their worldly concerns. In a word, they consider religion in the soul as a secret sense of divine matters, which purifies all men's thoughts, and governs all their words and actions: and in this light they propose it to their people, warning them against all dangers, and against all deceivers of all sorts; watching over them as those that must give an account to the *great Bishop of souls, feeding the flock over which the Holy Ghost has made them overseers*, ready to lay down their lives for them, looking for their crown from the *chief Shepherd, when he shall appear*.

May the number of these good and faithful servants increase daily more and more; may their labours be so blessed, that they may see the travail of their soul, and be satisfied: and may many by their means and by their example be so awakened, that they may resist even to blood, striving against sin, and against the man of sin: and may I be of that number, labouring while it is day; and ready, when the night comes, either to lie down and rest in the grave; or, if God calls me to it, to seal that doctrine, which I have been preaching now above fifty years, with my blood! May his holy will be done, so I may but glorify him in my soul and body, which are his!

THE
CONTENTS
OF
THE HISTORY.

BOOK I.

*Of Matters that happened in the Time comprehended in
the First Book of the History of the Reformation.*

<p>1300.</p> <p>THE progress of the papal usurpations p. 2.</p> <p>The schism in the papacy ib.</p> <p>The Council of Basil 3.</p> <p>The Pope and Council quarrel ib.</p> <p>1438.</p> <p>The Pragmatic Sanction made in France 5.</p> <p>The effects it had ib.</p> <p>The Pope condemns it 6.</p> <p>1458.</p> <p>In a council at Mantua 6.</p> <p>Lewis the Eleventh abrogates it 7.</p> <p>To the Pope's great joy 8.</p> <p>The parliament of Paris oppose it ib.</p>	<p>The honest courage of the Attorney-General 9.</p> <p>For which he was turned out 10.</p> <p>The Pragmatic Sanction reestablished ib.</p> <p>1499.</p> <p>But it was still complained of by the popes 11.</p> <p>Condemned by the council in the Lateran 12.</p> <p>1516.</p> <p>The Concordate put instead of it 12.</p> <p>King Francis carried it to the parliament of Paris 13.</p> <p>It was there opposed by the ecclesiastics of that court 14.</p> <p>Opposition made to it by the King's learned council ib.</p>
---	---

1517.	An apology, with the reasons for this digression	28.
They resolve not to publish it	16.	
The King was highly offended at this	ib.	
The King's learned council oppose it no longer	17.	
1518.		
The parliament publishes it, but with a protestation	18.	
The university and clergy oppose it	19.	
The exceptions to the Concordate by the parliament	20.	
These were answered by the Chancellor	22.	
The matter finally settled	23.	
The parliament still judged by the Pragmatic Sanction	ib.	
1524.		
Upon the King's being a prisoner, the Concordate was more condemned	24.	
1527.		
These matters removed from the parliament to the great council	25.	
1532.		
Remonstrances made by the clergy against this	25.	
1513.	Queen Katharine's letter to King Henry, upon the death of the King of Scotland	28.
	The progress of Wolsey's rise	ib.
1521.		
	King Henry's book of the Seven Sacraments	30.
	Wolsey sent to Charles the Fifth; gained by him	31.
	Wolsey's practices to be chosen Pope	32.
	Wolsey's designs when chosen Pope	33.
	The King of France taken prisoner	36.
	Lord Burghleigh's character of Wolsey	ib.
	Wolsey's proceedings as Legate	38.
	His insolence to Warham	ib.
	A legatine synod	40.
1523.		
	He called the convocation of Canterbury to sit with him	41.
	Colet's sermon before a convocation	43.
	Colet's character	46.
	Sir Thomas More's thoughts of religion in his Utopia	49.

CONTENTS.

lii

BOOK II.

Of Matters that happened during the Time comprehended in the Second Book of the History of the Reformation.

1525.	The Bishop of Bayonne's opinion of the Pope's dispensation	75.
MANY ambassadors in Spain	Apprehensions of disorders on the Queen's account	76.
57.	Endeavours to gain Campegio	77.
1527.	Wolsey's credit shaken	ib.
Wolsey's letter to them	The Dukes of Norfolk and Suffolk his enemies	78.
The sack of Rome	The proceedings of the legates	80.
The cardinals write to the Pope for a full deputation	The Cardinal's disgrace	85.
Knight sent to Rome	All his goods seized on	86.
Pace wrote to the King of his divorce	Wolsey's good conduct in his diocese	87.
1528.	The King consults the universities	88.
A bull sent to Wolsey to judge the marriage	Proceedings in convocation	ib.
It was not made use of	Translation of the Scriptures condemned	89.
The bishops think the King's scruples reasonable		
The Emperor's answer to the King by Clarencieux	1530.	
A proposition to depose the Emperor	The steps made in the carrying the King's being declared Head of the Church	90.
1529.	The limitation added to it	91.
King Henry's letters to Anne Boleyn	And accepted by the King	92.
The King and Queen seemed to live well together	The proceedings of the clergy against heretics	93.
The legates go to the King and Queen	Complaints of Tracy's Testament	ib.
The Queen treats Wolsey very secretly	The King's proceedings at Rome	94.
ib.	Applications made to divines and lawyers	95.
	d 3	

An opinion given by some in Paris	95.	1531.
Bishop of Bayonne sent to Paris	96.	King Henry opposes the interview with the Pope in vain
Cardinal Cajetan's opinion against the King	ib.	The Duke of Norfolk sent to France
The Pope's first breve against the divorce	98.	But soon recalled
The proceedings of the Sorbonne	99.	The King of France was to have been godfather, if Queen Anne had brought a son
Great heat in their debates	101.	The interview at Marseilles
The jealousy of the court of France	102.	Great promises made by the Pope
Upon the changing the divines' opinions	103.	Practices upon cardinals
The decision of the Sorbonne	ib.	The Convocation meets
Lizet, the President, seemed to work against it	104.	They treat concerning residence
His letter of that whole matter	105.	An answer to the complaints of the Commons
A design to make a contrary decree	106.	Proceedings against heretics
Angiers divided; the university for the divorce, and the divines against it	108.	The petition to the King
Proceedings at Cambridge	109.	The submission made to the King, one bishop only dissenting
The King's letters to the university of Oxford	ib.	The proceedings at York
The decision made at Bologna	114.	Proceedings during the vacancy of Canterbury
And at Padua	ib.	The Convocation judges against the King's marriage
The King writes fully to the Pope	115.	Archbishop Cranmer gives sentence against it
The Pope's second breve against the King's marrying another wife	117.	With that the court of Rome was highly offended
Pleadings by an <i>excusator</i>	ib.	Bonner intimates the King's appeal to the Pope
The French King obtains many delays	119.	It was rejected by the Pope
An interview between the two Kings	121.	Bellay sent over to the King by King Francis
The King marries Anne Boleyn	ib.	A representation made to the Emperor
		Bellay prevailed much on the King to submit

CONTENTS.

lv

<p>A letter of the King's to his ambassadors at Rome 149.</p> <p>Duke of Norfolk's letter to Montmorancy 151.</p> <p>The Pope was in great anxiety 153.</p> <p>Bellay was to go to Rome, in hopes to make up the breach 154.</p> <p>The final sentence given in great haste ib.</p> <p>The courier came two days too late ib.</p> <p>Further proofs of this matter 155.</p> <p>Reflections on this breach 157.</p> <p>All in England concur to renounce the Pope's authority 158.</p> <p>An order for the bidding of prayers and preaching 161.</p> <p>Instructions given to Paget, sent to some northern courts 163.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">1534.</p> <p>Negotiations in Germany 167.</p> <p>Advices offered the King 168.</p> <p>A letter of the King's to the justices, to observe the behaviour of the clergy 169.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">1535.</p> <p>The Archbishop of York is suspected to favour the Pope 170.</p> <p>He justifies himself 171.</p> <p>Of the sufferings of Fisher and More 172.</p> <p>An expostulation with the court of France 173.</p> <p>The King of France engages himself to adhere to, and defend the King in his second marriage 174.</p>
---	--

BOOK III.

Of what happened during the Time comprehended in the Third Book of the History of the Reformation, from the Year 1535 to King Henry's death, Anno 1547.

<p style="text-align: center;">1535.</p> <p>THE King was much pleased with the title of Supreme Head 179.</p> <p>The Archbishop of Canterbury's title changed ib.</p> <p>Cranmer and Gardiner oppose one another 180.</p> <p>Cranmer vindicates himself ib.</p>	<p>Bishops proceed against those who desired a reformation 181.</p> <p>The Archbishop of York much suspected 183.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">1536.</p> <p>Complaints of the monks and friars 186.</p> <p>The Archbishop of York clears himself ib.</p>
--	--

All preaching is for some time prohibited	187.	Dr. London's violent proceedings in suppressing the monasteries	226.
A treaty with the Lutheran Princes	188.	Cheats in images discovered	227.
Barnes sent to them	189.	Tonstal wrote a consolatory letter to the King, when Queen Jane died	228.
Melancthon's going to France prevented	190.	Orders about holy-days	229.
The French King fluctuates	191.	Injunctions given by the Archbishop of York	230.
Fox sent to Germany	ib.	Injunctions by the Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield	231.
A treaty with the Princes of Germany	ib.	And by the Bishop of Salisbury	232.
Censured by some, but justified by others	192, 193.	Gresham's letter to the King, for putting the great hospitals in the hands of the city	234.
The Smalcaldic league	194.		1538.
The demands of the German Princes	ib.	The King grows severe against the reformers	236.
The King's answer to them	195.	He sets out a long proclamation	237.
They write to the King	199.	An account set forth by the King of Thomas Becket	ib.
And send ambassadors to him	200.	A circular letter to the justices of peace	238.
Queen Katharine's death	202.		1539.
Queen Anne Boleyn's tragical end	203.	New significations put on the old rites	240.
Her behaviour at her trial, and at her death	204.	Many executions in England	241.
The Emperor desired to be reconciled to the King	208.	The project of endowing the church of Canterbury	ib.
The King answered that coldly	210.	Disapproved by Cranmer	242.
He refuses any treaty with the Pope	ib.	The design of the six Articles	243.
Proceedings in convocation	211.	The King marries Anne of Cleve	244.
Pole made a cardinal	212.	Commission to Cromwell, to constitute some under him	245.
He wrote first against the divorce	213.	The King in love with Katharine Howard	246.
Sends one to the King with instructions	215.		
Tonstal writes copiously to him	218.		
Cardinal Pole's vindication of himself	222.		
The King was reconciled to the Emperor	226.		

CONTENTS.

lvii

Cromwell's fall	247.
A new treaty with the German Princes	248.
Some of Cromwell's memorandums	ib.
The matters at first charged on him, from which he clears himself	250.
Reflections on the state of affairs at that time	253.
Of the King's divorce with Anne of Cleve	ib.
What passed in convocation	254.
Exceptions in the act of grace	255.
A design against Crome	ib.
Prosecutions upon the six Articles	259.
A conspiracy against Cranmer	260.
His great mildness	262.
Some steps made in setting out true religion	263.
Katharine Howard's disgrace	264.
A negotiation with the German Princes	265.
1542.	
Paget's negotiation with the court of France	266.
The Duke of Orleans promised to declare himself a Protestant	271.
1543.	
Practices on him end with his life	273.
Proceedings in convocation	ib.
A new translation of the Bible designed	274.

1544.	
A reformation of the ecclesiastical laws was far advanced	276.
Bell, Bishop of Worcester, resigned his bishoprick	277.
Audley, Lord Chancellor, died	ib.
Practices on some lords of Scotland	278.
Mount sent to Germany	279.
A war with France	280.
Bulloign taken	ib.
The King is forsaken by the Emperor	281.
A Litany set out in English, with other devotions	282.
1545.	
The King neglects the German Princes	284.
1546.	
The Elector of Saxony's ill opinion of the King	285.
Ferdinand discontented with the Emperor	286.
The Duke of Norfolk's imprisonment	287.
His letter to the King	288.
A recapitulation of King Henry's reign	292.
His mind corrupted by a course of flattery	ib.
The course of all courts	293.
Wolsey began it, but was a wise minister	294.
A great occasion of flattery given by his book	ib.
The character of More	296.
Cromwell's ministry	ib.
The King's inconstancy in matters of religion	297.

BOOK IV.

*Of what happen'd during the Reign of King Edward
the Sixth, from the Year 1547 to the Year 1553.*

1547.	No shadow of liberty in the council 313.
A true account of a paper of Luther's wrong published in my History 301.	The legates' way in correcting manifest abuses 314.
Vargas's letters concerning the council of Trent 302.	Malvenda and others made the same complaints 315.
Translated into English by Dr. Geddes 303.	Reflections upon those proceedings 317.
And into French by Mr. Le Vassor 304.	Thirlby writes of the Interim 318.
The fraud and insolence of the Legate ib.	Hobby sent ambassador to the Emperor 319.
The promise that the Emperor made the Pope 305.	The Emperor's Confessor refused him absolution for not persecuting heretics ib.
The bishops knew not what they did 306.	The perfidy of the French King 320.
The pride and impudence of the Legate 307.	The progress of the Reformation ib.
No good to be expected from a council 308.	Gardiner at the head of the opposition to it 321.
He complains of the exemption of chapters ib.	Proceedings in convocation 323.
A decree secretly amended after it was passed 309.	They affirm that it was free for the clergy to marry 324.
It had been happy that the council had never met 310.	Cranmer's labours and zeal 325.
The decree concerning the Pope's authority proposed, but not passed 311.	St. Chrysostom's letter to Cæsarius. brought to England ib.
He expresses the same opinion of the former session under Pope Paul 312.	The Lady Mary denies that she or her servants were concerned in the risings 326.
	The entertaining foreign troops in England 327.

CONTENTS.

lix

The Popish party deceived in their hopes on the Protector's fall	330.	
1550.		
Proceedings against Gardiner	332.	
All preaching is forbidden, except by persons especially licensed	336.	
Heath refuses to subscribe the book of Ordinations	ib.	
Day, Bishop of Chichester, in trouble for not removing al- tars	337.	
Scandals given by many	339.	
Gardiner is deprived	340.	
An account of Bishop Hooper	342.	
1552.		
The Duke of Somerset's last fall	359.	
Hooper's impartial zeal	360.	
The Articles of Religion prepared	361.	
Not passed in convocation	362.	
		1553.
		But published by the King's au- thority.
		364.
		And sent to the Archbishop of Canterbury
		365.
		And the Bishop of Norwich
		366.
		And to the university of Cam- bridge
		367.
		Cranmer designed to set up the provincial synods
		368.
		King Edward's scheme of the succession
		ib.
		Much altered
		370.
		Opposed long by Cranmer
		ib.
		The Primate of Ireland poisoned
		371.
		A character of the court in King Edward's time
		372.
		The bad lives of those who pro- fessed the Gospel
		374.
		Much lamented by the reformers
		375.
		The providence of God towards the reformed
		377.

BOOK V.

*Of what happened during Queen Mary's Reign, from
the Year 1553 to the Year 1558.*

1553.		
The Queen's words were soft	379.	
But her proceedings severe	380.	
Against Cranmer, Hooper, and others	ib.	
		The Duke of Northumberland begs his life, but in vain
		383.
		Others suffered with him
		ib.
		A convocation summoned
		384.
		A treaty of marriage with the Prince of Spain
		385.
		Wyat's rising and principles
		386.

1554.

Lady Jane Gray executed	387.
Severities against the married clergy	ib.
Aggravated by some	389.
The Queen writes the first letter to King Philip	ib.
Proceedings against heretics	390.
A convocation	ib.
Cranmer's treason pardoned, that he might be burnt	391.
The Council orders severe proceedings	392.
The reconciliation with Rome designed	393.
Pole sent legate for that end	394.
He wrote to the Queen	395.
The Queen's answer	ib.
His first powers	396.
Cardinal Pole stopped in Flanders by the Emperor	398.
New and fuller powers sent to Pole	399.
With relation to church-lands	ib.
All was laid before the Emperor	401.
Yet he was still put off by delays	402.
The reason of those delays	403.
Cardinal Pole much esteemed by the English ambassador	406.
He writes to King Philip	407.
The Queen sent to bring him over to England	408.
The Queen believed herself to be with child	409.
Cardinal Pole carries his powers beyond the limits set him	ib.
Some preach for restoring the abbey-lands	410.

1555.

The Archbishop of York set at liberty	411.
The reformers, when tried by Gardiner, were firm	413.
Hooper, the first bishop that suffered, barbarously used	414.
Persons appointed to carry the news of the Queen's being delivered	417.
Orders for torture at discretion	418.
The Queen still looked to be delivered of a child	419.
A practice that gives suspicion of ill designs	ib.
Plots pretended	420.
Cardinal Pole's letter to Cranmer	421.
Ambassadors sent to the Pope, came back with a bull, erecting Ireland into a kingdom	422.
The Pope's bull for restoring all church-lands	ib.
Reflections made on it	424.
Cranmer proceeded against	427.

1556.

Proceedings in convocation	430.
Motions in the diet of the empire	432.
Compassion expressed to those who suffered, punished	433.
Charles the Fifth's resignation of Spain	ib.
Reasons to think he died a Protestant	435.
The method in which the Queen put her affairs	437.
Proceedings against heretics	440.

CONTENTS.

lxi

1557.	The nation abhorred this cruelty	451.
The Pope sets on a new war after a truce was sworn to, and dispensed with the French King's oath	A great coldness in those matters at Bristol	452.
Pole's national synod	Bonner called on by the Council to be more severe	453.
A great scarcity of all things	The Papal provisions in this reign	455.
444.	1558.	
Prosecution of heretics	Proceedings in convocation	456.
Calais in danger of falling into the hands of the French	A general treaty of peace was opened	ib.
An account of Lord Sturton's execution	Small hope of having Calais restored	457.
Alarms oft given of plots	A particular relation of the occasion of the Queen's death	461.
A severe prosecution	A parallel of Queen Mary and Queen Elizabeth's reign	462.
Cardinal Pole saved two persons		
ib.		

BOOK VI.

Of the Beginnings of Queen Elizabeth's Reign.

1558.	The Earl of Bedford had staid some time at Zurick, and wrote to them	470.
HER inclinations in religion cautiously managed	Proceedings in convocation	471.
Mount sent to Germany	The bishops oppose the Reformation in the House of Lords	472.
A match with Charles of Austria advised	Jewel complains of want of zeal, and an excess of caution	475.
The reformers return to England	Peter Martyr's advices to Grindal	477.
467.	The beginnings of the Reformation in the parliament of Scotland	478.
They were well received by the Queen	The use of the Scriptures in the	
469.		
1559.		
Those of Zurick advise a thorough reformation		
469.		

vulgar tongue much opposed	480.
But granted	481.
A perfidious proceeding of the court of France	482.
The great progress of superstition in Queen Mary's reign	495.
The revenues of bishops lessened	496.
Jewel's opinion of the disputes concerning the vestments	497.
The Queen kept a crucifix in her chapel	ib.
Bishops consecrated	498.
The Emperor proposes to the Queen a match with his son Charles	ib.
She excuses herself	ib.

1560.

A conference concerning the Queen's crucifix	499.
The zeal in singing psalms	500.
Sands, Bishop of Worcester, much offended at the image in the Queen's chapel	ib.
Sampson's exceptions at his being made a bishop	501.
He refused a bishoprick	503.
A peace made in Scotland	504.
Parker's care of the northern sees	ib.
The Popish bishops made great alienations	505.
Jewel's Apology published	506.
The French grew weary of carrying on the war in Scotland	508.
It was brought to a good end	509.
A message to the Queen of England	510.
Signed by the three estates	510.
The Queen of England's answer to it	511.

The death of Francis the Second	512.
The Queen of Scotland did not ratify the peace	514.

1561.

She is jealous of Lord James	515.
The Duke of Guise studied to divert the Queen from assisting the Prince of Condé	ib.
Proceedings in convocation	517.

1562.

Some alterations made in the Articles of Religion	518.
Great debates concerning some alterations in the Book of Common-Prayer	519.
A practice common among Papists of knocking on their breast, saying <i>Culpa mea</i> , at the elevation	520.
But by one proxy it was carried, that none should be made	521.
A book of discipline offered by the Lower House	ib.
Other things prepared for the Convocation	523.
A further continuation of the History, beyond my former work	524.
A controversy about the use of things indifferent	ib.

1564.

Great diversity in practice	526.
The Queen wrote to the Archbishop of Canterbury to bring all to an uniformity	ib.
Orders set out by the bishops	527.

CONTENTS.

lxiii

Horn, Bishop of Winchester,
writes to Zurick upon these
diversities in practice 529.

1565.

Answers from thence, justifying
those who obeyed the laws 530.

Bullinger writes to those who
would not obey them 531.

That letter was printed in Eng-
land 533.

Bullinger's answer to Sampson
536.

They wrote to the Earl of Bed-
ford 537.

1566.

Grindal and Horn's letter, show-
ing their uneasiness in many
things 539.

Jewel's sense of those matters
541.

Reflections on this matter 542.

Other letters written to Zurick
by some bishops 543.

Of the affairs of Scotland 545.

The Queen of Scots marries the
Lord Darnley 547.

She shows more zeal in her reli-
gion 548.

The demands of the reformed
549.

The Queen's answer to them 550.

Their reply to it 551.

The Queen of Scots' practices
553.

Another more pressing petition
made to her ib.

Letters concerning the murder of
Signior David 554.

1567.

Letters concerning the murder of
the Lord Darnley 557.

A relation of that matter by the
Pope's nuncio 560.

That Queen left the crown of
England to King Philip of
Spain by her last will 562.

An association of the Scottish no-
bility, to defend the right of
their young King 563.

In this Papists joined with Pro-
testants 565.

The reasons that moved Queen
Elizabeth to be jealous of the
King of Scotland 566.

The effects that this had 567.

The conclusion 568.

THE THIRD PART
OF THE
HISTORY
OF THE
REFORMATION
OF THE
CHURCH OF ENGLAND.

BOOK I.

*Of Matters that happened in the Time comprehended
in the First Book of the History of the Reforma-
tion.*

BEFORE I enter on the affairs of England, I have **BOOK**
thought it would be of great use to prepare the reader **I.**
for what relates to them, by setting before him the
progress of that agreement, into which the French
King's affairs carried him; by which he delivered up
one great part of the liberties of the Gallican church to
the Pope, and invaded the rest himself. This was car-
ried on in a course of many years; and the scene lying
next us, and it being concluded in the very time in

VOL. III.

B

PART which the breach of this nation was far carried on, in
III. the year 1532, I thought it would not be an improper
 beginning of my work to set out that matter very co-
 piously ; since it is highly probable that it had a great
 influence on all who were capable to reflect on it.

The greatest transaction that happened in this period
 being the setting up the Concordate, in the room of the
 Pragmatic Sanction, by Francis the First, it will be ne-
 cessary, in order to the clear opening of the matter, to
 look back into the former ages.

The pro-
 gress of the
 Papal usur-
 pations.

The progress the papacy had made from Pope Gre-
 gory the Seventh to Pope Boniface the Eighth's time,
 in little more than 230 years, is an amazing thing. The
 one begun the pretension to depose kings ; the other, in
 1300. the jubilee that he first opened, went in procession
 through Rome, the first day attired as Pope, and the
 next day attired as Emperor, declaring, that all power,
 both spiritual and temporal, was in him, and derived
 from him : and he cried out with a loud voice, *I am
 Pope and Emperor, and have both the earthly and hea-
 venly empire ;* and he made a solemn decree in these
 words, *We say, define, and pronounce, that it is abso-
 lutely necessary to salvation for every human creature
 to be subject to the Bishop of Rome.* The holy war, as
 it was called, was a great part of the business of that
 interval ; by which the authority and wealth of the
 papacy received no small addition. It is true, the re-
 moval of the popes to Avignon, and the schism that
 followed upon the popes' return to Rome, did put no
 small stop to that growing power, and to the many and
 great usurpations and inventions, not known to former
 ages, which were set on foot to draw all people into a
 servile dependance on the popes.

The schism
 in the pa-
 pacy.

This long schism between the popes that sate at
 Rome and Avignon was the best conjuncture the bi-
 shops could ever have hoped for to recover their autho

rity ; which had been for some ages oppressed, and in- BOOK
 deed trodden under foot by the papacy. And if that 1.
 had happened in a less ignorant age, it is very probable 1300.
 there would have been more effectual provisions made
 against it. The bishops that met at Constance did not
 apprehend that the continuance of that breach was that
 in which their strength lay : they made too much haste
 to heal it ; but they soon found that when all was
 again united, none of the regulations that they made
 could restrain a power that pretended to know no limits.
 The greatest security of the church, as they thought,
 was in the act for perpetual general councils, which
 were to meet after short intervals ; and in the act for
 subjecting the popes to the councils, requiring them to
 call them and the council to meet at the end of ten
 years, whether the Pope summoned it or not.

But these proved feeble restraints : yet the Council of ^{The Council of Basil.}
 Basil did sit, pursuant to the decree made at Constance ;
 and the bishops who met there endeavoured, as much
 as their low size of learning could direct them, to set
 forward a reformation of those abuses that were brought
 into the church, and that supported that despotic power
 which the popes had assumed. They reckoned, a regu-
 lation of the elections of bishops was the laying a good
 foundation, and the settling of pillars and bases, upon
 which the fabric of the church might securely rest.
 Many bishops were made by papal provisions ; these
 they simply condemned : others were promoted by the
 power and favour of princes, to which ambitious men
 recommended themselves by base compliances and si-
 moniacal bargains ; in opposition to these, they restor-
 ed elections to the chapters, with as good provisions
 as they could contrive, that they should be well ma-
 naged.

A contest falling in upon their proceedings between ^{The Pope and Council}
 them and Pope Eugenius the Fourth, they addressed ^{quarrel.}

PART themselves to Charles the Seventh, King of France, for
 III. his protection. They sent him the decrees they had
 1300. made against *annats*, that is, first-fruits; a late device of Pope Boniface the Ninth, then about 50 years standing, pretending to carry on a war against the Turk by that aid. They also condemned *gratias expectativas*, or the survivances of bishopricks, and other benefices; with all clauses of reservations in bulls, by which popes reserved to themselves at pleasure such things as were in a bishop's collation. They appointed elections to be confirmed by the 'metropolitan, and not by the Pope. They condemned all fees and exactions upon elections, except only a salary for the writer's pains; and all appeals, except to the immediate superior; with all appeals from a grievance, unless it was such that the final sentence must turn upon it: and when the appeal rose up by all intermediate steps to the Pope, it was to be judged by delegates appointed to sit upon the place where the cause lay, or in the neighbourhood; only the causes marked expressly in the law, as *greater causes*, were reserved to the Pope. Provision was made for the encouragement of learning, and of the universities, that the benefices that fell in any collator's gift should be, in every third month of the year, given to men that had been, during a limited number of years, bred in them; and had upon due trial obtained degrees in them. If a bishop had ten benefices in his gift, the Pope might name to one; and if fifty, to two; but to no more. Some of the provisions relate to the discipline and order of the cathedral churches: but the main thing of all was, their declaring the Council to be above the Pope; that the Pope was bound to submit to it, and that appeals lay to it from him.

The first breach between the Pope and the Council was made up afterwards by the interposition of Sigismond the Emperor: the Pope recalled his censures, confessed

he had been misled, and ratified all that the Council had done. But that lasted not long : for, upon the presence of treating a reconciliation with the Greek church, some moved for a translation of the Council to Ferrara; but the majority opposed it : yet the Pope did translate it thither. Upon which the Council condemned that bull, and proceeded, against Eugenius. He on the other hand declared them to be no council, and excommunicated them : they on their part deposed him, and chose another Pope, Amedee Duke of Savoy, who took the name of Felix : he had retired from his principality, and upon that they again begged the protection of France.

BOOK
I.
1560.

The King being thus applied to by them, summoned a great assembly to meet at Bourgos ; where the Dauphin, the princes of the blood, many of the nobility, and many bishops, met. They would not approve the deposition of the Pope, nor the new election of Felix : but yet they rejected the meeting of Ferrara, and adhered to that at Basil. The decrees passed at Basil were by them reduced into the form of an edict ; and published under the title of the Pragmatic Sanction : which the King declared he would have to be inviolably observed ; and he resolved to moderate matters between the Pope and the Council.

1438.
The Pragmatic Sanction made in France.

There are very different relations made of the effects that this edict had : some say, that the church of France began to put on a new face upon it, and that men were advanced by merit, and not, as formerly, by applications to the court of Rome, nor solicitations at the court of France : “ others give a most tragical representation of “ elections, as managed by faction, indirect arts, the “ solicitations of women, and simoniacal bargains ; and “ in some places by open violence, out of which many “ suits were brought into the courts of law. The treasure of the church was, as they said, applied to main-

The effects it had.

PART "tain these; the fabric was let go to ruin; and bishops'

III. "houses dilapidated. Pope Leo the Tenth, in his bull

1438. "that abrogates this Sanction, enumerates many evils
 "that arose out of these elections; and that, in particular,
 "simony and perjury prevailed in them, of which he
 "says he had undeniable evidence, in the many abso-
 "lutions and rehabilitations that were demanded of him."
 This might be boldly alleged, because it could not be
 disproved, how false soever it might be.

There might be some instances of faction, which were
 no doubt aggravated by the flatterers of the court of
 Rome: for the profits which came from France being
 stopped by the Pragmatic, all arts were used to dis-
 grace it.

The Pope
 condemns
 it,

Eneas Silvius was counted one of the ablest men of
 that time. He was secretary to the Council of Basil,
 and wrote copiously in defence of it against the Pope;
 but he was gained over to the interests of the court of
 Rome: he had a cardinal's hat, and was afterwards
 advanced to the popedom, and reigned by the name of
 Pius the Second. He retracted all his former writings,
 but never answered them: yet he was so barefaced in
 setting himself to sale, that, when he was reproached
 for changing sides, he answered, the popes gave digni-
 ties, abbeys, bishopricks, and red hats to their creatures;
 but he asked, how many of such good things did the
 Council give.

In a council
 at Mantua.

He distinguished himself, as deserters are apt to do,
 by railing at all that the Council of Basil had done, and
 against the Pragmatic Sanction. He branded it as a
 1458. *heresy*: and, in a council that he held at Mantua, twenty
 years after, he inveighed severely against it. He said,
 bishops thought to have established their power, but on
 the contrary their authority was ruined by it; for eccle-
 siastical causes were brought into the secular courts,
 and all things were put into the King's hands: yet that

Sanction was observed in France till the King's death ; BOOK I.
 and though some were persuaded to go to Rome, and 1458.
 to procure bulls, these were esteemed no better than
 traitors and enemies to the country. It is true, upon
 this the courts of parliament took upon them to judge
 in all ecclesiastical matters, and to examine whether the
 ecclesiastical courts had proceeded according to the
 laws of the church or not : and that the sentences of
 the temporal courts might be executed, they ordered the
 revenues of bishops, if they stood out in contumacy, to
 be seized into the King's hands, and their persons to be
 arrested.

When Danesius the Attorney-General heard how
 Pope Pius had arraigned the Pragmatic Sanction, and
 that he was designing to proceed to censures against
 the King and his ministers, he protested against all he
 had said, referring the decision of the matter to a general
 council.

Upon that King's death, he was succeeded by Lewis Lewis the Eleventh abrogates it.
 the Eleventh ; and the Bishop of Arras having great
 credit with him, the Pope gained him, by the promise
 of a cardinal's hat, to use his endeavours to get the
 King to abrogate the Sanction : and because he thought
 that which might work most on the King was, the apprehension
 that much money, which was now kept within the kingdom,
 would upon the laying it aside be carried to Rome ; this expedient
 was offered, that there should be a legate resident in France,
 with powers to grant such bulls as was necessary : though this
 was never done, and it seems it was only offered as a specious
 concession to gain their point. King Lewis the Eleventh's
 character is given us so fully by Philip de Comines, who knew
 him well, that none who have read him will wonder to find,
 that, when he needed any favour from the court of Rome,
 he made the fullest submission that any King perhaps ever made.
 He, in a

PART letter that he wrote to the Pope, owns *the Pope to be*
III. *God's Vicar on earth, to whose words he will always*
 1458. *hearken and obey : and therefore, though the Pragmatic*
 Councils, *Sanction was received, upon long deliberation, in a great*
 tom. xiv. *assembly, and was now fully settled, yet since the Pope*
 p. 97. *desired that it might be abrogated, and since the Bishop*
of Arras had put him in mind of the solemn promise
that he had made by him, before he came to the crown ;
he, reckoning that obedience was better than all sacrifice,
since that Sanction was made in a time of sedition and
schism, so that by it his kingdom was not conform to
other kingdoms, though many men studied to maintain
it, yet he resolved to follow and obey the Pope's orders ;
therefore he abrogates it entirely, and does of his own
accord, not compelled in any sort, restore him to the au-
thority that Martin the Fifth and Eugenius the Fourth
did exercise in former times ; and bids him use the power
given him by God at his pleasure : and promises, on the
word of a King, that he will take care that all his com-
mands shall be executed within his kingdom, without
opposition or appeal ; and that he will punish such as
are contumacious, as the Pope shall direct.

To the
 Pope's great
 joy.

Here was an entire submission, penned no doubt by the aspiring Cardinal. It was received at Rome with no small joy ; the Pragmatic was dragged about the streets of Rome, the Pope wept for joy, and at mass on Christmas-eve he consecrated a sword with a rich scabbard, to be sent to the King. The title of the *Most Christian King* had been given by former popes to some kings of France ; but Pope Pius was the person who upon this high merit made it one of the titles of the crown : such as read Des Comines' History will not find any other merit in that King to entitle him to so glorious a compellation.

The parlia-
 ment of
 Paris op-
 pose it.

The court of parliament of Paris interposed ; they made a noble remonstrance to the King, in which they

pressed him to maintain the Pragmatic Sanction, which had its original from a general council ; and they affirmed, that the King was obliged to maintain it. Yet afterwards, that King's project of engaging the Pope to assist his son-in-law to recover Sicily, then possessed by the bastard of Arragon, did miscarry, the Pope refusing to concur in it ; upon which the King was offended, and carried his submissions no farther ; only he suffered bulls of reservations and survivances to take place again.

This matter was taken up again six years after by Pope Paul the Second. A new minister was gained, by the same bait of a cardinal's hat, to procure the revocation : so the King's edict was sent to the court of parliament of Paris, to be registered there, in vacation time. The court ordered the Attorney-General to examine it. St. Romain was then Attorney-General, and he behaved himself with such courage, that he was much celebrated for it. " He opposed the registering it, and spoke much " in the praise of the Pragmatic Sanction. He showed " the ill consequences of repealing it : that it would let " in upon them abuses of all sorts, which were by it " condemned ; all affairs relating to the church would " be settled at Rome ; many would go and live there, in " hopes of making their fortunes by provisions. He set " forth, that ten or twelve bulls of survivances were " sometimes obtained upon the same benefice ; and, " during three years in Pope Pius's time, (in which the " exact observation of the Pragmatic Sanction was let " fall,) twenty-two bishopricks happening to fall void, " 500,000 crowns were sent to Rome to obtain bulls ; " and sixty-two abbeys being then vacant, a like sum " was sent for their bulls ; and 120,000 crowns were " sent to obtain other ecclesiastical preferments. He " added, that for every parish there might be a bull of " a *gratia expectativa*, or survivance, purchased at the " price of twenty-five crowns ; besides a vast number of

BOOK
I.
1458.

The honest
courage of
the Attor-
ney-Gener-
ral.

PART "other graces and dispensations. He insisted, that the
III. "King was bound to maintain the rights and liberties
 1458. "of the church in his kingdom, of which he was the
 "founder and defender."

For which
 he was
 turned out.

The aspiring Cardinal, offended with this honest freedom of the Attorney-General, told him he should fall under the King's displeasure, and lose his place for it. He answered, "the King had put him in the post freely ; he would discharge it faithfully as long as the King thought fit to continue him in it, and he was ready to lay it down whensoever it pleased the King ; but he would suffer all things, rather than do any thing against his conscience, the King's honour, and the good of the kingdom." The favourite prevailed to get him turned out, but the crafty King gave him secretly great rewards ; he esteemed him the more for his firmness, and restored him again to his place.

The university of Paris also interposed ; and the Rector told the Legate, that, if the matter was further prosecuted, they would appeal to a general council : but this notwithstanding, and though the court of parliament stood firm, yet the King being under the apprehensions of some practice of his brothers of Rome, whom he hated mortally, in order to the defeating those, renewed his promises for abrogating the Pragmatic Sanction ; and it was for many years let fall into desuetude. Towards the end of this reign, an assembly was held at Orleans, in order to the reestablishing the Pragmatic Sanction, and the hindering money to be carried to Rome. The King died 1583.

The Pragmatic Sanction reestablished.

Upon Charles the Eighth's succeeding, an assembly of the states was held at Tours, in which the observation of the Pragmatic Sanction was earnestly pressed ; the third estate insisted on having it entirely restored. The prelates, who had been promoted contrary to it under King Lewis, opposed this vehemently ; and were

in reproach called the court-bishops, unduly promoted; and were charged as men that aspired to favour at Rome. St. Romain, now again Attorney-General, said, he knew no ecclesiastical law better calculated to the interest of the kingdom than the Pragmatic Sanction was; and therefore he would support it. The King saw it was for his advantage to maintain it, and so was firmly resolved to adhere to it. The courts of parliament not only judged in favour of elections made by virtue of that sanction, but, by earnest remonstrances, they pressed the King to prohibit the applications made to the court of Rome for graces condemned by it.

Innocent the Eighth continued by his legates to press the entire repeal of the Pragmatic; yet, notwithstanding all opposition, it continued to be observed during Charles the Eighth's reign. Lewis the Twelfth did, by a special edict, appoint it to be for ever observed. Thus it continued till the council of Lateran, summoned by Pope Julius the Second; to which Silvester Bishop of Worcester, and Sir Robert Wingfield, were commissioned by King Henry the Eighth to go "in his name, and on behalf of the kingdom, to conclude every thing for the good of the catholic church, and for a reformation both in the head and in the members: and to consent to all statutes and decrees for the public good; promising to ratify whatever they, or any of them should do." The King's empowering two persons in such a manner seems no small invasion of the liberties of the church; but it was in the Pope's favour, so it was not challenged.

This Council was called by that angry Pope, chiefly against Lewis the Twelfth: and the Pragmatic Sanction was arraigned in it; both because it maintained the authority of the Council to be superior to the Pope, and because it cut off the advantages that the court had made by the bulls sent into France. The Pope brought

BOOK I.

1458.

But it was still complained of by the popes.

1499.

Rymer, tom. xiii. 17 Feb. 1511.

PART III. Lewis the Eleventh's letters-patents, by which it was abrogated, into the Council ; and the Advocate of the Council, after he had severely arraigned it, insisted to have it condemned. So a monition was decreed, summoning all who would appear for it to come and be heard upon it within sixty days. The Pope died in February thereafter.

Condemned by the council in the Lateran.

1499. Pope Leo the Tenth succeeded, and renewed the monitory letters issued out by his predecessor. But the personal hatred with which Julius prosecuted Lewis being at an end, things were more calmly managed. Some bishops were sent from the Gallican church to assist in the Council: but, before any thing could be concluded, King Lewis dying, Francis succeeded. He understood that the Pope and the Council were intending to proceed against the Pragmatic Sanction, so he resolved to bring the matter to an agreement; in which some progress was made, in an interview that he had with the Pope at Bononia. It was concluded by a sanction called the Concordate, between the Cardinals of Ancona and of Sanctorum Quatuor on the Pope's side, and Chancellor Prat for the King. Some small differences remained; which were all yielded as the Pope desired: and in the month of December the Pope's bull, condemning the Pragmatic Sanction, was read, and approved by that Council, such as it was.

The Concordate put instead of it.

1516. The Concordate was put instead of it. The truth was, Francis was young; and was so set on pursuing his designs in Italy, in which he saw the advantage of having the Pope on his side, that he sacrificed all other considerations to that, and made the best bargain he could. "The King and the Pope divided the matter between them. When any bishoprick became vacant, the King was within six months to name to it a doctor, or one licensed in divinity, of the age of 27. If the Pope did not approve of the nomination, the

“ King had three months more to nominate another; **BOOK**
 “ but if he failed again, the Pope was to provide one to **I. 1**
 “ the see. The Pope had reserved to himself the pro- **1516.**
 “ viding of all that became vacant in the court of
 “ Rome: (a pretension the popes had set on foot, in
 “ which by degrees they had enlarged the extent of
 “ it to very great and undetermined bounds; and did
 “ thereby dispose of many benefices.) And the King
 “ was limited in his nomination by some conditions,
 “ with relation to the person so nominated; yet the
 “ want of these was not to be objected to the King’s
 “ kindred, or to other illustrious persons. The King
 “ was also to nominate to all abbeyes a person of 23
 “ years of age. *Gratiæ expectativæ*, or survivances and
 “ reservations in bulls, were never to be admitted: only
 “ one benefice might be reserved from a collator of 10,
 “ and two from one of 50. Causes of appeals were to
 “ be judged *in partibus*, in the parts where the matters
 “ lay; excepting the causes enumerated in the law as
 “ *greater causes*. It was also provided, that, in all
 “ bulls that were obtained, the true value of the bene-
 “ fice was to be expressed; otherwise the grace was
 “ null and void.” No mention was made of annats;
 and, in other particulars, the articles in the Pragmatic
 Sanction were inserted. The Pope promised he would
 send a legate to France, to tax the value of all ecclesi-
 astical benefices. All former excommunications were
 taken off, with an indemnity for all that was passed.

The King having the two instruments, the one abro-
 gating the Pragmatic Sanction, and the other establish-
 ing the Concordate, sent in great pomp to him, in or-
 der to their being registered in parliament; resolved
 only to offer the latter, as that in which the other was
 virtually comprehended. So he went in person to the
 court of parliament, to which many great men, divines,
 and other persons of distinction, were called. The

King Francis carried
 it to the
 parliament
 of Paris.

PART Chancellor set forth the hatred Pope Julius bore King
III. Lewis the Twelfth, and the violence with which he had
 1516. proceeded against him : the King succeeding when the
 council of the Lateran was assembled ; which was
 composed chiefly of members of the court, or of depen-
 ders on the court of Rome, who were all engaged
 against the Pragmatic Sanction, as that which dimi-
 nished their profits. The King saw it was in vain. to
 insist in defending it : but apprehending, if it were
 simply condemned, all the old oppressions would again
 take place, he being then engaged in a most dangerous
 war in Italy, saw no better way to gain the Pope than
 by agreeing to the Concordate.

It was
 there op-
 posed by
 the ecclesi-
 astics of
 that court.

The ecclesiastics who were present said, by their
 mouth the Cardinal of Boisi, that the Concordate did so
 affect the whole Gallican church, that without a general
 consent it could not be approved. The King upon
 this said with some indignation, that he would com-
 mand them either to approve it, or he would send them
 to Rome to dispute the matter there with the Pope. The
 President answered in the name of the court, that he
 would report the King's pleasure to the court ; and
 they would so proceed in that matter, as to please both
 God and the King. The Chancellor replied, the court
 were wise : the King said, he did enjoin them to obey
 without delay. Then letters-patents were made out,
 setting forth the Concordate, and requiring the court of
 parliament, and all other judges, to observe it, and to
 see it fully executed.

Opposition
 made to it
 by the
 King's
 learned
 council.

Some days after that, the Chancellor, with some of
 the officers of the crown, came and brought the whole
 courts together, and delivered them the King's letters-
 patents, requiring them to register the Concordate.
 They upon that appointed the King's council to ex-
 amine the matters in it. The Advocate-General did in
 the Chancellor's presence represent the inconvenience

of receiving the Concordates, by which the liberties of the Gallican church were lessened; and said, that by the paying of *annats* much money would be carried out of the kingdom: so he desired they would appoint a committee to examine it. Four were named; who, after they had sate about it ten days, desired more might be added to them: so the President of the Enquets, or inquisitions, and four more, were joined to them. A week after that, the Advocate-General moved the court to proceed still to judge according to the Pragmatic, and not to receive the revocation of it, against which he put in an appeal. Four days after this, the bastard of Savoy, the King's natural uncle, came into the court with orders from the King, requiring them to proceed immediately to the publishing the Concordates; appointing him to hear all their debates, that he might report all to the King. He told them how much the King was offended with their delays: they on the other hand complained of his being present to hear them deliver their opinions. They sent some of their number to lay this before the King: it looked like a design to frighten them, when one, not of their body, was to hear all that passed among them. The King said, there were some worthy men among them; but others, like fools, complained of him, and of the expence of his court: he was a King, and had as much authority as his predecessors. They had flattered Lewis the Twelfth, and called him the *Father of Justice*: he would also have justice done with all vigour. In Lewis's time some were banished the kingdom because they did not obey him; so, if they did not obey him, he would send some of them to Bourdeaux, and others to Toulouse, and put good men in their places: and told them, he would have his uncle present during their deliberation. So they were forced to submit to it.

On the 13th of June they began to deliver their opi-

1516.
1517.

PART nions, and that lasted till the 24th of July : and then
 III. they concluded that the court could not, and ought not

1517. to register the Concordates ; but that they would still
 They re- observe the Pragmatic Sanction : and that the univer-
 solve not to publish it. sity of Paris, and all others that desired to be heard,
 ought to be heard. Therefore, they said, they must
 appeal from the abrogation of the Pragmatic Sanction ;
 and if the King would insist to have the Concordate
 observed, a great assembly ought to be summoned,
 such as Charles the Seventh had called to settle the
 Pragmatic. They also charged the Savoyard to make
 a true report to the King of their proceedings.

The King was highly offended at this. Upon this the King wrote to them, to send some of
 their body to give him an account of the grounds they
 went on : two were sent, but it was long before they
 were admitted to his presence ; the King saying, he
 would delay their dispatch, as they had delayed his bu-
 siness. When they were admitted, they were ordered
 to put what they had to offer in writing. This they
 did, but desired to be likewise heard. But being asked
 if they had any thing to offer that was not in their
 paper, they said they had not, but desired the King
 would hear their paper read to him : the King refused
 it. They were a body of one hundred persons, and
 had been preparing their paper above seven months,
 but the Chancellor would answer it in less time : and
 the King would not suffer them to have a verbal pro-
 cess against what he had done. He told them, there
 was but one King in France : he had done the best he
 could to bring all to a quiet state, and would not suffer
 that which he had done in Italy to be undone in France ;
 nor would he suffer them to assume an authority like
 that of the senate of Venice. It was their business to
 do justice, but not to put the kingdom in a flame, as
 they had attempted to do in his predecessor's time.
 He concluded, he would have them approve the Con-

cordates ; and if they gave him more trouble, he would BOOK
make them ambulatory, and to follow his court : nor I.
would he suffer any more ecclésiastics to be of their 1517.
body. They were not entirely his subjects, since he
had no authority to cut off their heads : they ought to
say their breviary, and not to meddle in his affairs.

They answered him, that these things were contrary
to the constitution of their court. He said, he was
sorry his ancestors had so constituted it; but he was
King as well as they were, and he would settle them
on another foot : so he bid them be gone early the
next morning. They begged a short delay, for the
ways were bad; but the Great Master told them from
the King, that, if they were not gone by such an hour,
he would put them in prison, and keep them in it six
months, and then he would see who would move to set
them at liberty : so they went to Paris. The Duke of
Tremoville was sent after them to the parliament, to
let them know that the King would have the Concor-
dates to be immediately published, without any further
deliberation. They must obey the King as became
subjects: he told them, the King had repeated that
ten times to him in the space of a quarter of an hour;
and concluded, that if they delayed any longer to obey
the King, the King would make all the court feel the
effects of his displeasure.

The court called for the King's learned council : but The King's
they said, they had received positive orders from the learned
King by Tremoville to consent to the Concordates ; the council op-
otherwise the King would treat them so, that they pose it no
should feel it sensibly. The Advocate-General said, longer.
he was sorry for the methods the King took ; but he
wished they would consider what might follow, if they
continued to deny what was so earnestly pressed on
them : the publishing this could be of no force, since
the church, that was so much concerned in it, was nei-

- PART ther called for, nor heard ; the thing might be after-
 III. wards set right, for Lewis the Eleventh saw his error,
 1517. and changed his mind. He offered two things to soften
 that which was required of them : one was, to insert
 in the register, that it was done in obedience to the
 King's commands often repeated ; the other was, that
 they should declare that they did not approve the abro-
 gation of the Pragmatic Sanction, but were then only
 to publish the Concordates ; and that they might re-
 solve in all their judiciary proceedings to have no re-
 gard to that ; and in particular to that clause, that all
 bulls were void, if the true value of the benefice was not
 1518. expressed in them. On the 18th of March they came
 to this resolution, that their decree of the 24th of July,
 for observing the Pragmatic, was by them fully con-
 firmed : but, in obedience to the King's commands, they
 published the Concordates ; adding a protestation, that
 the court did not approve it, but intended in all their
 sentences to judge according to the Pragmatic Sanction.

The parlia-
 ment pub-
 lishes it,
 but with a
 protesta-
 tion.

The court made these protestations in the hands of
 the Bishop of Langres, a duke and peer of France,
 setting forth, that their liberty was taken from them ;
 that the publication of the Concordates was not done
 by their order, but against their mind, by the King's
 express order ; and that they did not intend to approve
 it, nor to be governed by it in their judgments, but to
 observe the Pragmatic Sanction. They ordered likewise
 an appeal to be made from the Pope, to the Pope bet-
 ter advised, and to the next general council ; upon all
 which the Bishop of Langres made an authentic instru-
 ment : so it was resolved to proceed to publication on
 the 22d of March. But on the 21st the Rector of
 the University of Paris, accompanied by some of that
 body, and by some advocates, appeared, desiring to be
 heard before they should proceed to such publication.
 The court received his petition, and promised to consi-

der it ; but said, if they made the publication, it should not prejudice any of their rights, for they were resolved to judge as formerly, notwithstanding that : yet they required him not to publish this. The Dean of Nostredame came on the 22d to the court, and said, they heard they were going to publish the Concordates, which both implied their condemning the councils of Constance and Basil, and tended to the destruction of the liberties of the Gallican church, which the popes had always envied them. He desired they would not proceed to it till the whole Gallican church was consulted in the matter ; and protested, that what they were about to do should not be to the prejudice of the church. After this was received, they proceeded to the publication, as they had promised, adding these words to it ; *Read, published, and registered by the order and command of the King often repeated to us, in the presence of the Lord of Tremoville, his First Chamberlain, specially sent to have it done.* And on the 24th of March they renewed their protestation, that they did not approve of it ; that they insisted in their former appeals, and were resolved to proceed in all their judgments without regard to it.

On the 27th of March the Rector of the University ordered a mandate to be affixed, prohibiting their printers to print the Concordates : he likewise appealed from the Pope to a general council, lawfully assembled, sitting in a safe place, and in full freedom. This was printed and affixed : and great reflections were made by some preachers in their sermons, both on the King and on the Chancellor. The King being informed of this, wrote to the First President, complaining both of the Rector, and of the preachers : he ordered them to take informations of all those matters, and to get the Concordates to be printed as soon as was possible, and to punish the authors of sedition. But the court said,

BOOK
I.
1518.

The university and clergy oppose it.

PART they knew nothing tending that way ; for their business took them up so entirely, that they could not attend on sermons. The King complained likewise severely of the appeal they had made ; he was monarch, and had no superior to whom an appeal could lie : he also sent an order to inhibit all meetings in the university.

The exceptions to the Concordate by the parliament.

In the Concordate it was provided, that, if it was not published within six months in France, it should be null and void : but the delays that had been made put the King on getting that term prolonged a year longer. “ The three chief exceptions that the parliament had to the Concordates were, first, the declaring bulls void if the true value of the benefices was not set forth in them, which might put the obtainers of them to great charge, and many suits : the second was, the carrying the *greater causes* to be judged at Rome : the third was concerning elections. The first of these was given up, and was no further urged by the court of Rome ; but it was not settled what those *greater causes* were. By the Pragmatic they were restrained to bishopricks and monasteries ; but the Concordates held the matter in general words : so the number of these causes was indefinite, and on all occasions it would increase as the canonists pleased. They condemned that device of the court of Rome, of granting provisions for all that was held by any who died in the court, considering the great extent to which that had been carried. They also found that by the Concordates all nunneries were left to the Pope’s provision ; and likewise all inferior dignities, such as deaneries and provostships. All churches that had special privileges were exempted from the King’s nomination ; and at Rome exceptions might be unjustly made to the persons named by the King. But above all, they stood on this ; that the right of elect-

"ing was founded on the law of God, and on natural BOOK
 "right: that this was established by the authority of I.
 "general councils, by the civil law, and by many royal 1518.
 "edicts, during all the three races of their kings.
 "This right was now taken away without hearing the
 "parties concerned to set it forth. If there had crept
 "in abuses in elections, these might be corrected: but
 "they thought the King usurped that which did not
 "belong to him, on this pretence, that the Pope
 "granted it to him; which was contrary both to the
 "doctrine and practice of the Gallican church. They
 "found many lesser exceptions in point of form to the
 "method of abrogating the Pragmatic Sanction: one
 "was, that the council of the Lateran did forbid all
 "persons that held lands of the church to observe or
 "maintain that Sanction, under the pain of forfeiting
 "those lands; which was a plain invasion of the King's
 "prerogatives, who is supreme lord of all those lands
 "within his dominions. The Pope also took upon him
 "to annul that Sanction, that then subsisted by the
 "royal authority: this might be made a precedent in
 "time to come for annulling any of their laws. They
 "likewise thought the taking away the Pragmatic
 "Sanction, which was made upon the authority of the
 "councils of Constance and Basil, and had declared
 "the subjection of the Pope to the council, did set
 "aside that doctrine, and set up the Pope's authority
 "above the council, though the Pragmatic was made
 "while the Pope was reconciled to the council: and
 "the breach upon which Eugenius was deposed hap-
 "pened not till almost a year after that; it being pub-
 "lished in July 1438, and his deposition was not till
 "June 1439: besides that, ten years after that, Pope
 "Nicolaus the Fifth confirmed all the decrees made
 "at Basil. They likewise put the King in mind of the
 "oath he took, at his coronation, to maintain all the

PART "rights and liberties of the Gallican church. So they
 III. "moved the King, either to prevail with the Pope to
 1518. "call a general council, or that he would call a na-
 "tional one in France, to judge of the whole matter :
 "and as for the threatenings given out, that the Pope
 "would depose the King, and give away his kingdom,
 "if he did not submit to him ; they said the King held
 "his crown of God, and all such threatenings ought to
 "be rejected with scorn and indignation."

These were
 answered
 by the
 Chancellor.

To all these the Chancellor made a long and flattering answer ; for which he had the usual reward of a cardinal's cap. He set forth the danger the King was in, being engaged in the war of Italy ; the Pope threatening him with censures : for the Pragmatic Sanction was then condemned by the Pope, and that censure was ratified by the council in the Lateran ; upon which he would have reassumed all the old oppressions, if the King had not entered into that treaty, yielding some points to save the rest. He said, the kings of the first race nominated to bishopricks : for which he cited precedents from Gregory of Tours. So the kings of England did name, and the popes upon that gave provisions : the kings of Scotland did also name, but not by virtue of a right, but rather by connivance. He said, elections had gone through various forms ; sometimes popes did elect, sometimes princes with the people, sometimes princes took it into their own hands, sometimes the whole clergy without the people, and of late the canons chose without the concurrence of the clergy. That the King being in these difficulties, all those about him, and all those in France who were advised with in the matter, thought the accepting the Concordates was just and necessary. Pope Leo repented that he had granted so much : and it was not without great difficulty that he brought the cardinals to consent to it. He went very copiously as a canonist through the

other heads, softening some abuses, and showing that others had a long practice for them, and were observed BOOK
I.
in other kingdoms. 1518.

And thus was this matter carried in the parliament of Paris; in which, as the court showed great integrity and much courage, which deserve the highest characters with which such noble patriots ought to be honoured; so in this instance we see how feeble the resistance even of the worthiest judges will prove to a prince, who has possessed himself of the whole legislative authority; when he intends to break through established laws and constitutions, and to sacrifice the rights of his crown, and the interest of his people, to serve particular ends of his own. In such cases, the generous integrity of judges, or other ministers, will be resented as an attempt on the sovereign authority: and such is the nature of arbitrary power, that the most modest defence of law and justice, when it crosses the designs of an insolent and corrupt minister, and an abused prince, will pass for disobedience and sedition.

If the assembly of the states in France had maintained their share of the legislative power, and had not suffered the right they once had to be taken from them, of being liable to no taxes but by their own consent, these judges would have been better supported: and the opposition they made upon this occasion would have drawn after it all the most signal expressions of honour and esteem, that a nation owes to the trustees of their laws and liberties, when they maintain them resolutely, and dispense them equally. And the corrupt Chancellor would have received such punishment as all wicked ministers deserve, who for their own ends betray the interest of their country.

The court of parliament showed great firmness after this: and it appeared that the protestation that they made, of judging still according to the Pragmatic, was The parliament still
judged by
the Pragmatic
Sanction.

PART not only a piece of form to save their credit. **The**

III. Archbishop of Sens died soon after; and the King sent

1518. to inhibit the chapter to proceed to an election. It was understood, that he designed to give it to the Bishop of Paris; so the chapter wrote to that Bishop not to give such a wound to their liberties as to take it upon the King's nomination: but seeing that he had no regard to that, they elected him, that so they might by this seem to keep up their claim. The Bishop of Alby died soon after that; the King named one, and the chapter chose another: upon that Alby being within the jurisdiction of Tholouse, the court of parliament there judged in favour of him who was elected by the chapter, against him who had obtained bulls upon the King's nomination; at which the King was highly offended. The archbishoprick of Bourges falling void soon after, the King nominated one, and the chapter elected another. The chapter pretended a special privilege to elect; so the Pope judged in their favour.

1524. Some years after this, the King carried on his wars in Italy, leaving his mother Regent of France: so the court of parliament made a remonstrance to her, setting forth the invasions that had been made upon the rights of the Gallican church, desiring her to interpose, that the Pragmatic Sanction, and the liberty of elections, might again have their full force; but that had no effect.

Upon the King's being a prisoner, the Concordate was more condemned.

Soon after this, the King was taken prisoner by the army of Charles the Fifth at the battle of Pavia: and upon that his mother declared, that she looked on her son's misfortunes as a judgment of God upon him, for his abolishing the Pragmatic Sanction; and though she would not take it upon her to make any alteration during her son's absence, yet she promised, that, when he should be set at liberty, she would use her utmost endeavours with him to set it up again, and to abolish

the Concordates. This was registered in the records of **BOOK**
 the court of parliament, yet it had no effect upon the I.
 King's return out of Spain. He, finding the parliament **1524.**
 resolved to maintain all elections, ordered that matter
 to be taken wholly out of their cognizance; and he re-
 moved all suits of that sort from the courts of parlia-
 ment to the great council, upon some disputes that **1527.**
 were then on foot concerning a bishoprick and an ab-
 bey given to Chancellor Prat, then made a cardinal in
 recompense of the service he had done the court of
 Rome: so by that an end was put to all disputes.

The parliament struggled hard against this diminu-
 tion of their jurisdiction: they wrote to the dukes and
 peers of France to move the Regent not to proceed
 thus to lessen their authority: on the other hand she
 said, they were taking all things into their own hands
 in prejudice of the King's prerogative. But the King
 confirmed that, and settled the Chancellor in the pos-
 session of the see and abbey; and the proceedings of
 the parliament against him were annulled, and ordered
 to be struck out of their registers. And it appearing
 that some chapters and abbeys had special privileges
 for free elections; the King obtained a bull from Cle-
 ment the Seventh, suspending all those during the **1532.**
 King's life. The court of Rome stood long upon this,
 and thought to have gained new advantages before it
 should be granted: but the Pope was at that time in a
 secret treaty with the court of France, which was af-
 terwards accomplished at Marseilles; so he was easier
 in this matter, and the bull was registered in parlia-
 ment in May thereafter. And upon this the Chancel-
 lor, pretending that he would see and examine those
 privileges, called for them all; and when they were
 brought to him, he threw them all into the fire.

But to lay all that I have found of this matter toge-
 ther; the clergy of France, in a remonstrance that they

These mat-
 ters re-
 moved
 from the
 parliament
 to the great
 council.

Remon-
 strances
 made by

PART made to King Henry the Third, affirmed, that Francis
III. at his death declared to his son, that nothing troubled
 his conscience more, than his taking away canonical
 elections, and his assuming to himself the nomination
 to bishopricks. If this was true, his son had no regard
 to it, but went on as his father had done. Upon his
 death, when the Cardinal of Lorrain pressed the par-
 liament to proceed in the vigorous prosecution of he-
 resy, they remonstrated, that the growth of heresy
 flowed chiefly from the scandals that were given by bad
 clergymen and ill bishops : and that the ill choice that
 had been made by the court, since the Concordates were
 set up, gave more occasion to the progress that heresy
 made than any other thing whatsoever. The courts
 were so monstrously corrupt during that and the two
 former reigns, that no other could be expected from
 them.

the clergy
 against
 this.

1585.

1560.

An assembly of the states was called in the begin-
 ning of Charles the Ninth's reign. In it the first estate
 prayed, that the Pragmatic Sanction might again take
 place, particularly in the point of elections; they backed
 this with great authorities of councils ancient and mo-
 dern : with them the two other estates agreed. The
 court tried to shift this off, promising to send one to
 Rome to treat about it : but that did not satisfy ; so a
 decree was drawn up to this effect, that an archbishop
 should be chosen by the bishops of his province, by
 the chapter of his cathedral, and twelve persons of the
 chief of the laity ; and a bishop by the metropolitan
 and the chapter. The court of parliament opposed
 this : they thought the laity ought to have no share in
 elections, so they pressed the restoring the Pragmatic
 Sanction without any alteration ; yet, in conclusion,
 the decree was thus amended : an archbishop was to be
 chosen by the bishops of the province, and the chapter
 of the see ; but a bishop was to be chosen by the arch-

bishop, with the bishops of the province, and the chapter, and by twenty-four of the laity to be thus nominated : all the gentry were to be summoned to meet, and to choose twelve to represent them at the election, and the city was to choose other twelve. All these were to make a list of three persons to be offered to the King, and the man named by the King was to have the see. Thus they designed to bring this matter into a form as near the customs mentioned in the Roman law as they could. But this design vanished, and was never put in practice.

The clergy still called for restoring the elections : President Ferrier was sent to Rome to obtain it. He in a long speech showed, that neither the Gallican church, nor the courts of parliament, had ever received the Concordates, that shadow of approbation given to it by the parliament of Paris being extorted from them by force ; and he laid out all the inconveniences that had happened since the Concordates were set up. But that court felt the advantages they had by them too sensibly, to be ever prevailed with to give them up. And thus that great affair was settled in the view of this church and nation, at the time that King Henry broke off all correspondence with it. It may be very reasonably presumed, that inferences were made from this, to let all people see what merchandize the court of Rome made of the most sacred rights of the church, when they had their own profits secured : and therefore the wise men in this church at that time might justly conclude, that their liberties were safer while they remained an entire body within themselves, under a legal constitution ; by which, if princes carried their authority too far, some check might be given to it by those from whom the public aids were to be obtained for supporting the government, than while all was believed to belong to the popes, who would at any time

BOOK
I.
1560.

PART make a bargain, and divide the spoils of the church
 III. with crowned heads; taking to themselves the gain-
 1560. ful part, and leaving the rest in the hands of princes.

An apology, with the reasons for this digression.

I hope, though this relation does not belong properly to the history of the Reformation; yet since it is highly probable it had a great influence on people's minds, this digression will be easily forgiven me. And now I turn to such of our affairs as fall within this period.

Sept. 16,
1513.

Queen Katharine's letter to King Henry upon the death of the King of Scotland.

The first thing that occurred to me, in order of time, was a letter of Queen Katharine's to King Henry, who, upon his crossing the sea, left the regency of the kingdom in her hands; the commission bears date the 11th of June 1513. King James the Fourth of Scotland having invaded England with a great army, was defeated and killed by the Earl of Surrey. The Earl gave the Queen the news in a letter to her, with one to the King; this she sent him with a letter of her own; which being the only one of hers to the King that I ever saw, I have inserted it in my Collection. The familiarities of calling him in one place *My husband*, and in another, *My Henry*, are not unpleasant. She sent with it a piece of the King of Scots' coat to be a banner: she was then going to visit, as she calls it, our Lady of Walsingham.

Collect.
Numb. 2.

The progress of Wolsey's rise.

I will next open an account of the progress of Cardinal Wolsey's fortunes, and the ascendant he had over the King. The first step he made into the church was to be Rector of Lymington in the diocese of Bath and Wells; then, on the 30th of July 1508, he had a papal dispensation to hold the vicarage of Lyde, in the diocese of Canterbury, with his rectory. There is a grant to him as Almoner, on the 8th of November 1509. The next preferment he had was to be a prebendary of Windsor: he was next advanced to be Dean of Lincoln. A year after that, Pope Leo having reserved the

disposing the see of Lincoln to himself, gave it to Wol- BOOK
sey, designed in the bulls Dean of St. Stephen's, West- I.
minster. But no mention is made of the King's no-
mination. This is owned by the King in the writ for
the restitution of the temporalities. On the 14th of July 14,
July that year, Cardinal de Medici, afterwards Pope 1514.
Clement the Seventh, wrote to King Henry, that, upon
the death of Cardinal Bembridge, he had prayed the
Pope not to dispose of his benefices till he knew the
King's mind, which the Pope out of his affection to the
King granted very readily. Perhaps the King did re- Rymer
commend Wolsey; but no mention is made of that in tom. xiii.
his bulls. The King granted the restitution of the August 5.
temporalities of York before his instalment; for in the
writ he is only called the *elect Archbishop*: and it is
not expressed that he had the King's nomination. He
had Tournay *in commendam*, but resigned it into the
hands of Francis, who for that gave him a pension of
12000 livres during life: at the same time Prince July 31,
Charles, afterwards Charles the Fifth, gave him a pen- 1518.
sion of 3000l. It seems he afterwards desired to have
it better secured: so in the end of that year Prince Dec. 16,
Charles lodged a pension of 5000 ducats to him on the 1518.
bishoprick of Pace in Castile. Above a year after that, March 29,
Pope Leo gave him a pension of 2000 ducats out of Pa- 1520.
lencia, instead of that which was charged on the bi-
shoprick of Pace. Besides all this, when Charles the
Fifth was in London, he gave him another pension of
9000 crowns, dated the 8th of June 1522. It seems
he had other pensions from France; for, five years after Nov. 18,
this, there was an arrear stated there as due to him of 1525.
121,898 crowns. He had also pensions from other
princes of a lower order. The Duke of Milan's Secre- Rymer,
tary did, by his master's express order, engage in the vol. xii.
year 1515 to pay Wolsey 10,000 ducats a year; he on
his part engaging, that there should be a perpetual

PART friendship settled between the Kings of England and
III. France with that Duke.

Decemb. 2,
1524.

The French King being a prisoner, his favour was necessary in that distress; so the Regent engaged to pay it in seven years time. But whatever may be in Wolsey's provisions when the bishoprick of Salisbury was given to Cardinal Campegio by a bull, mention is expressly made in it of the King's letters interceding humbly for him.

King Henry's book of the Seven Sacraments.

When King Henry wrote his book of the Seven Sacraments, it seems it was at first designed to send it over in manuscript; for Wolsey sent one to the King finely dressed, that was to be presented to the Pope: and he writes, that he was to send him more, which were to be sent about with the Pope's bulls to all princes and universities: one in particular, as he writes, was far more excellent and princely. He also sent with it the choice of certain verses, to be written in the King's own hand in the book that was to be sent to the Pope, and subscribed by him, to be laid up in the archives of the church to his immortal glory and memory. The matter was so laid, that the book was presented to the Pope on the 10th of October; and the very day after, the bull giving him the title of Defender of the Faith bears date: and in a private letter that Pope Leo wrote to him, he runs out into copious strains of flattery, affirming, *That it appeared that the Holy Ghost assisted him in writing it.*

Ut Spiritum affuisse Sanctum appareat.

Collect.
Numb. 4.

The King was so pleased with the title, that Wolsey directed his letters to him with it on the back, as appears in a letter of his, that sets forth the low state of the affairs of Spain in Italy. It appears it was written (for the year is not added in the date) after that Luther wrote his answer to the King's book, at least after letters came from him on the subject; the original of which he desires might be sent him, that he might

send it to the Pope: and he intended to send copies **BOOK**
both of those, and of the King's answers to the Cardi- **I.**
nal of Mentz, and to George Duke of Saxony.

After the King's interviews both with the Emperor ^{Wolsey} and the King of France were over, new quarrels broke ^{sent to} out, by which the Emperor and Francis engaged in ^{Charles the} hostilities: but King Henry, pretending to be the um- ^{Fifth,} pire of their differences, sent Wolsey over to compose ^{gained} them. He came to Calais in the beginning of August. ^{by him.} 1521.
From Dover he wrote to the King, and sent two letters ^{Collect.} to him, which the King was to write in his own hand ^{Numb. 5.} to the Emperor, and to the Lady Regent of Flanders, which he desired the King would send to him; for he would move slowly towards him. Thus he took the whole ministry into his own hands, and prepared even the King's secret letters for him. He was with the Emperor thirteen days, who gave him a singular reception; for he came a mile out of town to meet him. The town is not named, but it was Bruges; for in one of Erasmus's letters, he mentions his meeting Wolsey in that town, he being then with the Emperor. The Cardinal returned by the way of Gravelin; and from thence, beside the public letter, in which he gave the King an account of his negociation, he wrote a private one to him with this direction on it, *To the Kings* ^{Collect.} *Graceys own hands only.* ^{Numb. 6.} It seems he had no private conversation with the Emperor formerly; "for in this
"he observes, that for his age he was very wise, and
"understood his affairs well. He was cold and tem-
"perate in speech; but spoke to very good purpose.
"He reckoned that he would prove a very wise man:
"he thought he was much inclined to truth, and to the
"keeping of his promises: he seemed to be insepara-
"bly joined to the King; and was resolved to follow
"his advice in all his affairs, and to trust the Cardinal
"entirely. He twice or thrice in secret promised to

PART “ him, by his faith and truth, to abide by this ; he pro-
III. “ mised it also to all the rest of the privy-council that
 1524. “ were with the Cardinal, in such a manner, that they
 “ all believed it came from his heart, without artifice or
 “ dissimulation. So Wolsey wrote to the King, that
 “ he had reason to bless God that he was not only the
 “ ruler of his own realm, but that now by his wisdom
 “ Spain, Italy, Germany, and the Low-Countries should
 “ be ruled and governed.” Whether the Emperor did
 by his prudent and modest behaviour really impose
 upon Wolsey ; or whether, by other secret practices he
 had so gained him, as to oblige him to persuade the
 King to such a confidence in him, I leave it to the
 reader to judge.

Wolsey's
 practices to
 be chosen
 Pope.

Collect.
 Numb. 7.
 Sept. 30.
 Sept. 14.

It passes generally among all the writers of that age,
 that he aspired to the popedom : and that the Empe-
 ror then promised him his assistance ; in which he fail-
 ing to him afterwards, Wolsey carried his revenges so
 far, that all the change of counsels, and even the suit
 of the divorce, is in a great measure ascribed to it. I
 went into the stream in my history, and seemed per-
 suaded of it ; yet some original letters of Wolsey's,
 communicated to me by Sir William Cook of Norfolk,
 which I go next to open, make this very doubtful. The
 first was upon the news of Pope Hadrian's death, upon
 which he immediately wrote to the King, “ that his
 “ absence from Rome was the only obstacle of his ad-
 “ vancement to that dignity : there were great factions
 “ then at Rome : he protests before God, that he
 “ thought himself unfit for it, and that he desired
 “ much rather to end his days with the King ; yet, re-
 “ membering that at the last vacation (nine months be-
 “ fore) the King was for his being preferred to it,
 “ thinking it would be for his service, and supposing
 “ that he was still of the same mind, he would prepare
 “ such instructions as had been before sent to Pace,

"Dean of St. Paul's, then ambassador at Rome, and BOOK
 "send them to him by the next:" with this he also I.
 sent him the letters that he had from Rome. The 1521.
 next day he sent the letters and instructions, directed Collect.
 to the King's ambassadors, who were, the Bishop of Numb. 8.
 Bath, Pace, and Haniball, for procuring his prefer- Octob. 1.
 ment; or, that failing, for Cardinal de Medici: these
 he desired the King to sign and dispatch. And that
 the Emperor might more effectually concur, though,
 pursuant to the conference he had with the King on
 that behalf, he verily supposed he had not failed to ad-
 vance it, he drew a private letter for the King to write
 with his own hand to the Emperor, putting to it the
 secret sign and mark that was between them.

The dispatch, that upon this he sent to the King's Vol. II.
 ambassador at Rome, fell into my hands when I was Coll. Re-
 laying out for materials for my second volume: but cords,
 though it belonged in the order of time to the first, I Numb. 48.
 thought it would be acceptable to the reader to see it,
 though not in its proper place. In it, after some very
 respectful words of Pope Hadrian, which, whether he
 wrote out of decency only, or that he thought so of
 him, I cannot determine, "he tells them, that, before
 "the vacancy, both the Emperor and the King had Wolsey's
 "great conferences for his advancement, though the designs to
 "Emperor's absence makes that he cannot now join be chosen
 "with them; yet the Regent of the Netherlands, who Pope.
 "knows his mind, has expressed an earnest and hearty
 "concurrence for it: and by the letters of the Cardi-
 "nals de Medicis, Sanctorum Quatuor, and Campegio,
 "he saw their affections. He was chiefly determined
 "by the King's earnestness about it, though he could
 "willingly have lived still where he was; his years in-
 "creasing, and he knew himself unworthy of so high
 "a dignity: yet his zeal for the exaltation of the Chris-
 "tian faith, and for the honour and safety of the King

VOL. III.

D

PART “ and the Emperor, made him refer himself to the
III. “ pleasure of God. And in the King’s name he sends
 1521. “ them double letters : the first to the Cardinal de Me-
 “ dicis, offering the King’s assistance to him ; and if it
 “ was probable he would carry it, they were to use no
 “ other powers : but if he thought he could not carry
 “ it, then they were to propose himself to him, and to
 “ assure him, if he was chosen, the other should be as
 “ it were Pope. They were to let the other cardinals
 “ know what his temper was, not austere, but free : he
 “ had great things to give, that would be void upon
 “ his promotion : he had no friends nor relations to
 “ raise, and he knew perfectly well the great princes of
 “ Christendom, and all their interests and secrets. He
 “ promises he will be at Rome within three months, if
 “ they choose him ; and the King seems resolved to go
 “ thither with him : he did not doubt, but, according to
 “ the many promises and exhortations of the Emperor
 “ to him, that his party will join with them.

“ The King also ordered them to promise large re-
 “ wards and promotions, and great sums of money to
 “ the cardinals ; and though they saw the Cardinal de
 “ Medici full of hope, yet they were not to give over
 “ their labour for him, if they saw any hope of success :
 “ but they were to manage that so secretly, that the
 “ other may have no suspicion of it.” This was dated
 at Hampton-Court the 4th of October.

To this a postscript was added in the Cardinal’s own
 hand to the Bishop of Bath : he tells him, “ what a
 “ great opinion the King had of his policy ; and he or-
 “ ders him to spare no reasonable offers, which perhaps
 “ might be more regarded than the qualities of the per-
 “ son. The King believed all the Imperialists would
 “ be with him, if there was faith in the Emperor : he
 “ believed the young men, who for most part were ne-
 “ cessitous, would give good ear to fair offers, which

"shall undoubtedly be performed. The King willeth BOOK
 "you neither to spare his authority, nor his good mo- I.
 "ney or substance; so he concludes, praying God to 1521.
 "send him good speed." But all this fine train of si-
 mony came too late; for it found a Pope already chosen.

His next letter upon that subject tells the King, Collect.
 "that, after great heat in the conclave, the French Numb. 9.
 "party was quite abandoned; and the cardinals were Dec. 17.
 "fully resolved to choose Cardinal de Medicis or him-
 "self: that this coming to the knowledge of the city
 "of Rome, they came to the conclave windows, and
 "cried out what danger it would be to choose a person
 "that was absent; so that the cardinals were in such
 "fear, that, though they were principally bent on him,
 "yet, to avoid this danger, they, by the inspiration of
 "the Holy Ghost, (so he writes,) did on the 19th of
 "November choose Cardinal de Medicis, who took the
 "name of Clement the Seventh: of which good and
 "fortunate news the King had great cause to thank
 "Almighty God; since as he was his faithful friend,
 "so by his means he had attained that dignity: and
 "that for his own part he took God to record, that he
 "was much gladder than if it had fallen on his own
 "person." In these letters there is no reflection on
 the Emperor, as having failed in his promise at the
 former election: nor is that election any way imputed
 to him, but laid on a casualty ordinary enough in con-
 claves; and more natural in that time, because Pope
 Hadrian's severe way had so disgusted the Romans,
 that no wonder if they broke out into disorders upon
 the apprehension of another foreigner being like to suc-
 ceed. If it is suspected, that though Wolsey knew this
 was a practice of the Emperor's, he might disguise it
 thus from the King, that so he might be less suspected
 in the revenge that he was meditating, the thing must
 be left as I find it; only though the Emperor after-

PART wards charged Wolsey as acting upon private revenge
 III. for missing the popedom, yet he never pretended that
 1521. he had moved himself in it, or had studied to obtain a
 promise from him ; which would have put that general
 charge of his aspiring, and of his revenging himself for
 the disappointment, more heavily on him.

The King
 of France
 taken pri-
 soner.

The King and the Cardinal continued in a good cor-
 respondence both with that Pope and the Emperor till
 the battle of Pavia, that Francis's misfortune changed
 the face of affairs, and obliged the King, according to
 his constant and true maxim, to support the weaker
 side, and to balance the Emperor's growing power, that
 by that accident was like to become quickly superior to
 all Christendom. It has been suggested, that the Em-
 peror wrote before to Wolsey in terms of respect scarce
 suitable to his dignity, but that he afterwards changed
 both his style and subscription : but I have seen many
 of his letters, to which the subscription is either your
good or your *best friend* ; and he still continued that
 way of writing. His letters are hardly legible, so that
 I could never read one complete period in any of them,
 otherwise I would have put them in my Collection.

Lord
 Burgh-
 leigh's cha-
 racter of
 Wolsey.

But having looked thus far into Wolsey's corre-
 spondence with the King, I shall now set him in an-
 other light from a very good author, the Lord Burgh-
 leigh, who, in that memorial prepared for Queen Eliza-
 beth against favourites, probably intended to give some
 stop to the favour she bore the Earl of Leicester, has set
 out the greatness of Wolsey's power, and the ill use he
 made of it. " He had a family equal to the court of a
 " great prince. There was in it one earl, and nine ba-
 " rons, and about a thousand knights, gentlemen, and
 " inferior officers. Besides the vast expence of such a
 " household, he gave great pensions to those in the
 " court and conclave of Rome ; by whose services he
 " hoped to be advanced to the papacy. He lent great

"sums to the Emperor, whose poverty was so well BOOK
 "known, that he could have no prospect of having I.
 "them repaid; (probably this is meant of Maximilian.) 1521.
 "Those constant expences put him on extraordinary
 "ways of providing a fund for their continuance. He
 "granted commissions under the Great Seal to oblige
 "every man upon oath to give in the true value of his
 "estate; and that those who had fifty pound, or up-
 "wards, should pay four shillings in the pound. This
 "was so heavy, that, though it had been imposed by
 "authority of parliament, it would have been thought
 "an oppression of the subject: but he adds, that to
 "have this done by the private authority of a subject,
 "was what wants a name.' When this was represented
 "to the King, he disowned it; and said, no necessities
 "of his should be ever so great, as to make him at-
 "tempt the raising money any other way but by the
 "people's consent in parliament. Thus his illegal pro-
 "ject was defeated; so he betook himself to another
 "not so odious, by the way of benevolence: and, to
 "carry that through, he sent for the Lord Mayor and
 "Aldermen of London, and said to them, that he had
 "prevailed with the King to recall his commissions for
 "that heavy tax, and to throw himself on their free
 "gifts. But in this he was likewise disappointed; for
 "the statute of Richard the Third was pleaded against
 "all benevolences: the people obstinately refused to
 "pay it; and though the demanding it was for some
 "time insisted on, yet the opposition made to it being
 "like to end in a civil war, it was let fall." All this I
 drew from that memorial. I found also a commission Cott. Libr.
 to the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Calham,
 and others, setting forth the great wars that the King
 had in France, in which the Duke of Bourbon, called
 one of the greatest princes in France, was now the
 King's servant: they are by it required to practise with

PART all in Kent, whose goods amounted to four pound, or
III. above, and whose names were given to a schedule, to

1591. anticipate the subsidy granted in parliament. This is all that has occurred to me with relation to Wolsey's ministry. I will in the next place set out what he attempted or did in ecclesiastical matters, with the proceedings in convocation during this period. When King Henry called his first parliament, by a writ tested October 17, 1509, to meet at Westminster the 21st of January following, he did not intend to demand a supply; so there appears no writ for a convocation: but the Archbishop of Canterbury summoned one, as it seems by his own authority; yet none sate then at York. The House of Lords was sometimes adjourned by the Lord Treasurer; because the Chancellor (Warham) and the other spiritual lords were absent, and engaged in convocation: but it does not appear what was done by them.

Wolsey's
 proceedings
 as Legate.

His insolence to
 Warham.

In the year 1511, on the 28th of November, a writ was sent to Warham to summon a convocation, which met the 6th of February: they had several sessions, and gave a subsidy of 24,000*l.* but did nothing besides with relation to matters of religion. There was some heat among them on the account of some grievances and excesses in the Archbishop's courts. A committee was appointed of six persons, the Bishops of Norwich and Rochester, the Prior of Canterbury, the Dean of St. Paul's, and an archdeacon, but without addition of his place: these were to examine the encroachments made by the Archbishop's courts, and the inhibitions sent to the inferior courts; but especially as to the probates of wills, and the granting administrations to intestate goods, when there was any to the value of five pound in several dioceses: an estimate first settled by Warham, for which he had officials and apparitors in every diocese, three or four in some, and five or six in

others, which was looked on by them as contrary to BOOK
 law. Cardinal Morton is said to be the first who set ^{I.}
 up this pretence of prerogative: against these the bi- 1521.
 shops alleged the Constitutions of Ottobonus and of
 Archbishop Stratford: it is also set forth, that when
 Warham was an advocate, he was employed by Hill,
 Bishop of London, in whose name he appeared against
 them, and appealed to Pope Alexander against these
 invasions made by the Archbishop on the rights of his
 see. And when Warham was promoted to the see of
 London, he maintained his claim against them, and op-
 posed them more than any other bishop of the province,
 and sent his Chancellor to Rome to find relief against
 them. But when he was advanced to be Archbishop,
 he not only maintained those practices, but carried
 them further than his predecessor had done. All this,
 with thirteen other articles of grievances, were drawn
 up at large in the state of the case between the Archbi-
 shop and the bishops; and proposals were made of an
 accommodation between them about the year 1514:
 but the event showed that this opposition came to no-
 thing. This must be acknowledged to be none of the
 best parts of Warham's character. In the year 1514.
 they were again summoned by writ: they met and
 gave subsidies, but they were not to be levied till the
 terms of paying the subsidies formerly granted were
 out. In the year 1518. Warham summoned a convo-
 cation to meet at Lambeth to reform some abuses; and
 in the summons he affirmed, that he had obtained the
 King's consent so to do. At this Wolsey was highly
 offended, and wrote him a very haughty letter: in it <sup>Reg. Heref.
Booth.
fol. 37.</sup>
 he said, "it belonged to him, as *Legate a latere*, to see
 "to the reformation of abuses: and he was well as-
 "sured, that the King would not have him to be so lit-
 "tle esteemed, that he should enterprize such reforma-
 "tion to the derogation of the dignity of the see apo-

PART III. “stolic, and otherwise than the law will suffer you, “without my advice and consent.” And he in plain

1521. words denies that he had any such command of the King, but that the King’s order was expressly to the contrary. So he orders him to come to him, to treat of some things concerning his person. This it seems Warham was required to send round to his suffragan bishops: so he recalled his monitions in expectation of a legatine council: the pestilence was then raging, so this was put off a year longer; and then Wolsey summoned it by a letter, which he transmitted to the bishops: that to the Bishop of Hereford is in his register. He desires him to come to a council at Westminster for the reforming the clergy, and *for consulting in the most convenient and soundest way, of what we shall think may tend to the increase of the faith.* He hoped this letter would be of as much weight with him as monitories in due form would be.

Wake’s
State of the
Church,
Append.
p. 208.

Reg. Heref.
Booth.
fol. 41.

A legatine
synod.

May 4,
1519.

1523. The next step he made was of a singular nature. When the King summoned the parliament in the 14th

year of his reign, Warham had a writ to summon a BOOK
 convocation of his province, which did meet five days I.
 after, on the 20th of April. The Cardinal summoned 1543.
 his convocation to meet at York almost a month be- He called
 fore, on the 22d of March; but they were immediately the convo-
 prorogued to meet at Westminster the 22d of April. cation of
 The convocation of Canterbury was opened at St. Paul's; Canterbury
 but a monition came from Wolsey to Warham, to ap- to sit with
 pear before him with his clergy at Westminster on the him.
 22d: and thus both convocations were brought to-
 gether. It seems he intended that the legatine synod, thus
 irregularly brought together, should give the King sup-
 plies: but the clergy of the province of Canterbury
 said, their powers were only directed to the Archbishop
 of Canterbury, and these would not warrant them to
 act in any other manner than in the provincial way:
 so the convocation of Canterbury returned back to St.
 Paul's, and sate there till August, and gave the supply
 apart; as did also that of York. But Wolsey, finding Reg. Heref.
 those of Canterbury could not act under him, by the fol. 84.
 powers that they had brought up with them, issued
 out, on the 2d of May, monitory letters to the bishops
 of that province to meet at Westminster the 8th of
 June, to deliberate *of the reformation of the clergy,*
both of seculars and regulars, and of other matters re-
lating to it. In this he mentions Warham's summon-
 ing a convocation, which he had brought before him;
 but upon some doubts arising, because the proctors of
 the clergy had no sufficient authority to meet in the
 legatine synod, he therefore summoned them to meet
 with him, and to bring sufficient powers to that effect
 by the 2d of June: but it does not appear that any as-
 sembly of the clergy followed pursuant to this; so it
 seems it was let fall. This is the true account of that Antiq. Brit.
 matter. I gave it indeed differently before, implicitly

PART following some writers that lived in that time; more particularly that account given of it by either Archbishop Parker or Josceline, a book of such credit, that the following it deserved no hard censure. The grant of the subsidy is indeed in the name of the province of Canterbury; but the other relation of that matter being too easily followed by me, it seemed to me that it was a point of form for each province to give their subsidy in an instrument apart, though it was agreed to, they being together in one body. It was indeed an omission not to have explained that; but now, upon better evidence, the whole matter is thus fully opened. I find no other proceedings of Wolsey's, as legate, on record, save that he took on him, by his legatine authority, to give institutions at pleasure into all benefices in the dioceses of all bishops, without so much as asking the bishop's consent. In the register of London, an institution given by him to South Wickington, on the 10th of December 1526, is entered with this addition; that the Cardinal had likewise given seven other institutions in that diocese, without asking the consent of the bishop: and on the margin it is added, that the giving and accepting such institutions by the Legate's authority, being papal provisions, involved the clergy into the *præmunire*, from which they were obliged to redeem themselves. Wolsey did also publish a bull, condemning all who married in the forbidden degrees; and he sent mandates to the bishops to publish it in their several dioceses: he also published Pope Leo's bull against Luther, and ordered it to be every where published: he also required all persons, under the pain of excommunication, to bring in all Luther's books that were in their hands: he enumerated forty-two of Luther's errors; and required a return of the mandate to be made to him, together with such books as should

III.

1523.

Reg. Ton-
stal, fol. 31.

Fisher's
Regist.
fol. 127.

Reg. Heref.
fol. 66.

be brought in upon it, by the 1st of August. The date of the mandate is not set down; and this is all that I find in this period relating to Wolsey.

BOOK
I.
1523.

This last shows the apprehensions they were under of the spreading of Luther's books and doctrine. All people were at this time so sensible of the corruptions that seemed by common consent to be as it were universally received, that every motion towards a reformation was readily hearkened to every where: corruption was the common subject of complaint; and in the commission given to those whom the King sent to represent himself, and this church, in the council of the Lateran, the *reformation of the head and members* is mentioned as that which was expected from that council.

This was so much at that time in all men's mouths, that one of the best men in that age, Colet, Dean of St. Paul's, being to open the convocation with a sermon, made that the subject of it all; and he set forth many of those particulars to which it ought to be applied. It was delivered, as all such sermons are, in Latin; and was soon after translated into English. I intended once to have published it among the papers that I did put in the Collection; but those, under whose direction I composed that work, thought, that, since it did not enter into points of doctrine, but only into matters of practice, it did not belong so properly to my design in writing: yet since it has been of late published twice by a person distinguished by his controversial writings on this subject, I will here give a translation of all that he thought fit to publish of it.

Colet's sermon before a convocation.

His text was, *Be ye not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed in the renewing of your mind.* "He told them, he came thither that he might admonish them to apply their thoughts wholly to the reformation of the church. He goes on thus: Most of those

Rights of an English convocation in both editions.

PART " who are dignitaries, carry themselves with a haughty

III. " air, and manner ; so that they seem not to be in the

1583. " humble spirit of Christ's ministers, but in an exalted
 " state of dominion : not observing what Christ, the
 " pattern of humility, said to his disciples, whom he
 " set over his church, *It shall not be so among you* ; by
 " which he taught them, that the government of the
 " church is a ministry ; and that primacy in a clergy-
 " man is nothing but an humble servitude.

" O covetousness ! from thee come those episcopal,
 " but chargeable visitations, the corruptions of courts,
 " and those new inventions daily set on foot, by which
 " the poor laity are devoured. Oh covetousness ! the
 " mother of all wickedness ; from thee springs the in-
 " solence and boldness of officials, and that eagerness
 " of all ordinaries in amplifying their jurisdiction : from
 " thee flows that mad and furious contention about
 " wills, and unseasonable sequestrations ; and the su-
 " perstitious observing of those laws that bring gain to
 " them, while those are neglected that relate to the
 " correction of manners.

" The church is disgraced by the secular employ-
 " ments in which many priests and bishops involve
 " themselves : they are the servants of men more than
 " of God ; and dare neither say, nor do any thing, but
 " as they think it will be acceptable and pleasant to
 " their princes : out of this spring both ignorance and
 " blindness ; for being blinded with the darkness of
 " this world, they only see earthly things.

" Therefore, O ye fathers, ye priests, and all ye cler-
 " gymen ! awaken at last out of the dreams of a lethar-
 " gic world ; and hearken to Paul, who calls upon you,
 " *Be ye not conformed to this world.* This reformation
 " and restoration of the ecclesiastical state must begin
 " at you, who are our fathers : and from you must
 " come down to us your priests. We look on you as

“ the standards that must govern us : we desire to read **BOOK**
 “ in you, and in your lives, as in living books, how we **I.**
 “ ought to live : therefore if you would see the notes **1523.**
 “ that are in our eyes, take the beams first out of your
 “ own.

“ There is nothing amiss among us, for which there
 “ are not good remedies set out by the ancient fathers :
 “ there is no need of making new laws and canons, but
 “ only to observe those already made. Therefore, at
 “ this your meeting, let the laws already made be re-
 “ cited. First, those that admonish you fathers, not to
 “ lay hands suddenly on any : let the laws be recited
 “ which appoint that ecclesiastical benefices should be
 “ given to deserving persons, and that condemn simo-
 “ niacal defilement. But above all things, let those
 “ laws be recited that relate to you our reverend fathers,
 “ the lords bishops, the laws of just and canonical elec-
 “ tions, after the invocation of the Holy Ghost.

“ Because this is not done in our days, and bishops
 “ are chosen rather by the favour of men than by the
 “ will of God ; we have sometimes bishops who are not
 “ spiritual, but worldly rather than heavenly ; and who
 “ are led by the spirit of the world, rather than by the
 “ spirit of Christ. Let the laws be recited for bishops
 “ residing in their dioceses. Last of all, let those laws
 “ be recited for frequent councils, which appoint pro-
 “ vincial councils to be more frequently called, for the
 “ reformation of the church ; for nothing has happened
 “ more mischievous to the church, than the not holding
 “ of councils, both general and provincial.

“ I do therefore, with all due reverence, address my-
 “ self to you, O fathers ! for the execution of laws must
 “ begin at you : if you observe the laws, and transform
 “ your lives to the rules set by the canons, then you
 “ shine so to us, that we may see what we ought to do,
 “ when we have the light of excellent examples set us

PART " by you : we seeing you observe the laws, will cheer-
 III. " fully follow your steps. Consider the miserable face
 1523. " and state of the church, and set about the reforming
 " it with all your strength. Do not you, O fathers,
 " suffer this famous meeting to end in vain, and in doing
 " nothing: you do indeed meet often; but (by your
 " favour suffer me to say what is true) what fruit has
 " the church yet had of all your meetings? Go then
 " with that Spirit which you have prayed for, that, being
 " assisted by his aid, you may contrive, establish, and
 " decree such things as may tend to the advantage of
 " the church, to your own honour, and to the glory of
 " God."

Colet's
 character.

This Colet had travelled through France and Italy; and, upon his return, he settled for some time at Oxford, where he read divinity lectures without any obligation, or reward for it. His readings brought about him all the learned and studious persons in the university. He read not according to the custom that prevailed universally at that time, of commenting on Thomas Aquinas, or on Scotus, but his readings were upon St. Paul's Epistles. He was brought afterwards to the deanery of St. Paul's, where old Fitz-James, then Bishop of London, was his enemy; but he was protected both by Warham and by the King himself. He did in one of his sermons reflect on bosom-sermons, which Fitz-James took as a reflection on himself, for he read all his sermons. He did not recommend himself at court by strains of flattery: on the contrary, he being to preach there when the King was entering on a war, preached on Christians fighting under the banner of Christ, whom they ought to make their pattern in all the occasions of quarrel that they might have, rather than imitate a Cæsar or an Alexander. After sermon, the King sent for him, and told him, he thought such preaching would dishearten his military men: but Colet explained him-

self so, that the King was well satisfied with him, and **BOOK**
 said, Let every man choose what doctor he pleased, Co- **I.**
 let should be his doctor. He died in the year 1519. **1523.**

It seems this sermon was preached in the year 1513, though it is printed as preached in the year 1511; for the mention that he made in it of the immunities of the clergy, and of those words, *Touch not mine anointed*, seems to relate to the opposition that the clergy made to the act that passed in parliament in the year 1512, against the immunity of the inferior orders of the clergy. It is true, in the translation I have given, there are no such words; but I find them in the reflections that I made on that sermon, when I intended to have printed it: so I took it for granted, that the sermon was not fully printed in the book, out of which I was forced to make my translation, the copy that I had of it being mislaid, or lost. It had been but a reasonable thing for that writer, either to have printed the whole sermon, or to have told the reader that only some passages were taken out of it, since the title given to it would make him think it was all printed. I could not find either the Latin sermon, or the English translation of it, that was printed near that time; and I cannot entirely depend on a late impression of the English translation: yet I will add some few passages out of it, which deserved to be published by him that picked out a few with some particular view that it seems he had. Before the first period printed by him, he has these words:

“How much greediness and appetite of honour and
 “dignity is seen now-a-days in clergymen! How run
 “they (yea almost out of breath) from one benefice to
 “another; from the less to the greater, from the lower
 “to the higher! Who seeth not this? And who seeing
 “sorroweth not?”

Before the next period, these words are to be found;

PART "What other things seek we now-a-days in the church

III. "but fat benefices, and high promotions? And it were

1523. "well if we minded the duty of those, when we have
 "them. But he that hath many great benefices, minds
 "not the office of any small one. And in these our
 "high promotions, what other things do we pass upon,
 "but only our tithes and rents? We care not how vast
 "our charge of souls be: how many or how great be-
 "nefices we take, so they be of large value."

In the next period, these remarkable words are omitted: "Our warfare is to pray devoutly; to read and
 "study Scriptures diligently; to preach the word of
 "God sincerely; to administer holy sacraments rightly;
 "and to offer sacrifices for the people."

A little before the next period, he has these words:
 "In this age we are sensible of the contradiction of lay
 "people. But they are not so much contrary to us, as
 "we are to ourselves. Their *contrarines* hurteth not us
 "so much, as the *contrarines* of our own evil life, which
 "is contrary both to God and to Christ."

After Colet had mentioned that of laying hands suddenly on none, he adds, "Here lies the original and
 "spring-head of all our mischiefs: that the gate of or-
 "dination is too broad; the entrance too wide and
 "open. Every man that offers himself is admitted
 "every where, without putting back. Hence it is that
 "we have such a multitude of priests that have little
 "learning, and less piety. In my judgment it is not
 "enough for a priest to construe a collect, to put forth
 "a question, to answer a sophism; but an honest, a
 "pure, and a holy life, is much more necessary: ap-
 "proved manners, competent learning in holy Scrip-
 "tures, some knowledge of the sacraments; but chiefly
 "above all things, the fear of God, and love of heavenly
 "life."

A little after this, "Let the canons be rehearsed that

“ command personal residence of curates (rectors) in **BOOK**
 “ their churches : for of this many evils grow, because **I.**
 “ all offices now-a-days are performed by vicars and **1523.**
 “ parish priests ; yea, and these foolish, and unmeet,
 “ oftentimes wicked.”

At some distance from this, but to the same purpose, he adds, “ You might first sow your spiritual things, and then ye shall reap plentifully their carnal things. For truly that man is very hard and unjust who will reap where he never did sow, and desires to gather where he never scattered.”

These passages seemed proper to be added to the former, as setting forth the abuses and disorders that were then in this church. I wish I could add, that they are now quite purged out, and appear no more among us. Colet was a particular friend of Erasmus, as appears by many very kind letters that passed between them.

To this account of the sense that Colet had of the ^{Sir Thomas} state of religion at that time, I will add an account of ^{More's} Sir Thomas More's thoughts of religion. ^{thoughts of} Those of the ^{religion in} church of Rome look on him as one of their glories, the ^{his Utopia.} champion of their cause, and their martyr. He in this period wrote his *Utopia* : the first edition that I could ever see of it was at Basil in the year 1518 ; for he wrote it in the year 1516 ; at which time it may be believed that he dressed up that ingenious fable according to his own notions. He wrote that book probably before he had heard of Luther ; the Wicklevites and the Lollards being the only heretics then known in England. In that short, but extraordinary book, he gave his mind full scope, and considered mankind and religion with the freedom that became a true philosopher. By many hints it is very easy to collect what his thoughts were of religion, of the constitutions of the church and of the clergy at that time : and therefore, though an observing reader will find these in his way,

PART yet, having read it with great attention, when I trans-
 III. lated it into English, I will lay together such passages
 1523. as give clear indications of the sense he then had of
 those matters.

The refer-
 ences are
 to the pages
 of my trans-
 lation.

Collect.
 Numb. 10.

Page the 21st, when he censures the inclosing of
 grounds, he ranks those *holy men* the abbots among
 those *who thought it not enough to live at their own ease,*
and to do no good to the public, but resolved to do it hurt
instead of good: which shows that he called them *holy*
men in derision. This is yet more fully set forth, page
 37, where he brings in Cardinal Morton's jester's ad-
 vice to send all the beggars to the Benedictines to be
 lay-brothers, and all the female beggars to be nuns,
 reckoning the friars as vagabonds that ought to be taken
 up and restrained: and the discourse that follows, for
 two or three pages, gives such a ridiculous view of the
 want of breeding, of the folly and ill nature of the
 friars, that they have taken care to strike it out of the
 later impressions. But as I did find it in the impres-
 sion which I translated, so I have copied it all from the
 first edition, and have put in the Collection that which
 the inquisitors have left out. From thence it is plain,
 what opinion he had of those who were the most emi-
 nent divines and the most famed preachers at that time.
 This is yet plainer, page 56, in which he taxes the
 preachers of that age for *corrupting the Christian doc-*
trine, and practising upon it: for they, observing that
the world did not suit their lives to the rules that Christ
has given, have fitted his doctrine as if it had been a
leaden rule to their lives, that some way or other they
might agree with one another. And he does not soften
 this severe censure, as if it had been only the fault of a
 few, but lets it go on them all, without any discrimina-
 tion or limitation.

Page 83, he taxes the great company of *idle priests,*
 and of those that are called *religious persons,* that were

in other nations; against which he tells us, in his last BOOK chapter, how carefully the Utopians had provided: but ^{I.} it appears there, what just esteem he paid to men of ^{1543.} that character, when they answered the dignity of their profession; for as he contracts the number of the priests in Utopia, page 186, so he exalts their dignity as high as so noble a function could deserve: yet he represents the Utopians *as allowing them to marry*, page 114. And, page 130, he exalts *a solid virtue much above all rigorous severities*, which were the most admired expressions of piety and devotion in that age. He gives a perfect scheme of religious men, so much beyond the monastic orders, that it shows he was no admirer of them.

Page 152, he commends the Europeans for “observing their leagues and treaties so religiously; and ascribes that to the good examples that popes set other princes, and to the severity with which they prosecuted such as were perfidious.” This looks like respect; but he means it all ironically: for he who had seen the reigns of Pope Alexander the Sixth, and Julius the Second, the two falsest and most perfidious persons of the age, could not say this but in the way of satire: so that he secretly accuses both popes and princes for violating their faith, to which they were induced by dispensations from Rome. Page 192, his *putting images out of the churches of the Utopians*, gives no obscure hint of his opinion in that matter. The opinion, page 175, that he proposes, doubtfully indeed, but yet favourably, of the first converts to Christianity in Utopia, who (there being no priests among those who instructed them) were inclined to choose priests that should officiate among them, since they could not have any that were regularly ordained; adding, that they seemed resolved to do it: this shows that in cases of necessity he had a largeness of thought, far from being engaged

PART III. blindfold into the humours or interests of the priests of that time; to whom this must have appeared one of the most dangerous of all heresies.

1523.

And whereas persecution and cruelty seem to be the indelible characters of popery; he, as he gives us the character of the religion of the Utopians, *that they offered not divine honours to any but to God alone*, page 173; so, page 177, he makes it one of the maxims of the Utopians, *that no man ought to be punished for his religion*: the utmost severity practised among them being banishment, and that not for disparaging their religion, but for inflaming the people to sedition; a law being made among them, *that every man might be of what religion he pleased*, page 191. And though there were many different forms of religion among them, yet they all agreed in the main point of "worshipping the Divine Essence; so that there was nothing in their temples, in which the several persuasions among them might not agree."

"The several sects performed the rites that were peculiar to them in their private houses; nor was there any thing in the public worship that contradicted the particular ways of the several sects:" by all which he carried, not only toleration, but even comprehension, further than the most moderate of our divines have ever pretended to do. It is true, he represents all this in a fable of his Utopians: but this was a scene dressed up by himself, in which he was fully at liberty to frame every thing at pleasure: so here we find in this a scheme of some of the most essential parts of the Reformation. "He proposes no subjection of their priests to any head; he makes them to be chosen by the people, and consecrated by the college of priests; and he gives them no other authority but that of excluding men that were desperately wicked from joining in their worship, which was short and simple: and

“ though every man was suffered to bring over others to
 “ his persuasion, yet he was obliged to do it by amicable BOOK
 “ and modest ways, and not to mix with these either I.
 “ reproaches or violence ; such as did otherwise were to 1523.
 “ be condemned to banishment or slavery.”

These were his first and coolest thoughts ; and probably, if he had died at that time, he would have been reckoned among those, who, though they lived in the communion of the church of Rome, yet saw what were the errors and corruptions of that body, and only wanted fit opportunities of declaring themselves more openly for a reformation. These things were not writ by him in the heat of youth ; he was then thirty-four years of age, and was at that time employed, together with Tonstall, in settling some matters of state with (the then Prince) Charles ; so that he was far advanced at that time, and knew the world well. It is not easy to account for the great change that we find afterwards he was wrought up to : he not only set himself to oppose the Reformation in many treatises, that, put together, make a great volume ; but, when he was raised up to the chief post in the ministry, he became a persecutor even to blood ; and defiled those hands, which were never polluted with bribes, by acting in his own person some of those cruelties, to which he was, no doubt, pushed on by the bloody clergy of that age and church.

He was not governed by interest ; nor did he aspire so to preferment, as to stick at nothing that might contribute to raise him ; nor was he subject to the vanities of popularity. The integrity of his whole life, and the severity of his morals, cover him from all these suspicions. If he had been formerly corrupted by a superstitious education, it had been no extraordinary thing to see so good a man grow to be misled by the force of prejudice. But how a man who had emancipated himself, and had got into a scheme of free thoughts, could

PART be so entirely changed, cannot be easily apprehended ;
 III. nor how he came to muffle up his understanding, and
 1523. deliver himself up as a property to the blind and enraged
 fury of the priests. It cannot indeed be accounted for,
 but by charging it on the intoxicating charms of that
 religion, that can darken the clearest understandings,
 and corrupt the best natures : and since they wrought
 this effect on Sir Thomas More, I cannot but conclude,
 that *if these things were done in the green tree, what
 shall be done in the dry ?*

Reg. Tons.
 fol. 1.

His friend Tonsall was made Bishop of London by
 the Pope's provision ; but it was upon the King's recom-
 mendation signified by Hannibal, then his ambassador
 at Rome. Tonsall was sent ambassador to Spain,
 when Francis was a prisoner there. That King grew,
 as may be easily believed, impatient to be so long de-
 tained in prison : and that began to have such effects
 on his health, that the Emperor, fearing it might end in
 his death, which would both lose the benefit he had
 from having him in his hands, and lay a heavy load on
 him through all Europe, was induced to hearken to a
 treaty, which he pretended he concluded chiefly in con-
 sideration of the King's mediation. The treaty was
 made at Madrid, much to the Emperor's advantage :
 but because he would not trust to the faith of the treaty,
 Francis was obliged to bring his two sons as hostages
 for the observance of it. So he had his liberty upon
 that exchange. Soon after, he came back to France, and
 then the Pope sent him an absolution in full form from
 the faith and obligation of the treaty. It seems his
 conscience reproached him for breaking so solemn an
 engagement, but that was healed by the dispensation
 from Rome : of which the original was sent over to the
 King ; perhaps only to be showed the King, who upon
 that kept it still in his secret treasure ; where Rymer
 found it. The reason insinuated in it is, the King's

R mer,

being bound by it to alienate some dominions that be- BOOK
longed to the crown of France. For he had not yet 1.
learned a secret, discovered, or at least practised since 1523.
that time, of princes declaring themselves free from the
obligations of their treaties, and departing from them at
their pleasure.

BOOK II.

Of Matters that happened during the Time comprehended in the Second Book of the History of the Reformation.

I WILL repeat nothing set forth in my former work, **BOOK II.** but suppose that my reader remembers how Charles the Fifth had sworn to marry the King's daughter, when she should be of age, under pain of excommunication, and the forfeiture of one hundred thousand pounds : yet when his match with Portugal was thought more for the interests of the crown, he sent over to the King, and desired a discharge of that promise. It has been said, and printed by one who lived in the time, and out of him by the Lord Herbert, that objections were made to this in Spain, on the account of the doubtfulness of her mother's marriage. From such authors I took this too easily ; but in a collection of original instructions I have seen that matter in a truer light. 1595. Hall. Among the manuscripts of the Bishop of Ely.

Lee, afterwards Archbishop of York, was sent ambassador to Spain, to solicit the setting Francis at liberty ; and, in reckoning up the King's merits on the Emperor, his instructions mention, " the King's late discharge of the Emperor's obligation to marry his dearest daughter, the Princess Mary ; whom, though his Grace could have found in his heart to have bestowed upon the Emperor, before any Prince living, yet for the more security of his succession, the furtherance of his other affairs, and to do unto him a

PART "gratuity, his Grace hath liberally, benevolently, and
III. "kindly condescended unto it." There are other let-
1527. ters of the 12th of August, but the year is not added, which set forth the Emperor's earnest desire to be with all possible diligence discharged of his obligation to marry the Princess. At first the King thought fit to delay the granting it till a general peace was fully concluded, since it had been agreed to by the treaty at Windsor; but soon after, a discharge in full form under the Great Seal was sent over by an express to Spain: but from some hints in other papers, it seems there were secret orders not to deliver it; and King Henry continued to claim the money due upon the forfeiture, as a debt still owing him. The peace was then treated, chiefly with a view to resist the Turk, and to repress heresy, that was then much spread both through Germany and Poland.

Another original letter was writ after Francis was at liberty, "setting forth that the nobles and courts in France would not confirm the treaty that Francis had signed to obtain his liberty; and therefore earnest persuasions were to be used to prevail with the Emperor to restore the hostages, and to come into reasonable terms, to maintain the peace, and to call his army out of Italy." By these it appears, that the league against the Emperor was then made, of which the King was declared the Protector; but the King had not then accepted of that title. He ordered his ambassadors to propose a million of crowns for redeeming the hostages, to be paid at different times; yet they were forbid to own to the Emperor, that if the offices, in which the King interposed, were not effectual, he would enter into the league.

Wolsey's
letter to
them.

There are in that collection some of Wolsey's letters; by one of the 17th of July he claims his pensions of 7500 ducats upon the bishopricks of Palencia and Tole-

do; besides 9000 crowns a year, in recompense for his BOOK parting with the bishoprick of Tournay, and the abbey ^{II.} of St. Martin's there; for which there was an arrear of ^{1527.} four years due. On the 29th of September he wrote over a severe charge to be laid before the Emperor for the sack of Rome, the indignities put on the person of the Pope, the spoiling the church of St. Peter, and other churches, and the ignominious treating the ornaments of them: all the blame was cast on the Cardinal Colonna, and Hugo de Moncada, they being persuaded that it was done without the Emperor's knowledge or order. He proposes the King to be mediator, as a thing agreed on by all sides: he uses in this that bold way of joining himself with the King, very often saying, *the King and I*: and on the 20th of October he presses with great earnestness the mediating a peace between France and the Emperor; in all which, nothing appears either partial or revengeful against the Emperor. The true interest of England seems to be pursued in that whole negotiation.

There was then in the Emperor's court a very full embassy from England: for in one or other of these letters mention is made of the Bishops of London, Worcester, and of Bath; of Dr. Lee and Sir Francis Bryan. But since the dismal fate of Rome and of Pope Clement is mentioned in these letters, I must now change the scene.

Pope Clement, as soon as he could after his imprisonment, wrote over to Wolsey an account of the miserable state he was in, which he sent over by Sir Gregory ^{Collect. Numb. 11. The sack of Rome.} Cassal, who saw it all, and so could give a full account of it. "The Pope's only comfort and hope was in "Wolsey's credit with the King, and in the King's own "piety towards the church and himself, now so sadly "oppressed, that he had no other hope but in the protection he expected from him." There were many

PART other letters written by the cardinals, setting forth the
III. miseries they were in, and that in the most doleful

1527. strains possible ; all their eyes being then towards the
 King, as the person on whose protection they chiefly
 depended. Upon this, Wolsey went over to France in
 a most splendid manner, with a prodigious and magni-
 ficent train, reckoned to consist of a thousand persons ;
 and he had the most unusual honours done him, that
 the court of France could invent, to flatter his vanity.
 He was to conclude a treaty with Francis for setting
 the Pope at liberty, and to determine the alternative of
 the marriage of the Princess Mary, either to the King
 of France, or to the Duke of Orleans, his second son,
 and to lay a scheme for a general peace. He came to
 Compiègne in the end of September, and from thence
 he wrote the first motion that was made about the di-
 vorce to the Pope ; for the first letter that I found re-
 lating to that matter begins with mentioning that which
 he wrote from Compiègne. Mr. Le Grand told me, he
 had seen that dispatch, but he has not printed it.

Sept. 16.

Le Grand,
 tom. iii.
 numb. 2.

The cardi-
 nals write
 to the Pope
 for a full
 deputation.

From that place Wolsey, with four cardinals, wrote
 to the Pope, “ setting forth the sense that they had of
 “ the calamity that he was in, and their zeal for his
 “ service, in which they hoped for good success : yet
 “ fearing lest the Emperor should take occasion from
 “ his imprisonment to seize on the territories of the
 “ church, and to force both him to confirm it, and the
 “ cardinals now imprisoned with him to ratify it, which
 “ they hoped neither he nor they would do ; yet, if
 “ human infirmity should so far prevail, they protested
 “ against all such alienations : they also declare, that if
 “ he should die, they would proceed to a new election,
 “ and have no regard to any election, to which the im-
 “ prisoned cardinals might be forced. In conclusion,
 “ they do earnestly pray, that the Pope would grant
 “ them a full deputation of his authority : in the use of

“ which they promise all zeal and fidelity ; and that BOOK
 “ they would invite all the other cardinals that were at II.
 “ liberty to come and concur with them.” This was 1527.
 signed by Wolsey, and by the cardinals of Bourbon,
 Salviati, Lorrain, and Cardinal Prat. Wolsey wrote to
 the King, expressing the concern he had for him, with Collect.
 relation to his great and secret affair ; it seems expect- Numb. 12.
 ing a general meeting of cardinals that was to be called
 together in France, which he reckoned would concur
 to the process that he intended to make : but appre-
 hending that the Queen might decline his jurisdiction,
 he would use all his endeavours to bring the King of
 France to agree to the Emperor’s demands as far as
 was reasonable ; hoping the Emperor would abate some-
 what, in consideration of the King’s mediation : but if
 that did not succeed, so that the Pope was still kept a
 prisoner, then the cardinals must be brought to meet at
 Avignon, and thither he intended to go, and to spare
 no trouble or charge in doing the King service. When
 he was at Avignon, he should be within a hundred
 miles of Perpignan ; and he would try to bring the
 Emperor and the French King’s mother thither, if the
 King approved of it, to treat for the Pope’s deliverance,
 and for a general peace. This is the substance of the
 minute of a letter writ in the Cardinal’s hand.

The King at this time intended to send Knight, Knight
 then Secretary of State, to Rome, in point of form to sent to
 condole with the Pope, and to prevent any application Rome.
 that the Queen might make by the Emperor’s means
 in his great matter : so he appointed the Cardinal to
 give him such commissions and instructions as should Numb. 13.
 seem requisite, with all diligence ; and he pressed the
 Cardinal’s return home, with great acknowledgments
 of the services he had done him. By this letter it ap-
 pears, that the Queen then understood somewhat of the
 King’s uneasiness in his marriage. The King of France

PART sent from Compiègne a great deputation, at the head of
III. which Montmorancy, then the Great Master, was put
 1527. to take the King's oath, confirming the treaties that
 Wolsey had made in his name; one in the commission
 25th Sept. was Bellay, then Bishop of Bayonne, afterwards of Pa-
 ris, and Cardinal.

When that was done, the King's matter, that had
 been hitherto more secretly managed, began to break
 out. Mr. Le Grand has published a letter that Pace
 wrote to the King, as he says, in the year 1526; but
 no date is added to the letter. The substance of it is,
 "that the letter and book, which was brought to the
 King the day before, was writ by him; but by the
 advice and help of Doctor Wakefield, who approved
 it, and was ready to defend every thing in it, either
 in a verbal disputation, or in writing. The King
 had told him, that some of his learned counsellors
 had written to him, that Deuteronomy abrogated Le-
 viticus: but that was certainly false; for the title of
 that book in Hebrew was the two first words of it:
 it is a compend and recapitulation of the Mosaical
 law; and that was all that was imported by the word
 Deuteronomy. He tells the King, that, after he left
 him, Wakefield prayed him to let him know, if the
 King desired to know the truth in that matter, whe-
 ther it stood for him or against him. To whom Pace
 answered, that the King desired nothing but what
 became a noble and a virtuous prince; so he would
 do him a most acceptable thing, if he would set the
 plain truth before him. After that, Wakefield said,
 he would not meddle in the matter, unless he were
 commanded by the King to do it; but that, when he
 received his commands, he would set forth such
 things both for and against him, that no other person
 in his kingdom could do the like." The letter is
 dated from Sion, but I have reason to believe it was

Pace wrote
 to the King
 of his di-
 vorce.
 Tom. iii.
 numb. 1.

written in the year 1527; for this Wakefield (who **BOOK** seems to have been the first person of this nation that **II.** was learned in the oriental tongues, not only in the **1527.** Hebrew, the Chaldaic, and the Syriac, but in the Arabic) wrote a book for the divorce. He was at first against it, before he knew that Prince Arthur's marriage with Queen Katherine was consummated: but when he understood what grounds there were to believe that was done, he changed his mind, and wrote a book on the subject. And in his own book, he with his own hand inserts the copy of his letter to King Henry, dated from Sion 1527; which it seems was written at the same time that Pace wrote his: for these are his words, (as the author of *Ath. Oxon.* relates, who says he saw it,) *He will defend his cause or question in all the universities of Christendom*: but adds, "that if the people should know that he, who began "to defend the Queen's cause, not knowing that she "was carnally known of Prince Arthur, his brother, "should now write against it, surely he should be "stoned of them to death; or else have such a slander "and obloquy raised upon him, that he would die a "thousand times rather than suffer it."

He was prevailed on to print his book in Latin, with **Kotser Co-** an Hebrew title; in which he undertook to prove, that **dicta.** the marrying the brother's wife, she being carnally known of him, was contrary to the decrees of holy church, utterly unlawful, and forbidden both by the law of nature and the law of God, the laws of the Gospel, and the customs of the catholic and orthodox church.

It appears from the letters writ in answer to those **1528.** that Knight carried to Rome, that the Pope granted all **A bull sent to Wolsey to judge the marriage.** that was desired. This was never well understood till Mr. Rymer, in his diligent search, found the first origi-

PART III. 1528. nal bull, with the seal in lead hanging to it: he has printed it in his 14th volume, p. 237. and therefore I shall only give a short abstract of it. It is directed to Cardinal Wolsey, and bears date the ides of April, or the 13th day, in the year 1528. "It empowers him, together with the Archbishop of Canterbury, or any other English bishop, to hear, examine, pronounce and declare concerning the validity of the marriage of King Henry and Queen Katherine, and of the efficacy and validity of all apostolical dispensations in that matter, and to declare the marriage just and lawful, or unjust and unlawful, and to give a plenary sentence upon the whole matter; with license to the parties to marry again, and to admit no appeal from them. For which end he creates Wolsey his Vicegerent, to do in the premises all that he himself could do, with power to declare the issue of the first as well as of any subsequent marriage legitimate: all concludes with a *non obstante* to all general councils and apostolical constitutions."

It was not made use of.

This rare discovery was to us all a great surprise, as soon as it was known: but it does not yet appear how it came about that no use was ever made of it. I am not lawyer enough to discover, whether it was that so full a deputation was thought null of itself, since by this the Pope determined nothing, but left all to Wolsey; or whether Wolsey, having no mind to carry the load of the judgment on himself, made the King apprehend that it would bring a disreputation on his cause, if none but his own subjects judged it; or whether it was that Wolsey would not act in conjunction with Warham, or any under the degree of a cardinal. I leave the reasons of their not making use of the bull, as a secret, as great as the bull itself was till it was found out by Rymer. Another bull was after that de-

sired and obtained, which bears date the 8th of June **BOOK**
 (6to idus) from Viterbo. This I take from the licence **II**
 granted under the Great Seal to the legates to execute **1598.**
 the commission of that date : but it seems they did not **Rymer.**
 think they had the Pope fast enough tied by this ; and
 therefore they obtained from him, on the 23d of July
 following, a solemn promise, called in their letters *pol-*
licitatio, by which he promised, in *the word of a Pope*,
 that he would never, neither at any person's desire, nor
 of his own motion, inhibit or revoke the commission he
 had granted to the legates to judge the matter of the
 King's marriage. This I did not publish in my for-
 mer work, because the Lord Herbert had published it :
 but since that history is like to be confined to our own
 nation, and this may probably go further, I put it in
 the Collection ; and the rather, because the Lord Her-
 bert, taking it from a copy, as I do, seems in some
 doubt concerning it : but probably he had not seen the
 letter that Wolsey wrote to Gardiner, in which he men-
 tions the pollicitation that he had in his hands, with
 several other letters that mention it very frequently.
 The copy that I publish was taken from a transcript **Collect.**
 attested by a notary, which is the reason of the odd- **Numb. 14.**
 ness of the subscription.

In the mean time Warham called such bishops as **The bi-**
 were in town to him, and proposed to them the King's **shops think**
 scruples ; which being weighed by them, a writing **the King's**
 was drawn up to this purpose : that, having heard the **scruples**
 grounds of the King's scruples relating to his marriage, **reasonable.**
 they all made this answer, that the causes which gave **Rymer.**
 the King the present agitation and disturbance of con-
 science were great and weighty ; and that it did seem
 necessary to them all for him to consult the judgment
 of their holy father the Pope in that matter. This was **1599.**
 signed by Warham, Tonstall, Fisher, and the Bishops **Life of**
 of Carlisle, Ely, St. Asaph, Lincoln, and Bath, on the **Wolsey.**

VOL. III.

F

PART 1st of July 1529. And I incline to think, that this was

III. the paper of which Cavendish, whom I followed too

1529. implicitly in my former work, gave a wrong account, as brought out when the legates were sitting on the King's cause. There is no reason to doubt of Fisher's signing this : and Cavendish, who wrote upon memory almost thirty years after, might be mistaken in the story ; for the false account that he gives of the battle of Pavia shows how little he is to be depended on. At this time the Pope in a letter to Wolsey offered to go in person to Spain, or to any place where an interview should be agreed on, to mediate a general peace. This

Cotton Lib.
Vitell.
B. 11.

Wolsey wrote over to the King's ambassadors at Rome on the 19th of December : and in the same letter he orders them to offer the guard to the Pope in the name of the two Kings ; and adds, that Turenne should command that part of it which was to have their pay sent from France, and Sir Gregory Cassal that which the King was to pay.

In prosecuting the history of the divorce, I must add a great deal out of some French authors. Bellay, the Sieur de Langey, has writ memoirs of that time with great judgment, and very sincerely. I find also many letters relating to those transactions both in the *Mélanges Historiques*, and in Le Grand's third tome. These I shall follow in the series in which things were transacted, which will be found to give no small confirmation, as well as large additions, to what I formerly published in my history. The first of these was much employed in embassies, and was well informed of the affairs of England, both his brothers being at different times employed to negotiate affairs in that court. John in particular, then Bishop of Bayonne, afterwards of Paris, and Cardinal Le Grand, as Lord Herbert had done before, has given the relation of the answer that the Emperor gave by word of mouth, and afterwards in

Page 88.

writing, to Clarencieux, when he came with a French BOOK
king at arms to denounce war in the name of the two II.
Kings to the Emperor. 1529.

Demand was made of great debts that the Emperor Jan. 27,
1528.
owed the King; among these, the sum forfeited for his The Empe-
ror's an-
swer to the
King by
Claren-
cieux.
not marrying the Princess Mary is one. To that the
Emperor answered, that, before he was married, he re-
quired the King to send her to him, which was not
done: and by letters that he intercepted, he saw that
the King was treating a marriage for her with the King
of Scotland long before the Emperor was married. It
was farther said to that herald, that a report went cur-
rent, that the King designed a divorce, and upon that
to marry another wife. "The Emperor said, he had
"in his hands ample dispensations for the marriage:
"nor could the King go on in that design without
"striking at the Pope's authority; which would give
"great scandal, and occasion much disturbance, and
"give the Emperor just cause of war. This would
"show what faith, what religion, what conscience, and
"what honour the King had before his eyes. He had
"offered his daughter to him in marriage, and was now
"going to get her declared a *bastard*: he ascribed all
"this to the ill offices done by the Cardinal of York,
"who was pushed on by his ambition and avarice, be-
"cause he would not order his army in Italy to force
"the electing him to the popedom; which, he said,
"both the King and the Cardinal desired of him in
"letters that they wrote to him on that occasion: and,
"because he had not in that satisfied his pride, he had
"boasted that he would so embroil the Emperor's af-
"fairs, though England should be ruined by it, that
"he should repent his using him so." This seems to
be much aggravated; for it may be easily supposed,
that the King and Wolsey might, in the letters that
they wrote to the Emperor at the last conclave, desire

PART him to order his troops to draw near Rome to keep all
III. quiet, till, if he was chosen, he might get thither. Yet
 1529. it is not probable that they could desire so barefaced a
 thing as the Emperor here fastened on them. He in
 that, perhaps, was no truer, than when he said he had
 in his hands ample dispensations for the King's mar-
 riage; though it appears these were forged: for the
 date of the breve being the same with the bull, both
 bearing date the 26th of December 1503, it was plainly
 false. For Rymer has printed one attestation from
 Rome, that the year in the breves begins on Christmas-
 day: so, if it had been a true piece, it must have had
 the date of 1504. He has likewise published an au-
 thentic attestation, signed by the Cardinal Chamber-
 lain, that, in the register of the breves, there was none
 to be found relating to the King's dispensation for his
 marriage, but one dated the 6th of July 1504, and an-
 other the 22d of February 1505.

Le Grand,
 p. 64.
 Jan. 2,
 1528.
 A proposi-
 tion to de-
 pose the
 Emperor.

The Bishop of Bayonne made a bold proposition to
 Wolsey: he thought it might be a proper method to
 engage the Pope to depose the Emperor for such enor-
 mous felony as he had committed against him, which
 would secure that see from all such attempts for the fu-
 ture. The Cardinal, after a little reflection on it, swore
 to him that he would pursue that thought; but, it
 seems, it was let fall.

Le Grand,
 p. 102.
 May 24.

When Gardiner and Fox were sent to Rome, they
 passed through France, with letters from Wolsey to
 Montmorancy for his assisting them. It seems the
 people were expressing their uneasiness upon these
 steps made in order to the divorce, of which the Bishop
 of Bayonne wrote to the court of France; which was
 upon his letters so talked of at Paris, that Wolsey re-
 primanded him for it; though in his own excuse he
 writes, that the Bishop of Bath had said it more openly
 than he had written it.

On the 8th of June, it seems, matters went not well **BOOK**
 at Rome ; for Wolsey complained to the Bishop of **II.**
 Bayonne of the Pope, for not doing them justice, who ^{1529.}
 had served him so well, both before his advancement, ^{Le Grand,}
 and ever since. They also apprehended, that Campe- ^{p. 129.}
 gio, then named to come over as legate, who was sub-
 ject to the gout, would by that pretence manage mat-
 ters so as to keep them long in suspense.

At that time the sweating-sickness raged so, that the ^{Le Grand,}
 court was in dread of it. It broke out in the Legate's ^{p. 148.}
 house ; some died of it : he upon that stole away pri- ^{June 30.}
 vately, without giving notice whither he went. The
 King made his last will, and received all the sacra-
 ments : he confessed himself every day, and received
 the sacrament every holy-day. The Queen did the
 same ; and so did Wolsey.

In another letter, without date, Bayonne gives an ^{Le Grand,}
 account of a free conference he had with Wolsey ; who ^{p. 164.}
 told him, " he had done many things against the opi-
 " nion of all England ; upon which many took occa-
 " sion to reproach him, as being wholly French : so he
 " must proceed warily. The French would feel their
 " loss, if his credit were lessened ; therefore it was ne-
 " cessary that the Bishop should make the King and
 " his Council here apprehend, that this alliance was
 " not to their prejudice. The King had of late (as
 " Bayonne had from good hands) said some terrible
 " words to the Cardinal, apprehending that he was
 " cold in his matter. Wolsey said to him, that if God
 " gave him the grace once to see the hatred of the two
 " nations extinguished, and a firm friendship settled
 " between the two Kings, and that he could get the
 " laws and customs of the nation a little changed, the
 " succession secured, and, upon the King's second mar-
 " riage, an heir male born, he would immediately re-
 " tire, and serve God all the rest of his life." Here

PART were many things to be done before his retirement:

III. yet the Bishop did believe he indeed intended, upon

1529. the first good occasion, to retire from all affairs; for he could not but see, that his credit must lessen upon the King's second marriage. He was also making haste to furnish his episcopal palaces, and to finish his colleges; and he seemed to him to prepare for a storm. Gardiner was at this time advancing the King's business all that was possible at Rome. I did, in my second volume, publish among the Records a letter of his that was written in April after his coming to Rome. The substance of it is, "He had acquainted the Pope with
" the secret message that the Princes of Germany had
" sent the King, to see if that would work on his fears;
" for he says, the Pope was a man of such a nature,
" that he is never resolved in any thing, but as he is
" compelled by some violent affection. He assures the
" King, the Pope will do nothing that may offend the
" Emperor: nor was it reasonable for him to do it, except he would remove his see to some other place;
" for while he was at Rome he was in the Emperor's
" power. By his words and manner, the Pope seemed
" to favour the King; but he was confident he would
" do nothing. He believed, if the cause were determined by the legates, they at Rome would be glad
" of it; and if the Emperor should begin a suit against
" that, they would serve him as they now did the
" King, and drive off the time by delays: so he put
" the King on getting Campegio to judge for him,
" which should be a short work; and he assures him,
" nothing was to be expected from Rome but delays.
" They had put the King's cause, if it should be
" brought to Rome, in the hands of two advocates;
" (the same that pleaded for the King afterwards in the
" excusatory plea.) The Pope would hear no disputation about his power of dispensing: but, so the Pope

Vol. ii.
Coll. Rec.
Numb. 26.

“ did not decide upon that ground, he would not care **BOOK**
 “ whether the King’s cause were decided upon it or **II.** •
 “ not ; and he believed the Pope was resolved to med- 1529.
 “ dle no more in the King’s matter, but to leave it with
 “ the legates. He desired his letter might not be showed
 “ to either of the legates. With that bearer he sent over
 “ the Pope’s promise, in which he had got some words
 “ to be put, that he thought favoured the King’s cause
 “ as much, and more, than if the decretal commission,
 “ that was in Campegio’s hands, should be showed ; so
 “ he thought the Pope ought to be no more moved in
 “ that matter.” The words he mentions are, *Cum nos*
justitiam ejus causæ perpendentes ; We considering the
justice of his cause. These are in the promise, or pol-
 licitation, which I do now publish ; and they prove
 this to be a true copy, since we have an authentic proof
 of the very words that seemed the greatest ground to
 doubt of its truth.

About a fortnight after this, Gardiner wrote another **Collect.**
 letter to the King, which will be found in the Collec- **Numb. 15.**
 tion. A motion was then made at Rome for recalling
 the powers sent to the legates ; but he did not think
 it was made in earnest, but only to stop the ambassa-
 dors in their other suits. The Pope told them, that
 the Emperor had advertised him that the Queen would
 do nothing in the matter but as the King should
 command her ; therefore he would look after the cause
 the more earnestly. This the Pope seemed to tell
 them, that they should not inquire who was the
 Queen’s proctor. The ambassadors were amazed to see,
 by Campegio’s letters that were showed them, that nei-
 ther he nor Campanus had made any promise in the
 Pope’s name to the King, but only in general terms ;
 considering that they had mentioned the *plenitude of*
the Pope’s power, which they trusted he would use in
 that cause. He writes, he did not succeed in that which

- PART he was ordered to move, which he did indeed apprehend could not be obtained: he lays the blame on the
 III. Pope, or some other, but it became not him to fasten that on any, (perhaps this pointed at Wolsey;) the rest relates to the bulls, probably demanded by the Cardinal for his colleges: this was dated the 4th of May. He had a letter writ to him a month before this by Anne Boleyn, in which she expresses a great sense of the service he was doing her: it seems by it, that at his first coming to Rome he had great hopes of success; but these were then much abated.

King Henry's letters to Anne Boleyn.

At this time King Henry was writing every day letters full of passion to that lady. Some way or other, they fell into the hands of those who carried them to Rome, where they lie in the library of the Vatican. I saw them there, and knew King Henry's hand too well, not to be convinced at first sight that they were writ by him. I did not think it fit for me to copy them out, but I prevailed with my worthy friend Dr. Fall to do it for me. They were very ill writ, the hand is scarce legible, and the French seems faulty: but, since our travellers are encouraged to look on them, I gave a copy of them to the printer, to be printed apart; for I could not think it proper to put them in the Collection. Objections lay in my way, even as to this: they were trifling letters; some insinuations are not very decent, and little wit occurred in them to season them in any sort; yet they carry the characters of an honourable love, directed all to marriage; and they evidently show that there was nothing amiss, as to the main point, in their commerce. So, since those at Rome make so ill an use of them, as to pretend that they are full of defilement, and in derision call them the true original of our Reformation, all these considerations prevailed on me to suffer them to be printed apart; for I did not think it fitting that such stuff

should be mixed with graver matters. So I ordered **BOOK** them to be printed exactly from the copy ; and to take **II.** no other care about them, but to give them as I had **1529.** them. But since I mention that lady, I must add some **Ex M. V. Gal. Petyt.** passages out of a relation made by a son of Sir Thomas Wyat's, of his father's concerns, marked on the back by a hand very like Lord Burleigh's. He shows how false that story must be, of his father's pretending to King Henry that he had corrupted her. He was then esquire of the body, and did continue still about his person in that post, except when he was employed in embassies abroad. This shows how incredible that fiction of Sanders was; since, if he had pretended to make any such discovery, he must have fallen either under the King's jealousy, or the Queen's power; or, to avoid both, he would have withdrawn himself: and probably he would have been afterwards set up a witness to disgrace her at her trial. That relation adds, that she was secretly tried in the Tower. Some of the lords declared, that her defence did fully clear her; none of the women that served her were brought to witness the least circumstance against her: and all the evidence upon which she was convicted was kept so secret, that it was never known. This I know is put here out of its place, but the thread of other things led me into it. I shall have occasion to mention this paper again in Queen Mary's reign.

The Bishop of Bayonne writes, that, even after Cam- **Le Grand,** pegio came into England, both King and Queen did **p. 169.** eat at one table, and lodged in one bed. The Queen **Oct. 16.** put on so good a countenance, that, to see them toge- **The King and Queen** ther, one could discern no breach between them. He **seemed to live well together.** tells in that letter, that the Earl of Angus, who was married to the Queen of Scotland, King Henry's sister, was come up, being banished out of Scotland, because the Queen had taken another husband, who was

PART a handsomer man than he was ; (*plus beau compagnon*
III. *que luy.*) In his next letter he writes, that Wolsey said
 1589. to him, that the General of the Cordeliers, that good
 Le Grand, prophet, then a cardinal, had capitulated with the Pope
 p. 175. in the Emperor's name, when the Pope was set at li-
 Oct. 21. berty. That Cordelier Cardinal was then to sail
 to Spain : he wished the French would set out some
 vessels to seize on him, and draw from him the parti-
 culars of that treaty ; for they knew that, in the arti-
 cles of that treaty, the reason that obstructed the King's
 matter would appear. Upon this, after some expostu-
 lation, that the King of France did not help them in it
 as he might, Wolsey added, that the first project of the
 divorce was set on foot by himself, to create a perpe-
 tual separation between England and the House of
 Burgundy : and he had told the King's mother at
 Compiègne, that, if she lived a year to an end, she
 would see as great a union with them, and as great a
 disunion from the other, as she could desire ; and bid
 her lay that up in her memory.

Le Grand,
 p. 188.
 The legates
 go to the
 King and
 Queen.

In his next he writes, that both the legates had been
 with the King and Queen. In Campegio's speech to
 the King, he set forth his merits upon the apostolic
 see with great pomp. Fox answered him decently in
 the King's name. The Queen answered them more
 roundly : she spoke with respect to Campegio, but

The Queen
 treats Wol-
 sey very se-
 verely.
 Vitellius,
 B. 12.

said, " she thanked the Cardinal of York for the trou-
 ble she was put to : she had always wondered at his
 " pride and vain-glory ; she abhorred his voluptuous
 " life and abominable lewdness, and little regarded his
 " power and tyranny : all this rose from his malice to
 " her nephew the Emperor, whom he hated worse than
 " a scorpion, because he would not satisfy his ambi-
 " tion, and make him Pope. She blamed him both for
 " the war in which the King was engaged, and for the
 " trouble he put her to by this new-found doubt." The

Cardinal blushed, and seemed confounded: he said, **BOOK II.**
 "he was not the beginner nor the mover of the doubt; **1539.**
 "and that it was sore against his will that the marriage was brought into question: but since the Pope
 "had deputed him as a judge to hear the cause, he
 "swore upon his profession he would hear it indifferently."

On the 1st of November the Bishop writes, that the Le Grand, cp. 192.
 Queen had chosen for her council the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of London, Bath, Rochester, Ely, and Exeter, with the Dean of the chapel: but of these, the Bishops of London and Rochester, and the Dean of the chapel, were the only persons that, in their opinion, were of the Queen's side. She expected an advocate, a proctor, and a counsellor from Flanders. It was not allowed her to bring any over from Spain, for there was then war between England and Spain; but the Netherlands had a neutrality granted them. "The Bishop reckoned that the marriage must be condemned; for, though the Pope and all the cardinals had approved it, they could not maintain it, if it was proved, as he was told it would be, that her former marriage was consummated; for in that case God himself had determined the matter."

On the 8th of November he writes, "that Wolsey Le Grand, p. 197.
 "had asked him, if he could say nothing to invalidate The Bishop of Bayonne's opinion of the Pope's dispensation.
 "the Pope's dispensation, and to prove the marriage
 "unlawful, so that the Pope could not dispense in that
 "case; since nothing could unite the two Kings so entirely, as the carrying on the divorce must do: he
 "heard he was a great divine, so he prayed him to
 "speak his mind freely. The Bishop excused himself; but being very earnestly pressed, he put his
 "thoughts in writing, referring for these to his last letter: he sent over a copy of it to Montmorancy, and
 "desired he would show it to the Bishop of Bourges,

PART III. "who would explain it to him. Wolsey desired that
 1539. "the King's mother would write earnestly to Campegio in favour of the King's cause. The Bishop makes great excuses for giving his opinion in the matter: "he did not sign it: and he gave it only as a private person, and not as an ambassador."

Le Grand,
 p. 309.
 Apprehensions of disorders on the Queen's account.

On the 27th of November the Bishop writes, that he had been with Campegio, and had talked of the Pope's dispensation. Campegio would not bear to have the Pope's power brought into debate: he thought his power had no limits, and so was unwilling to let that be touched; but he was willing to hear it proved that the dispensation was ill founded. He gives in that letter a relation of the King's sending for the Lord Mayor of London, to give the citizens an account of the scruples he had concerning his marriage: and he writes, that he had said the Bishop of Tarbe was the first person that made him entertain them; nor does the Bishop of Bayonne pretend to call the truth of that in question.

Le Grand,
 p. 330.

The same Bishop, in his letter of the 9th of December, writes, "that Anne Boleyn was then come to court, and was more waited on than the Queen had been for some years: by this they prepared all people for what was to follow. The people were uneasy, and seemed disposed to revolt. It was resolved to send all the strangers out of the kingdom; and it was reckoned there were above 15000 Flemings in London: so the driving all these away would not be easily brought about. Care was taken to search for arms, and to keep all quiet. Wolsey, in a great company, above an hundred persons of quality being present, reported, that the Emperor had said he would drive the King out of his kingdom by his own subjects: one only of all that company expressed an indignation at it. The advocates that the Queen ex-

“pected from Flanders were come, but had not yet **BOOK**
“their audience.” **II.**

In one of the 20th of December the Bishop writes, 1589.
“that the King had showed him what presumptions Le Grand,
“there were of the forgery of the breve that they pre- p. 243.
“tended was in Spain; and upon that he went through
“the whole matter so copiously with him, that he saw
“he understood it well, and indeed needed no advo-
“cate: he desired that some opinions of learned men
“in France might be got, and be signed by them, if it
“could be obtained.”

By the letter of the 25th of December, it appears Le Grand,
there was an argument of more weight laid before p. 259.
Campegio, for he was offered Duresme instead of Salis- Endeavour
bury. He said to them who offered it, that the Pope to gain
was about to give him a bishoprick of that value in Campegio.
Spain; but the Emperor would not consent to it. The
lawyers that came from the Netherlands had an audi-
ence of the King, in which they took great liberties:
for they said to him, they wondered to see him forsake
his ancient friends, and to unite himself to his mortal
enemies. They were answered very sharply. They
applied themselves to Campegio with respect, but neg-
lected Wolsey: and after that they had lodged such
advices as were sent by them with the Queen, they re-
turned home.

On the 25th of January the Bishop of Bayonne Le Grand,
writes, “that the court, apprehending the Pope was p. 293.
“changing his measures with relation to the King’s af- Wolsey’s
“fair, had sent Gardiner to Rome to let the Pope credit is
“know, that, if he did not order Campegio to proceed shaken.
“in the divorce, the King would withdraw himself
“from his obedience: he perceived Wolsey was in
“great fear; for he saw, that, if the thing was not done,
“the blame would be cast wholly on him, and there it
“would end. Sir Thomas Cheyney had some way of-

PART “fended him, and was for that dismissed the court:

III.

1549.

P. 299.

“but by Anne Boleyn’s means he was brought back;
“and she had upon that occasion sent Wolsey a severe
“message. The Bishop had, in a letter sent him from
“Paris, a list of the college of the cardinals, by which
“they reckoned fifteen of them were Imperialists;
“and Campegio is reckoned among these: eighteen
“were of the contrary party; three had not declared
“themselves, but might be gained to either side; and
“six were absent. This canvassing was occasioned by
“the Pope’s sickness; and it was writ as news from
“France, that an Englishman, passing through and go-
“ing to Spain, had reported with joy that there would
“be no divorce; that Campegio served the Pope well;
“that this was very acceptable to all the great men of
“England, and that the blame of all was laid on Wol-
“sey, whose credit with the King was sinking; that
“he was not at the feast of St. George, for which the
“King had chid him severely, he being the Chancel-
“lor of the order.”

P. 313.
The Dukes
of Norfolk
and Suffolk
his ene-
mies.

In a letter of the 22d of May he writes, “that Wol-
“sey was extreme uneasy. The Dukes of Norfolk
“and Suffolk, and others, made the King believe, that
“he did not advance his affair so much as he could:
“he wishes that the King of France and his mother
“would make the Duke of Suffolk desist, for he did
“not believe that he, or the other Duke, could be able
“to manage the King as Wolsey had done. They at
“court were alarmed at the last news from Rome, for
“the Pope seemed inclined to recall the commission:
“upon which Benet was sent thither, to use either
“promises or threatenings, as he should see cause.
“They pressed the Pope to declare the breve from
“Spain null; but he refused to do it. He adds, that
“in the breve lay one of the most important points of
“the whole matter:” (probably that was, that the con-

summation of the former marriage was expressly affirmed in it.) "Wolsey had pressed the Bishop very earnestly to move his master to concur zealously to promote the King's cause; upon which he pressed on Montmorancy, that the King of France should send one to the Pope to let him know that he believed the King's cause was just, and that both kingdoms would withdraw from his obedience, if justice was denied on this occasion. To this were to be added, all sorts of promises when it should be done; which Wolsey protested, such was his love to the King, he would value much more, than if they made him Pope. The point then to be insisted on was, to hinder the recalling the commission."

BOOK
II.
1539.

By letters of the 30th of June it appears, that Gar-P. 333.
diner was returned from Rome, with the proofs of the breves being a forgery. Campegio was then forced to delay the matter no longer. The Bishop of Bayonne had pressed Campegio to it by authority from the court of France. On the 13th of July Cassali wrote from Rome, that the Pope had recalled the King's cause, at the Emperor's suit.

But I come now to give an account of the proceedings of the two legates; in which I must correct the errors of all the writers of that time, whom I had too implicitly followed. I go upon sure grounds; for I have before me the original register of their proceedings, made up with such exactness, that, at the end, the register and clerk of the court do not only attest it with their hands and marks, but reckon up the number of the leaves, with the interlinings that are in every page; and every leaf is likewise signed by the clerk, all in parchment. This noble record was lent me by my reverend and learned brother Dr. More, Bishop of Ely, who has gathered together a most invaluable treasure, both of printed books and manuscripts,

PART beyond what one can think that the life and labour of
III. one man could have compassed; and which he is as ready
 1549. to communicate, as he has been careful to collect it.

The pro-
 ceedings of
 the legates.

The legates sate in a room called *the parliament cham-ber*, near the church of the Black Friars. Their first session was on the 31st of May. The Bishop of Lincoln presented to them the bull, by which the Pope empowered them to try and judge the cause concerning the King and Queen's marriage, whether it was good or not, and whether the issue by it was legitimate or not. The legates, after the reading of the bull, took it into their hands, and saw it was a true and untouched bull; so they took upon them to execute it: and they ordered the King and Queen to be cited to appear before them on the 18th of June; and appointed, that the Bishop of Lincoln should cite the King, and the Bishop of Bath and Wells the Queen.

On the 18th the form of the citation was brought before them, in which the bull was inserted at full length, and the two bishops certified, that they had served the citation both on the King and Queen on the 15th; and Sampson, Dean of the chapel, and Dr. Bell, appeared, with a proxy from the King in due form: but the Queen appeared personally, and read an instrument, by which she declined the legates, as not competent judges, and adhered to an appeal she had made to the Pope. Upon reading this she withdrew; and though she was required to return, she had no regard to it. Upon which they pronounced her contumacious; and on the 21st of June they ordered the Bishop of Bath and Wells to serve her with a monition and a peremptory citation, certifying, that if she did not appear, they would proceed in the cause. And on the 25th of June the Bishop certified upon oath, that he had served the citation, but that the Queen adhered to her protestation; so she was again judged contumacious:

and as she never came more into the court, so the King was never in it. And from this it is clear, that the speeches that the historians have made for them are all plain falsities.

BOOK
II.
1549.

The next step made was, that the legates exhibited twelve articles, setting forth the whole progress of the Queen's first and second marriage, and of the dispensations obtained from Rome, all grounded upon public fame; and the Queen was ordered to be cited again on the 28th of June. The Bishop certified upon oath, that he had served the Queen with the citation; but she not appearing, was again judged contumacious, and witnesses were sworn to prove the articles. The King's answer to the articles was laid before them; in which, by his answer to the 7th, it appeared, that he was married to the Queen by virtue of a papal dispensation.

On the 5th of July, the King's proctors brought the bull of Pope Julius, dispensing with the impediments in the marriage, as likewise the copy of the breve, of which the original was in Spain, but attested very solemnly from thence. The legates ordered more witnesses to be sworn on the 9th of July. In another session, additional articles were offered; in which it was set forth, that impediments lay against the marriage, as being prohibited both by the divine and the ecclesiastical laws: so that it could not be maintained by the dispensations, and that they were of no force, but were null and void. Then they set forth all the objections formerly made against the bull; by which it appeared, that the Pope was surprised by the false suggestions made to him, on which he had granted it; and in particular, that there was no war, nor appearance of war, between England and Spain at that time. They did also set forth the presumptions, on which they concluded that the breve was not a genuine, but a forged piece. On the 12th of July, commission was given to

VOL. III.

G

PART examine the witnesses. On the 14th, additional arti-
III. cles were brought in; and on the 16th of July, the
 1529. King's proctors were required to bring all instruments
 whatsoever relating to the articles before the legates;
 and another commission was given to examine some
 absent witnesses.

On the 19th of July publication was made of the depositions of the witnesses: by which it appears, that Warham in his examination said, he referred the matter of the lawfulness of the King's marriage to divines; but that he himself believed, that it was contrary both to the laws of God, and to the ecclesiastical laws; and that otherwise, there was no need of a dispensation from the Pope. He confesses, there were great murmurings against the marriage; for nothing of that sort had ever been heard of in this kingdom before; and that he himself murmured against it, and thought it detestable and unnatural; and that he had expostulated with the Bishop of Winchester for his advising it, but he acquiesced when the Pope's dispensation was obtained. The Bishop of Ely deposed, that he doubted concerning the consummation of the Queen's marriage with Prince Arthur; for the Queen had often, upon her conscience, denied it to him: yet many witnesses were brought to prove the consummation; some, because the Prince and the Queen constantly lodged in the same bed; and that Prince Arthur continued in a state of good health till the beginning of Lent: some inferred it from what they themselves had done when they were of his age. Some swore to words that he spake next morning after his marriage, not decent enough to be repeated. Other witnesses were brought to prove, that there was no war between England and Spain when the dispensation was granted; but that a free intercourse had been kept up between these nations for many years. It was likewise proved, that the matter set forth in the preamble of the

bull was false ; and that the breve was a forgery. On BOOK
II.
1529.
the 21st, the protestation the King had made, that he did not intend to marry the Queen, was read and proved. With that, the King's council closed their evidence, and demanded a final sentence : so the 23d of July was assigned for concluding the cause.

On that day, the King's proctor moved, that judgment should be given ; but Cardinal Campegio did affirm, on the faith of a true prelate, that the harvest vacation was then begun in Rome ; and that they were bound to follow the practice of the consistory : so he adjourned the court to the 28th of September.

At the end of every session, some of the men of quality then present are named ; and at this time, the Duke of Norfolk and the Bishop of Ely are only named ; which seems to contradict what is commonly reported of the Duke of Suffolk's being there, and of what passed between him and Cardinal Wolsey. This record is attested by Clayberg the register, and Watkins the clerk of the court. And four years after that, on the 1st of October, anno 1533, it is also attested by Dr. Wootton ; which he says he does, being required to attest it by Clayberg and Watkins. How this came to be desired, or done at that time, is that of which I can give no other account, but that this is affixed to the register. By this extract that I have made of this great record it appears, that Campegio carried on this cause with such a trifling slowness, that if the King had not thought he was sure of him, he could never have suffered such delays to be made ; by which the Cardinal had a colour from the vacation, then begun in the consistory in Rome, to put off the cause, on the day in which a present sentence was expected. It is very natural to think, that, as the King was much surprised, so he was offended out of measure, when he found he was treated with so much scorn and falsehood.

PART On the 23d of August a sad embroilment happened
III. upon the Duke of Suffolk's returning from France.

1529. Wolsey complained to the King that he had done him
P. 136. ill offices at that court. Suffolk denied it; the Cardinal
 said he knew it by the Bishop of Bayonne: upon which
 Suffolk came and challenged him: the Bishop denied he
 had said it. Suffolk confessed indeed he had said some
 things to his disadvantage; but the Bishop prayed him
 that the matter might be carried no further: yet he
 offered to deny, in Wolsey's presence, that which was
 charged on him. But he saw the Duke of Suffolk in-
 tended to oblige him to deny it in the King's presence.
 The Bishop, apprehending the ill effects this might have,
 resolved to keep out of the King's way for some time,
 and he hoped to avbid the being further questioned in
 the matter. He found both the King and Wolsey de-
 sired that he might make a journey to Paris, to get the
 opinions of the learned men in the King's cause: he
 would not undertake it till he knew whether the King
 of France approved of it or not: he desired an answer
 might be quickly sent him; adding, that if it was not
 agreed to by France, it would increase the jealousies the
 King had of that court. He saw they designed to hold
 a parliament in England, and they hoped by that to
 make the Pope feel the effects of his injustice.

P. 354. By the Bishop's letter of the 18th of September, it
 appears that Campegio, having got his revocation, "re-
 solved to go to court, that he might have his audience
 of leave; where it was thought best to dismiss him
 civilly: in the mean while, Wolsey, who seemed full
 of fear, pressed the Bishop to get the matter to be ex-
 amined by the divines; and though he disguised his
 fears, yet he could not quite cover them. Some had
 left him whom he had raised: probably this was Gar-
 diner; for he united himself to the Duke of Norfolk
 in all things. The Bishop of Bayonne desired leave

“ to go over, on the pretence of his father's old age and **BOOK**
 “ weakness, but really to know the sense of the French **II.**
 “ divines; and also desired, that his brother, William **1529.**
 “ de Bellay, might be sent to the court of England
 “ during his absence.”

On the 4th of October he writes, “ that he saw the **P. 364.**
 “ parliament was set to ruin Wolsey. Campegio was
 “ well treated by the King, and had good presents at
 “ parting; and the King desired that they would use
 “ him well, as he passed through France; and parti-
 “ cularly, that they would suffer him to resign an abbey
 “ he had there, in favour of his son. He was stopped
 “ at Dover; for it was suspected that he was carrying
 “ over Wolsey's treasure.”

On the 17th of October he describes the Cardinal's **P. 370.**
 fall: “ The Bishop thought it was the greatest example **The Cardi-**
 “ of fortune that could be seen: both heart and voice **nal's dis-**
 “ failed him; he wept, and prayed that the King of **grace.**
 “ France and his mother would pity him, if they found
 “ that he had been true in all that he had promised to
 “ them. His visage was quite altered; and the disgrace
 “ was so sudden and heavy, that even his enemies pitied
 “ him. The Bishop saw he would be hotly pursued, and
 “ that nothing but intercessions from France could save
 “ him: he did not pretend to continue either Legate or
 “ Chancellor; he seemed ready to quit all to his shirt,
 “ so he might recover the King's favour again. He was
 “ capable of no comfort. He proposed, that the French
 “ King and his mother should write to the King to this
 “ purpose: that they heard of his disgrace, and of the
 “ design to ruin him; that they prayed him not to pro-
 “ ceed too suddenly: he had been a good instrument
 “ between them; if there was just cause for it, his power
 “ might be lessened; but that they prayed the King
 “ would not carry things to extremity. The Bishop
 “ lays this before Montmorancy, without presuming to

PART III. "give advice in it; only he thought this could do no
 1599. "hurt. Whatsoever was done, must seem to be of their
 "own motion, and not as coming from a desire of the
 "Cardinal; for that would precipitate his ruin. It
 "seems, he had received great presents from the King's
 "mother, of which he hoped she would say nothing
 "that might hurt him. It was intended, as he thought,
 "on his ruin, to destroy the state of the church, and
 "seize on their lands, which had been openly talked at
 "some tables. If the King of France intended to inter-
 "pose in his favour, no time was to be lost. Anne
 "Boleyn, as it was believed, had got a promise of the
 "King, that he would not admit him to a private audi-
 "ence, lest that might beget some pity in him."

P. 377.
 All his
 goods seiz-
 ed on.

"On the 22d of October he wrote, "that all his goods
 "were seized on, and that his spirit was quite sunk. It
 "was not known who should have the Great Seal; it
 "was believed it would no more be put into a priest's
 "hands; but he saw Gardiner was like to have a great
 P. 379. "share in affairs. The Cardinal's goods that were seized
 "on were valued at 500,000 crowns. More, who had
 "been Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster, was made
 "Lord Chancellor. The see of York was to be left in
 "his hands; and some of his goods were to be sent
 "back to him. The Bishop did apprehend, that if the
 "new ministry did not agree, which he believed they
 "would not do long, he might be brought back to
 "court again."

I have given the relation of this great transaction more particularly than was perhaps necessary: but finding so clear a thread in those letters, I thought it not improper to follow them closely; the rather to show, that none of the papers that Mr. Le Grand has published do in the least contradict, but rather establish, all that I had written: and so punctual a relation being laid before me, by those who bore no good will to me

nor to my work, seemed an invitation to me to enlarge BOOK
further than perhaps was necessary. I will end there- 11.
fore all that relates to Cardinal Wolsey at once. 1529.

Upon his going to York, he behaved himself much Wolsey's
better than he had done in the former parts of his life. good con-
In a book that was printed in the year 1536, entitled *A* duct in his
Remedy for Sedition, writ by one that was no friend to diocese.
popery, this character is given of the last part of Wol-
sey's life: "None was better beloved than he, after he
" had been there a while. He gave bishops a good ex-
" ample, how they might win men's hearts. There was
" few holy-days but he would ride five or six miles
" from his house; now to this parish church, now to
" that; and there cause one of his doctors to make a
" sermon unto the people: he sate among them, and
" said mass before all the parish. He saw why churches
" were made, and began to restore them to their right
" and proper use. If our bishops had done so, we
" should have seen, that preaching the Gospel is not
" the cause of sedition; but rather lack of preaching it.
" He brought his dinner with him, and bade divers of
" the parish to it. He inquired if there was any debate,
" or grudge between any of them; if there were, after
" dinner he sent for the parties to the church, and
" made them all one."

I had, in my work, mentioned the concluding cha-
racter that I found Cavendish gave of him, that was left
out in the printed editions; which made me vouch the
manuscript from which I had it: but the last edition
agreeing with that copy, I need say no more to justify
my quotation, for it will be found in it.

It may seem strange, that when the Bishop of Bay-
onne first suggested to Wolsey, that, if the King's mar-
riage was against the law of God, the Pope's dispensa-
tion could be of no force; yet no inferences were made
from this. All our writers give Cranmer the honour of

PART having started that first; and they make that the foundation of his advancement. I can see no other way to

III.
1529. reconcile all this, but that it may be supposed Wolsey, as true to the interests of the papacy, was unwilling to let it be moved in public; and that he kept this between the Bishop of Bayonne and himself, without communicating it to the King. Now the cause was called away to Rome, and so a new process followed with a very slow progress: delays upon delays were granted, and yet all was precipitated in conclusion.

The King
consults
the universities.

Mart. de
Bellage's
Memoirs,
p. 282.

Proceed-
ings in
convoca-
tion.

In the mean while, the King sent his question to the faculties of law and divinity in the several universities of Europe: and understanding that Martin de Bellay, the elder brother of the Bishop of Bayonne, distinguished by the title of Sieur de Langey, had great credit in the universities, both in France, Italy, and Germany, he engaged him to procure their opinions upon the point of the unlawfulness of his marriage; who, in the view of this service, prevailed with the King to lend the King of France 150,000 crowns, being to be advanced as a part of the two millions that he was to pay for the redemption of his sons, which was to be repaid to King Henry in five years. Besides, he assigned over to him the forfeiture due by the Emperor, for not marrying his daughter; and he sent in a present to his godson Henry, afterwards King of France, a jewel, with some of that which was believed to be the true cross, that had been left in pawn with the King by Philip, Charles's father, for 50,000 crowns: so ready was the King to engage the King of France into his interest, at no small charge to himself.

I come next to open the transactions in the convocation that was summoned to meet on the 5th of November 1529, two days after the opening of the parliament. At their first meeting, a reformation of abuses was proposed; and with that an inquiry was made con-

cerning heretical books. A committee of bishops was appointed with relation to heretics. On the 19th of December secrecy was enjoined; and that was again a second time enjoined under the pain of excommunication: then the Prolocutor came up, and had secret conference with the Upper House. They remitted to the King the loan that they had made him; and they put an end to that work on Christmas-eve, a week after the parliament was risen.

The bishops were much offended at the translations of the New Testament by Tindall, Joyce, and others; and proceeded severely against those who read them: yet it was not easy to put a stop to the curiosity and zeal of the people. The King came to the Star-Chamber, and conferred with the bishops and other learned men on this subject: the bishops said, these translations were not true, and complained of the prologues set before them. So the King commanded, by a proclamation issued and printed in June 1530, that these translations should be called in, and promised that a new one should be made. On this occasion it is not unfit to mention what Doctor Fulk writes, that he heard Miles Coverdale say in a sermon he preached at Paul's Cross. After he had finished his translation, some censured it: upon which King Henry ordered divers bishops to peruse it. After they had it long in their hands, he asked their judgment of it: they said, there were many faults in it. But he asked upon that, if there were any heresies in it: they said, they found none. Then said the King, In God's name, let it go abroad among my people. The time is not marked when this was said, therefore I insert it here: for in the beginning of the following year the King ordered a Bible of the largest volume to be had in every church; but it does not appear to me by whom it was translated.

BOOK
II.
1529.

May 24.
Transla-
tion of the
Scriptures
condema-
ed.

PART On the 19th of September 1530. another proclamation was made against all who should purchase any
III. thing from the court of Rome, contrary to the King's
 1530. prerogative, or to hinder his intended purposes. The convocation was again brought together about the 7th of January: their greatest business was to purchase their pardon; for as the Cardinal had fallen under a *præmunire*, by the act of the 16th of Richard the Second, so they were generally involved more or less in the same guilt: the sum was soon agreed to, with the consent of the Lower House; 100,000*l.* was to be their ransom.

The steps
in carrying
the King's
being de-
clared Head
of the
Church.

On the 7th of February some of the King's counselors and judges came and conferred with them about some words that were proposed to be put in the preamble of the bill of subsidy, which were these; *The King, who is the protector, and the only supreme head of the church and clergy of England.* Upon this the Prolocutor and clergy were called up to confer about it: the Lord Chief Justice with others came into the convocation, and conferred with the Archbishop and his brethren. The next day the Prolocutor desired a further time, and the Archbishop assigned them one o'clock: then the Archbishop had some discourse with them concerning the King's pardon. Some of the judges came and communicated to them a copy of the exceptions in the act of grace: this was in the 23d session. In the 24th session there was yet further talk about the King's supremacy.

The judges came and asked them whether they were agreed upon the exceptions; and added, that the King would admit of no qualifications. When these were gone, the Prolocutor came up, and asked yet more time; the Archbishop appointed two o'clock the same day: a long debate followed. The next day the Archbishop had a secret conference with the bishops; and

Cromwell came and had some discourse with him. **BOOK II.**
 When he went away, the bishops resolved to send the **1530.**
 Bishops of Lincoln and Exeter to the King; it seems, to soften him: but they came back, and reported that the King would not speak with them. The judges told them, they had no orders to settle the King's pardon till they did agree to the supremacy. They were prorogued till the afternoon; and then there was so great a variety of opinions, that no agreement was like to follow. The Lord Rochford, Anne Boleyn's father, was sent by the King with some expedients. The Archbishop directed them to consider of these; and that when they were come to a resolution upon them, that they should send three or four of each House to treat with the King's council, and with the judges: but the King would admit of no treaty, and asked a clear answer. It was put off a day longer; and on the 11th of February the article was thus conceived in Latin: *Ecclesiæ et cleri Anglicani singularem protectorem et unicum et supremum dominum, et quantum per Christi legem licet, etiam supremum caput, ipsius Majestatem recognoscimus.* In English thus; *We recognize the King's Majesty to be our only sovereign lord, the singular protector of the church and clergy of England, and, as far as is to be allowed by the law of Christ, likewise our supreme head.*

The form being thus agreed on, the Archbishop offered it to the whole body: all were silent; upon which he said, Whosoever is silent seems to consent: to this one answered, Then we are all silent. The meeting was put off till the afternoon; and then, after a long conference, all of the Upper House agreed to it, none excepted. Fisher is expressly named as present. And in the evening the Prolocutor came and signified to the Archbishop, that the Lower House had also consented to it: and thus the bill of subsidy was prepared and

The limitation added to it:

PART offered to the King on the 1st of April. Thus this mat-
III. ter was carried, by adding this limitation, which all
 1530. parties understood according to their different notions.

Though these words of limitation had not been added, the nature of things required that they should have been supposed; since among Christians all authority must be understood to be limited by the laws that Christ has given: but those who adhered to their former notions understood this *headship* to be only a temporal authority in temporal matters; and they thought, that by the laws of Christ the secular authority ought not to meddle in ecclesiastical matters: whereas others of the new learning, as it was then called, thought that the magistrate had a full authority even in ecclesiastical matters; but that the administration of this was so limited to the laws of the Gospel, that it did not warrant him to command any thing but what was conform to these. So that these words were equivocal, and differently understood by those who subscribed, and afterwards swore them.

And ac-
 cepted by
 the King.

It seems the King thought it was of great advantage to him to have this matter settled with any limitation; for that in time would be dropt and forgotten; as indeed it was. This no doubt was intended to terrify the court of Rome; since it was published over all Europe, that it went unanimously in the convocation of this province.

Tonstall was now translated to Duresme; and, being a man of great probity, he could not at first approve of a thing in which he saw a fraudulent management and an ill design; so he protested against it. He acknowledged the King's headship in temporal matters, but did not allow it in spirituals: but the King, who had a particular friendship for him, wrote him a letter, which from the printed title to it I too hastily thought was directed to the convocation at York; but it was writ

only to Tonstall ; and it seems it so far satisfied him, **BOOK**
 that he took the oath afterwards without any limita- **II.**
 tion. **1530.**

I shall now go through the rest of the abstract of The pro-
 ceedings of
 the clergy
 against he-
 retics.
 that convocation, by which it will appear, what was the
 spirit that prevailed among them. In the 49th session,
 after all had agreed to the preamble of the bill of sub-
 sidy, the Bishop of London laid before them a libel
 against the clergy. In the next session, Crome, Latimer,
 and Bilney were examined upon some articles: it does
 not appear whether the libel was laid to their charge or
 not ; only their examination following the other mo-
 tion so soon, gives ground to apprehend that it might
 be the matter under examination. In the 55th session
 the King's pardon was read to them ; and it seems ex-
 ceptions being taken to some things in it in the 58th
 session, the emendations that the King's council had
 made were read to them, in which it seems they acqui-
 esced, for we hear no more of it.

After that there was a long conference with relation Complaints
 of Tracy's
 Testament.
 to Crome's errors : but the matter was referred to the
 Prolocutor and the clergy. The Prolocutor had in the
 45th session complained of Tracy's Testament ; but no
 answer being made, he renewed his complaint in the
 62d session, and desired that it might be condemned,
 and that Crome should be proceeded against ; as also
 that Bilney and Latimer might be cited : but, for some
 reasons not expressed, the Archbishop thought fit to
 delay it. In the 64th session the Prolocutor repeated
 his motion for condemning Tracy's Testament ; so in
 the 66th session, on the 23d of March, the Archbishop
 gave judgment against it. Tracy's son was examined
 about it: he said, it was all written in his father's own
 hand ; and that he had never given a copy of it to any
 person, except to one only. In the 69th session, the
 Archbishop examined Lambert (alias Nicolson, who

PART was afterwards burnt) before two notaries ; and in the
III. 70th session the sentence condemning Tracy's Testa-
1530. ment was publicly read : and after two other sessions, the convocation was prorogued to October.

It appears from all this, that the convocation was made up of men violently set against our Reformation. But I turn now to another scene. The King, seeing no hope left of succeeding in his suit at the court of Rome, resolved to try the faculties of divinity in the several
P. 383. universities. His chief reliance was upon France, and on those three brothers formerly mentioned. He began to suspect there was some secret negotiation between the court of Rome and the King of France ; yet, though he opened this to the Bishop of Bayonne, he did on all other occasions express an entire confidence in that King : and the new ministry seemed zealous in the interests of France, and studied to remove all the jealousies that they apprehended Wolsey might have given of them.

The King's
 proceedings
 at Rome.

At this time the Bishop of Tarbe, then Cardinal Grandimont, was with the Pope, and had a particular charge sent to him to assist the English ambassadors. He wrote to the French King on the 27th of March,
P. 399. " that he had served Boleyn, then Lord Rochfort, all " he could ; that he had pressed the Pope to show the " regard he had to the King of France, as well as to " the King of England : he writes, that the Pope had " three several times said to him in secret, that he " wished that the marriage had been already made in " England, either by the legate's dispensation, or other- " wise, provided it was not done by him, nor in dimi- " nution of his authority, under the pretence of the " laws of God. He also wrote, that the Emperor had " pressed the Pope to create some new cardinals upon " his recommendation : but that the Pope complained, " that, when he was a prisoner, he had made some car-

“dinals who were a disgrace to the college. The Emperor said, he was sorry for it; but it was not by his order. The Pope said, he knew the contrary; for he saw the instructions sent to the Cardinal Cordelier, signed by the Emperor, in which they were named: so the Pope refused to give the two caps that he desired.”

There was then an Italian, Joachim Sieur de Veaux, at the court of England, who was an agent of France: he, in a letter to the King of France, March the 15th, writes, that the King thought, that by his means he might have the opinion of the faculty at Paris in his cause. On the 4th of April he writes, that the King expected no good from the Pope, and seemed resolved to settle his matter at home, with the advice of his council and parliament. He looked on the Pope as simoniacal, and as an ignorant man, and not fit to be the universal Pastor; and resolved not to suffer the court of Rome to have any advantage from the benefices in his kingdom, but to govern it by a provincial authority, and by a patriarch; and he hoped other kingdoms would do the same.

After some interval, the Bishop of Bayonne's letters are again continued. In one of the 29th of December he writes, “that the King was marvellously well pleased with the account his ambassadors wrote to him of what the divines of Paris had done; though he understands there is one Beda, a dangerous person, among them. That declaration which their divines had made was such, that all other things were forgiven in consideration of it.”

The next letter is from his brother William; who writes, “that the good answer that came from the doctors and universities of Italy made the King wonder that those of Paris were so backward. It was suspected in England, that the King of France or his counsellors had not recommended the matter effec-

BOOK II.

1530.

P. 411.
Applications made to divines and lawyers.
P. 418.

An opinion given by some in Paris, p. 421.

PART III. "tually to them. He had a letter from one Gervais, a
 1530. "doctor there, who had much advanced the King's affairs,
 "for which Montmorancy had made him great acknow-
 "ledgments. He showed this letter to King Henry;
 "who upon that carried him to his closet where his
 "books lay, and there he entertained him four hours:
 "he told him, he was in such perplexity, that it was
 "not possible for him to live longer in it."

Bishop of
 Bayonne
 sent to Pa-
 ris.

This De Bellay was to go to Paris to talk with the doctors; therefore he prayed Montmorancy, that he might find a letter from the King, empowering him so to do, that so he might not seem to act without his orders: and he promised to manage the matter with discretion.

P. 427.

In a letter that the Bishop of Bayonne wrote from Lusignon on the 13th of April, where he was then with the French King, he writes, that the matter of the divorce was entirely dispatched at Paris, as it had been before that done at Orleans, by his brother's means. But he adds, some represented to the King, that he had showed too much diligence in procuring it, as if he was serving two masters. Joachim had before that, on the 15th of February, written to the King, that King Henry thanked him for his commands to the doctors in Paris in his matter, which he laid to heart more than all other things; and desired they would give their opinions in writing, that they might be laid before the Pope.

Cardinal
 Cajetan's
 opinion
 against the
 King.

adus adae
 Quest.
 159.
 Art. 9.

It does not appear that the Pope took any other pains to be well informed in the matter, but by consulting Cardinal Cajetan, who was then justly esteemed the learnedest man of the college. He, when he wrote commentaries upon Thomas's Sum, though that father of the schoolmen thought, that the laws in Leviticus, concerning the degrees of marriage that are prohibited, were moral, and of eternal obligation; Cajetan, in

his Commentary, declares himself to be of another mind, but takes a very odd method to prove it: for, instead of any argument to evince it, he goes only on this ground, that they cannot be moral, since the popes dispensed with them; whereas they cannot dispense with a moral law. And for that he gives an instance of the marriage of the King of Portugal; to which he adds, the present Queen of England had likewise consummated her marriage with the late brother of the King of England, her husband. By which, as it appears that they took it then for granted at Rome, that her first marriage with Prince Arthur was consummated, so he departed only from Aquinas's opinion, because the Pope's practice of dispensing in such cases could not be justified, unless he had forsaken his master in that particular. And here he offers neither reason nor authority to maintain his opinion, but only the practice of the court of Rome; which is in plain words to say, that what opinion soever is contrary to the practice of the popes must for that reason be laid aside: for he offers no other argument, but three modern instances, of which this of the Queen of England is one, of popes dispensing with those laws. But now, being required by the Pope to consider the present case more particularly, he, on the 13th of March this year, gave his opinion in writing to him. Raynaldus has inserted it in his *Annals*. In it, after he had compared the laws in *Leviticus* and *Deuteronomy* together, he concludes, "that the marrying a brother's wife was simply unlawful; but that in some circumstances it might have been good, if a much greater good should follow on such a marriage than that provided for in *Deuteronomy*, of continuing the name of a brother dead without children. Now he argues, that the reason of a provision made in a private case would be much stronger in a case of a public nature: so that a marriage being

BOOK
II.
1530.

Ad an.
1530.
Num. 194.

VOL. III.

H

PART III. "made to keep peace between two nations, must be held lawful, since a dispensation was obtained for it.

1530. "This was not only good in itself, but it was warranted by the apostolical authority. He confesses that the Pope cannot in the least alter or derogate from the laws of God or of nature: but in doubtful cases he may determine with relation to the laws of God and of nature. He insists chiefly upon England's being delivered from a war by the marriage. He acknowledges that both councils, popes, and holy doctors, have condemned such marriages, as contrary to the laws of God and of nature; but they do not condemn them when other circumstances accompany them, when it is for the good of both parties, and for a common good; and therefore he justifies Pope Julius's dispensation:" who, as the same Raynaldus

Ad an.
1503.
Num. 22.

Cotton Lib.
Vitell. B.
14.

tells us, did it with the view of the advantages that Spain and England would have; but chiefly, because it was hoped, that, by this conjunction of force, they would be able to depress the French.

This opinion of so great a man was sent over to King Henry, signed by himself, bearing date the 27th of January 1534; but this date is perhaps only the date of his signing that copy. It had not the effect they expected from it; especially because it was defective in that way of writing that was then the most cried up against heretics. For he brought no authority from any ancients writer to confirm his opinion: so that he argued, from his private way of commenting on Scripture, against the streams of tradition, which was called the heretics' way of writing.

The Pope's
first breve
against the
divorce.

The Pope made a new step on the 7th of March; for he sent a breve to the King, setting forth a complaint made by Queen Katherine, "that King Henry intended to proceed to a second marriage; he therefore prohibited that, under the pain of the severest

“ censures, threatening to put the whole kingdom under **BOOK**
 “ an interdict; and charged the King, in the solemnest **II.**
 “ manner, to live with the Queen as formerly.” This **1530.**
 was granted at Bologne, upon the Emperor’s pressing
 instances. This had been attempted before, but was
 afterwards disowned by the Pope: for when the avo-
 cation was sent over to England, there was sent with it
 an inhibition, to proceed further in the matter; threat-**Rymer,**
 ening censures and punishments in case of disobedience. **vol. xiv.**
 But complaint being made of this, the Pope did by a
 bull, dated the 5th of October 1529, declare, that the
 censures threatened in the inhibition were added against
 his mind: so he annuls them, and suspends the cause
 to the 25th of December.

In a letter that the Cardinal Grandmont wrote to **P. 454.**
 Montmorancy, he tells him, that the Emperor said he
 would have the matter of the marriage carried through:
 if it was judged unlawful, he would not support his
 aunt; but if otherwise, he would support her. And when
 Boleyn once offered to answer him, he stopped him,
 and said he was a party, and ought not to speak in the
 matter. The Cardinal told Boleyn, he had orders from
 the King of France to solicit that matter as if it was his
 own: but Boleyn thought it was best to look on for
 some time, to see how matters went; for if the Pope
 and the Emperor should fall into new quarrels, then
 they might hope to be better heard.

On the 12th of June, Bellay wrote to the King a **P. 458.**
 long account of his proceedings with the doctors of the **The pro-**
 Sorbonne; by which, it seems, what is formerly men- **ceedings of**
 tioned of their giving opinion in the King’s favour was **the Sor-**
 only as private doctors, and not in a body as a faculty. **bonne.**
 “ The young princes of France were yet detained in
 “ Spain; so it was necessary to proceed with such cau-
 “ tion as not to irritate the Emperor. He had delayed
 “ moving in it for some days, but the English ambassa-

PART "dors were impatient. He complains, that there were
 III. "few honest men in the faculty; but, apprehending the
 1530. "inconvenience of delaying the matter any longer, he
 "presented the King's letters to them. The assembly
 "was great; the Bishop of Senlis, several abbots and
 "deans, the guardians of the four mendicant orders,
 "and many others, were present: so that of a great
 "while there had not been so numerous an assembly.
 "The proposition was made on King Henry's part with
 "great advantage: an express law in the Scripture was
 "quoted; the four great doctors of the church, eight
 "councils, and as many faculties or universities, were
 "of his side: so, in respect to them, the King desired
 "they would determine the matter in the doctrinal
 "way. The Emperor, on the other hand, who was
 "likewise the King's ally, opposed the divorce, the
 "Queen of England being his aunt; for he thought
 "himself bound to interpose on her account. So the
 "King, being pressed by two allies, who both were re-
 "solved to be governed by the laws of God, and of
 "right reason, laid the whole matter before them, who
 "were now assembled in an extraordinary manner, and
 "enjoined them to recommend themselves to God, and,
 "after a mass of the Holy Ghost, to consider that
 "which was to be laid out to them, without fear or fa-
 "vour; and, after full consideration, to determine it as
 "God should inspire their consciences. This was the
 "substance of Bellay's speech. Beda spoke next: he
 "said, they all knew how much the King studied to
 "please the King of England. Many strangers that
 "were of the faculty seemed to applaud this. Bellay
 "replied, there was certainly a great friendship between
 "the two Kings: the Emperor was likewise the King's
 "ally. But they ought to have God only before their
 "eyes, and to search for the truth. And having said
 "that, he withdrew.

" Those who spoke first thought the King's desire **BOOK**
 " was reasonable, and that therefore they ought to ex- **II.**
 " amine the matter: this could not be refused, if asked . 1530.
 " on the behalf of the meanest person. Others said, the Great heat
 " faculty was subject to the Pope, from whom they had in their
 " their privileges: and since this question related debates.
 " his power, they ought not to speak to it till they sent
 " to know his mind; or, at least, till they sent to know
 " how the King approved of it, and if he would ask the
 " Pope's leave to suffer them to debate about it. An-
 " other party moved, that, while their letters were dis-
 " patched to that purpose, they should proceed to ex-
 " amine the question, but suspend the coming to a final
 " resolution till an answer was brought them. They
 " said, they thought that they had their privileges from
 " the King, as well as from the Pope; and that it was
 " a reflection on the Pope, to imagine he would be of-
 " fended, if they should examine a case in which the
 " conscience of a Christian was disquieted; and that
 " even an order from the Pope to the contrary ought
 " not to restrain them from examining the matter.
 " Upon these different opinions, the Beadle began to
 " gather their votes; whether they ought to proceed to
 " examine the question, or not. But one of the doctors
 " rose from his place, and plucked the scroll out of the
 " Beadle's hands, and tore it in pieces: and so they all
 " rose up in a tumult, crying out, that nothing ought
 " to be done, without writing first to the King and to
 " the Pope. Thus the meeting broke up in confusion.
 " The English ambassadors were near enough to see
 " and hear all this. They said they knew this was laid
 " by Beda and his party: Bellay did not then think
 " so, and prevailed with them not to write to England
 " till he tried what might be done. He went to Lizet,
 " the first President of the court of parliament, to
 " whom the King in especial manner had recom-

PART III. 1530. " mended the managing of that affair. Lizet sent for Beda, and other his complices, and prevailed with them to meet again the next day, and to proceed according to the third opinion; which was, to discuss the question provisionally, and to seal up their conclusion, and send it to the King: so next morning they met, and appointed to begin the Monday following to examine the question.

The jealousy of the court of France;

" This did not satisfy the English ambassadors; they thought this was only an artifice to gain time: and indeed they had just ground of suspicion from what several of the doctors did openly talk. Bellay therefore desired the King would write to the Dean, that he would cut off impertinent digressions, and bring the matter to as speedy a conclusion as was possible: for some said they would make it last a year. Beda did give it out, that he knew that what he did was for the King's service: of this he made no secret. Bellay complaining of this to Lizet, he sent for Beda, and spake so earnestly to him, that he swore very positively he would be so far from hindering the doctors from obeying the King's commands, that he would employ himself, as if it were for the saving of his life, to get the matter to pass without noise or scandal: but Bellay saw that the President trusted him, so he did acquiesce, though he knew, that, by the noise he had already made, he had broke a promise which he had made to Montmorancy. The Bishop of Senlis was very sensible of the disorder of that body: it appearing that the English ambassadors did suspect the court of France was dealing doubly in the matter; the Bishop of Senlis was resolved to go to the King, and to let him see how matters were managed in that faculty, and to shew him the necessity of reforming them."

P. 471.

At this time the Duke of Norfolk wrote to Montmo-

rancy, that they wondered to find the faculty was so much altered; that before this time 56 doctors were in their opinion on the King's side, and there were only seven against him; but that in the late congregation 36 were against it, and 22 only were for it. The King of England had reason upon this to suspect some underhand dealing; therefore he hoped they would so manage the matter as to clear all suspicions.

The next letters of De Bellay did certainly give the progress of the deliberations of the Sorbonne: but we find nothing of that in Le Grand's collection. It is somewhat strange, and may be liable to suspicion, that, after so close a series of letters concerning that affair, no letter is produced from the 12th of June to the 15th of August; thus we have no account given us of the deliberations of the Sorbonne, and yet it is not to be doubted, but that a very particular relation was written to the court of every step that was made in it. The producing no letters for these two months must leave a very heavy suspicion of unfair dealing somewhere; for the first letter of De Bellay's that is published by him, after that of the 12th of June, is of the 15th of August.

Rymer has published the original decision of the Sorbonne on the 2d of July 1530, but he adds, *avulso sigillo*; yet after that he publishes an attestation of the notaries of the court of Paris (*curiæ Parisiensis*) of the authenticity of this original decision. The attestation of the notaries, dated the 6th of July, mentions both seal and subscription, free from all blemish, and liable to no suspicion. It is probable this precaution was thought necessary, in case the messenger that was to carry it to England had fallen into the hands of any of the Emperor's parties in their way to Calais, who, no doubt, would have destroyed this instrument: but this notarial attestation would have been a full proof of it; for the difficulties in obtaining it might make those

BOOK
II.

1530.

Upon the
changing
the divines'
opinions.

P. 473.

The deci-
sion of the
Sorbonne.Rymer,
vol. xiv.

PART who had conducted the matter think it would be no
 III. easy thing to procure a new instrument from the Sor-
 1530. bonne itself. How it came that the seal was pulled
 from the instrument itself, must be left to conjecture;
 perhaps it was pulled from it in Queen Mary's time.

Lizet, the
 President,
 seemed to
 work a-
 gainst it.

“ Bellay, in his letter of the 15th of August, writes,
 “ that he had moved Lizet to send for Beda, and to let
 “ him know the King's intentions. Beda talked as a
 “ fool; he would not say as an ill man: but the Presi-
 “ dent was possessed with a good opinion of him. The
 “ King of France had, at the Earl of Wiltshire's desire,
 “ ordered an examination to be made of his behaviour.
 “ He had also ordered the President to demand of the
 “ Beadle an authentic copy of an act that Beda had
 “ once signed; but then wished he had not signed it:
 “ but Lizet would not command the Beadle to do this,
 “ till he had the consent of the faculty to give it, though
 “ he had an order from the King to require it. So Bel-
 “ lay having got the King's letter, went to the President,
 “ and delivered it to him: he promised he would exe-
 “ cute it, and get the authentic copy into his hands.
 “ Towards the evening he went to the President to see
 “ what he had done; he said the Beadle told him, he
 “ could not give it without the consent of the faculty:
 “ upon which Bellay said, that might be a rule in case
 “ a private person asked it; but when the Prince de-
 “ manded it, he thought it was no just excuse. The
 “ act which was demanded was approved by the faculty,
 “ by the Dean, and the students, and by all concerned
 “ in it. The Beadle pretended that it might be said, that
 “ he had falsified the act: Bellay answered, that was
 “ the reason why they desired the act: he was present
 “ when it passed, and had minuted it; but since Beda
 “ and his complices repented that they had signed it,
 “ and that the minute they had signed was in some
 “ places dashed and interlined, they might make new

“dashings and interlineations, therefore he prayed the **BOOK**
 “President to command the Beadle to bring him the **II.**
 “minute that he said was conform to the original. For **1530.**
 “an hour together the President would do no more but
 “desire the Beadle to do it ; at last he commanded him,
 “but so mildly, that the Beadle did not think fit to
 “obey him : upon which Bellay said to him, if he suf-
 “fered himself to be so treated, he was unworthy of the
 “character that he bore. This quickened Lizet so, that
 “he commanded the Beadle, all excuses set aside, to
 “obey him. The act was brought and read, and he
 “promised to bring him a copy of it by the next morn-
 “ing. The President thought that Bellay had spoken
 “too boldly to him, and he would not let him have it,
 “but sent it directly to the King. Lizet had that
 “esteem for Beda, that he thought him a saint, and he
 “would not believe him capable of the faults that he
 “saw him guilty of, which were such, that Bellay wrote,
 “that if he had been to be charged with them, and had
 “a dozen of heads, he had deserved to lose them all.
 “He writes, that Beda was not the only bad man of the
 “faculty ; he had many companions, who seemed to de-
 “sire an occasion to provoke the King to do that to
 “them, which would make them pass for martyrs among
 “the people. He had often heard of their wicked de-
 “signs, under the hypocritical disguise of sincerity,
 “but could not have believed the tenth part, if he had
 “not seen it.”

Next to this, we have in Le Grand's Collection the **P. 480.**
 letter that Lizet wrote to Montmorancy of the same **His letter**
 date, “mentioning, that, according to the King's letters **of that**
 “to him, he had procured the copy of the act, which **whole mat-**
 “the King of England desired : for though the Bi- **ter.**
 “shop of Bayonne asked it of him, that he might carry
 “it to that King, yet that not being ordered in the
 “King's letters to him, he therefore thought it his duty

PART "to send it directly to the King himself: and as touch-
 III. "ing the examination that the King had ordered to be
 1530. "made of the conduct of that matter; he desired it may
 "be delayed till he was heard give an account of it:
 "for that information would perhaps be a prejudice,
 "rather than a service, to the King of England. In it
 "he desires to know the King's pleasure, that he might
 "follow it as carefully as was possible."

A design to
 make a
 contrary
 decree.

The Bishop of Bayonne gives a further account of
 this matter; and writes, "that after the assembly of
 "the Sorbonne was dismissed by the Dean, and that
 "the Bishop of Senlis, with many abbots, and nine or
 "ten, either generals, provincials, guardians, or priors
 "of the chief convents of the kingdom, and others of
 "great rank and credit, were gone, Beda and his com-
 "plices did by their own private authority meet, and
 "study to overturn that which had been settled in so
 "great an assembly. He writes, that this disease was of
 "a long continuance, and was still increasing. This
 "company, pretending they were a capitular congrega-
 "tion, sent an order to the Bishop of Senlis, who was
 "gone into his diocese, and had carried the original act
 "of the determination with him, requiring him, under
 "the pain of disobedience, to send it to them. He wrote
 "in answer to them, that he had orders to deliver it to
 "none but to the King: he was resolved to obey the
 "King's orders, and advised them to do the same. Upon
 "which, they moved to deprive him as a rebel to the
 "faculty: he was not frightened with this, but wrote
 "to them, that he was bound to obey the faculty as his
 "mother, but to obey the King as his father: yet they
 "resolved to proceed further after the feasts. In this
 "letter he tells what pains his brother had taken to pre-
 "vent the scandal that such proceedings would give,
 "which were better hindered than punished: but he
 "complains, that those who had authority to restrain

“such insolences did secretly encourage them.” By **BOOK** which it is clear, he means Lizet. The date of this letter is printed the 14th of August: but it is more probable it was the 14th of July, some days after the determination was made; for this matter has no relation to the business of the former letter, that was written by his brother a day after this, if it is the true date. II.
1530.

It is plain from this, that there were two instruments: the one was the act of the determination, which at the time of the writing this letter was in the Bishop of Senlis' hands; the other was a minute signed by them all, to which the former letter relates, and that might have had rasures and glosses in it, which are not to be imagined could be in the authentic act. It seems the English ambassadors desired both.

There is another letter on the 15th of August, of the P. 500. Bishop of Bayonne's to Montmorancy; in which “he complains that the faction was going to make a determination contrary to the former; and had made an order that none of the faculty might sign against the marriage, but left it free for any to sign for it: but that the King had ordered that the determination already made should remain entire. The Bishop had pressed the President to obey the King's orders: he had promised him to do it; but Beda promised the contrary to his party. Bellay feared the King of England would suspect that the King did not act sincerely. He confessed, that, from the appearances of things, he should do so himself, if he had not seen the concern that the King was in upon this occasion. When he pressed Lizet to obey the King's orders, he spoke two or three hours to him in bad Latin, (he calls it the Latin of Auvergne,) but he could not understand what he meant. He says the Beadle pretended there was one little fault in the act, upon which he might be accused of forgery. Upon this the Bishop sus-

PART III. "pected Beda's practice more than he had done; and
" he had required the President to obey the King's

1530. " orders, otherwise he would protest if he did not: and
" he secretly told him, he did say that to justify him
" at their hands, whom he saw he was resolved not to
" offend. The President then promised him the act
" that night; but then delayed it till next morning at
" five: when he sent for it, sometimes the gate was not
" opened, and the key was lost; sometimes the Presi-
" dent was asleep; and then it was said, that he had
" taken physic, and that the Bishop must have pa-
" tience: but he understood that he had gone out by a
" back door to the Abbey of St. Germain's; thither he
" followed him, and asked for the act: but he said he
" had sent it to the King. He reckons many other
" impertinencies, that gave a mean character of Lizet."

P. 507.
Angiers di-
vided; the
University
for the di-
vorce, and
the divines
against it.

But while this matter was transacted thus at Paris, though the University of Angiers had determined against the marriage, yet the faculty of divinity there did on the 7th of May 1530. determine " that it was lawful
" for a Christian to marry his brother's widow, he dying
" without children; but having consummated the mar-
" riage, that such marriage was not contrary to the laws
" of God and of nature, and therefore the Pope might
" upon reasonable grounds dispense in that case." This
P. 508. was the judgment of the faculty; but that University did in a body, on that same day, decree the quite contrary, without any mention of this opinion of the divines; so, it seems, that was kept secret.

Thus I have fully opened all that Mr. Le Grand has thought fit to publish concerning the divines of France. By the relation given of the proceedings in the Sorbonne, it appears, that in the opinion of the Bishop of Bayonne, and his brother, that body was then much corrupted; that a few incendiaries influenced many there, so that it was far from deserving the high character that it had

in the world. It is highly probable, they apprehended **BOOK**
 that the carrying on the divorce might open a door to **II.**
 let in that which they called heresy into England; **1530.**
 which, considering the heat of that time, was enough
 to bias them in all their deliberations.

I turn next homeward, to give a more particular ac- **Collect.**
 count of the proceedings both in Cambridge and Ox- **Numb. 16.**
 ford. I begin with the former, because it was first ended **The King's**
 there; and I have a sure ground to go on. A worthy **letters to**
 person found among the manuscripts of Bennet College **the Univer-**
 a manuscript of Dr. Buckmaster, then the Vice-Chan- **sity of Ox-**
 cellor, in which there is a very particular relation of **ford.**
 that affair. It was procured to that house in Queen
 Elizabeth's reign by Dr. Jegon, then head of that
 house, and was by him given to that college: for there
 is nothing remaining in the registers of the University
 relating to it, as that learned person has informed
 me.

The Vice-Chancellor was then a fellow of Peterhouse,
 of which Dr. Edmonds was head, who was then a vicar
 and prebendary in the diocese and cathedral church of
 Salisbury. The whole will be found in the Collection. **Collect.**
 "It begins with a short introductory speech of the **Numb. 16.**
 "Vice-Chancellor's, upon which he read the King's let-
 "ter to them. It set forth, that many of the greatest
 "clerks in Christendom, both within and without the
 "realms, had affirmed in writing, that the marrying the
 "brother's wife, he dying without children, was forbid-
 "den both by the law of God, and by the natural law:
 "the King therefore, being desirous to have their minds,
 "to whom he had showed a benevolent affection, did
 "not doubt but they would declare the truth, in a case
 "of such importance, both to himself, and to the whole
 "kingdom. For this end, he sent Gardiner and Fox
 "to inform them particularly of the circumstances of
 "the matter; and he expected their answer under the

PART "seal of the University." The King's letter is dated
 III. the 16th of February.

1530.

"After this was read, the Vice-Chancellor told them, they saw what the King desired of them. They were men of free and ingenuous tempers; every one of their consciences would dictate to them what was most expedient. After this follows the form of the grace that was proposed and granted, that the Vice-Chancellor and ten doctors, and the two proctors, with seventeen masters of arts, should have full authority to determine the question proposed, and to answer it in the name of the whole University. And whatsoever two parts in three of these persons should agree in, that, without any new order, should be returned to the King as the answer of the University: only the question was to be disputed publicly; and the determination that they should make was to be read in the hearing of the University.

"On the 9th of March, at a meeting of the University, the Vice-Chancellor told them, that the persons deputed by them had with great care and diligence examined the question, and had considered both the passages in the Scriptures, and the opinions of the interpreters; upon which they had a public disputation, which was well known to them all: so now, after great labours, and all possible industry, they came to the determination then to be read to them. Then follows the determination; in which they add to the question proposed to them these words, after *brother's wife, She being carnally known by her former husband:*" so, after above a fortnight's study or practice, this was obtained of them. "The Vice-Chancellor came to Windsor, and on the second Sunday of Lent, after vespers, he delivered it to the King. Of this he gave an account to Dr. Edmonds in a letter; in which he tells him, he came to court while Latimer was preaching:

“ the King gave him great thanks for the determination, BOOK
 “ and was much pleased with the method in which they II.
 “ had managed it with such quietness. The King prais- 1530.
 “ ed Latimer’s sermon ; and he was ordered to wait on
 “ the King the next day. Dr. Butts brought twenty
 “ nobles from the King to him, and five marks to the
 “ junior proctor that came with him ; scarce enough to
 bear their charges, and far from the price of corrup-
 tion ; and gave him leave to go when he pleased. But
 after dinner the King came to a gallery, where Gardi-
 ner and Fox, with the Vice-Chancellor, Latimer, and
 the Proctor were, and no more, and talked some hours
 with them. He was not pleased with Gardiner and
 Fox, because the other question, *Whether the Pope had*
power to dispense with such a marriage ? was not like-
 wise determined. But the Vice-Chancellor said, he
 believed that could not have been obtained. But the
 King said, he would have that determined after Easter.
 It appears by his letter, that there was a great outcry
 raised against Cambridge for that which they had done.
 The Vice-Chancellor was particularly censured for it ;
 and he had lost a benefice that the patron had promised
 him, but had upon this changed his mind. Those who
 did not like Latimer were not pleased with his preach-
 ing.

He heard, those of Oxford had appointed a select
 number to determine the King’s question ; and that
 Fox, when he was there, was in great danger. But a
 more particular account of the proceedings in that Uni-
 versity I take from three of King Henry’s letters to
 them, communicated to me by my learned friend Dr.
 Kennet ; which, since they have not yet been printed,
 will be found in the Collection.

Collect.
Numb. 17.

In the first letter that the King wrote to the Univer-
 sity, he sets forth, “ That, upon certain considerations
 “ moving his conscience, he had already consulted many

PART "learned men, both within the kingdom and without
 III. "it; but he desired to feel the minds of those among
 1530. "them who were learned in divinity, to see how they
 "agreed with others: therefore he hoped they would
 "sincerely and truly declare their consciences in that
 "matter, and not give credit to misreports. He requires
 "them, as their sovereign Lord, to declare their true
 "and just learning in that cause: therefore, in a great
 "variety of expressions, mixing threatenings with pro-
 "mises, if they should not uprightly, according to di-
 "vine learning, handle themselves, he leaves the declar-
 "ing the particulars to the Bishop of Lincoln, his Con-
 "fessor, to whom they were to give entire credit.

"By the second letter, the King tells them, he un-
 "derstood that a great part of the youth of the Univer-
 "sity did in a factious manner combine together, in
 "opposition to the wise and learned men of that body,
 "to have a great number of regents and non-regents to
 "be joined in a committee of the doctors, proctors, and
 "bachelors of divinity, for the determination of the
 "King's question: this he believed had not been often
 "seen, that such a number of men of small learning
 "should be joined with so famous a sort, to stay their
 "seniors in so weighty a cause. The King took that
 "in very ill part, since they showed themselves more
 "unkind and wilful than all other universities had done:
 "he hoped they would bring those young men into
 "better order, otherwise they should feel what it was
 "to provoke him so heinously.

"By his third letter, he complains that they delayed
 "to send him their determination. He tells them, the
 "University of Cambridge had in a much shorter time
 "agreed upon the manner of sending their answer; and
 "had sent their answer under their common seal. He
 "would have more easily borne with a delay in making
 "the answer, if they had so far obeyed him as to put

“ the matter in a method. He therefore, being unwilling to proceed to extremities, had sent his counsellor Fox to them, hoping that the heads and rulers would consider their duty, in granting his request ; which was only, that they would *search the truth*, in a cause that so nearly concerned both himself and his people. And therefore he desired, that the numbers of private suffrages might not prevail against their heads, their rulers, and sage fathers ; but that they would so try the opinions of the multitude, as the importance of the matter did require. Hoping that their constitution was such, that there were ways left to eschew such inconveniences when they should happen : as he trusted they would not fail to do, and so to redeem the errors and delays that were past.” In conclusion, the matter was brought into the method set forth in my History.

BOOK
II.
1530.

Here is no threatening them, by reason of any determination they might give ; but, on the contrary, all the vehemence in those letters is only with relation to the method of proceeding : and it was certainly a very irregular one, to join a great number of persons, who had not studied divinity, with men of the profession, who could only by a majority carry the point against reason and argument.

Here I shall insert some marginal notes that Dr. Creech wrote in his own book of my History, which is now in my hands. He says, that in the determination of Oxford they added the words of the brother's wife, (*ab eadem carnaliter cognitam*,) that the first marriage was consummated ; though this was not in the question sent to the University by their Chancellor Archbishop Warham. He says further, that they mention the King's letters, in which it is written, that an answer was already made by the Universities of Paris and Cambridge. This of Paris, though not in the King's letter,

VOL. III.

I

PART might have been written to them by their Chancellor;
III. for it has appeared, from the letters published by Le

1580. Grand, that though the decision of the Sorbonne was not made till July, yet several months before, the doctors of Paris had given their opinions for the divorce. He also writes, that a letter came from their Chancellor, Warham, to remove all the masters of arts out of the convocation, as unfit to determine so weighty a question. Warham also, as he says, made the proposal of choosing thirty, to whom the question might be referred. In another place he quotes the book that was published for the divorce; which affirms, that the determinations of the Universities were made without any corruption. The questions were not proposed to all the Universities in the same terms: for to some, as to the faculty of the canon-law at Paris, and to those of Angiers and Bourges, the consummation of the marriage is expressly asserted in it. And in the book in which the determinations of the Universities are printed, those of the Universities in England are not mentioned. These are all the strictures he wrote on this part of my History.

Tom. xiv.
 The deci-
 sion made
 at Bologna,

Some more particulars are given us by Rymer concerning the determination of the foreign Universities. A copy of that made at Bologna was carried to the Governor: upon which five doctors swore before Crook that they had not carried it to him; and that they had kept no copy of it. This is attested by a notary; and the clerks and notaries swore the same, and that they did not know who carried it. By this, it seems, Crook, had engaged them to secrecy; and that the matter coming some way to the Governor's knowledge, they took these oaths to assure him that they had not broken their word to him.

And at
 Padua.

The decree in Padua was made July the first, and was attested by the Podestà, and afterwards by the Doge of Venice, on the 20th of September; who affirm,

that eleven doctors were present; and that the determination was made with the unanimous consent of the whole body. And this is attested by notaries.

BOOK
II.
1530.

But now the scene must be removed to Rome for some time. The Pope had ordered a citation to be made of the King to appear before him, to hear his cause judged. The King would not suffer any such citation to be intimated to him; so it was affixed at some churches in Flanders, at Tournay and Bruges. The King treated this with contempt; while the Emperor and his ministers were pressing the Pope to proceed to censures. The King of France interposed to obtain delays; in consideration of whom, several delays were granted: and the Pope said, if King Henry would proceed no further in the matter of the supremacy, he would yet grant a further delay. And whereas the French King pressed for a delay of four months; the Pope said, if the King of England would own him as his judge, he would give not only the time that was asked, but a year or more.

Here I shall give an account of a long letter that the King wrote to the Pope; there is no date put to it in the copy from which I took it, but the substance of it makes me conclude it was writ about this time. It will be found in the Collection.

" In it he complains, that no regard was had neither
" to his just desires, nor to the intercession of the Most
" Christian King: that the prayers of his nobility were
" not only despised, but laughed at. All this was far
" contrary to what he expected; and was indeed so
" strange, that he could scarce think the Pope was capa-
" ble of doing such things, as he certainly knew he was
" doing. The Pope, against what all men thought just,
" refused to send judges to come to the place where the
" cause lay. The holy councils of old had decreed, that
" all causes should be determined there where they had

Collect.
Numb. 18.
Among Ry-
mer's MSS.
The King
writes fully
to the Pope.

PART
III.

1530.

“ their beginning : for this he quotes St. Cyprian among
 “ the ancients, and St. Bernard among moderns ; who
 “ were of that mind. The truth would be both sooner
 “ and more certainly found out, if examined on the
 “ place, than could possibly be at a distance. The Pope
 “ had once sent legates to England, and what reason
 “ could be given why this should not be done again ?
 “ But he saw the Pope was so devoted to the Emperor,
 “ that every thing was done as he dictated. The Queen’s
 “ allegation, that England was a place so suspected by
 “ her, that she could not expect to have justice done
 “ her in it, must be believed, against the clearest evi-
 “ dence possible to the contrary. The King bore with
 “ the liberties that many took who espoused her cause,
 “ more than was fitting ; nor did he threaten any, or
 “ grow less kind than formerly, to those who declared
 “ for the marriage ; and yet the Pope pretended he
 “ must give credit to this, and he offered no other rea-
 “ son for his not sending judges to England. This was
 “ to fasten a base reflection upon the King, and an in-
 “ justice, which he must look on as a great indignity
 “ done him.

“ He further complains, that the Pope took all pos-
 “ sible methods to hinder learned men from delivering
 “ their opinion in his cause ; and though, after long and
 “ earnest applications, he did give leave by his breves to
 “ all persons to give their opinion in it ; yet his own
 “ magistrates did, in his name, threaten those that were
 “ against the power of dispensing with the laws of God :
 “ this was particularly done at Bologna. The Empe-
 “ ror’s ministers every where, in contempt of the per-
 “ mission granted by the Pope, terrified all who gave
 “ their opinion for the King ; at which the Pope con-
 “ nived, if he did not consent to it. The Pope’s nuncio
 “ did in France openly, and to the King himself, declare
 “ against the King’s cause, as being founded neither on

"justice nor on reason: he still expected, that the Pope BOOK II.
 "would have regard to the prerogative of his crown, 1530.
 "and to the laws of England, which are as ancient as
 "the Pope's laws are; and that he will not cite him to
 "answer out of his kingdom, nor send any inhibitions
 "into it: for he will suffer no breach to be made on the
 "laws during his reign. He was resolved to maintain
 "that which was his own, as he would not invade that
 "which belonged to another: he did not desire conten-
 "tion; he knew the ill effects such disputes would have:
 "upon all which, he expected the Pope's answer." This
 had no effect on the Pope; so far from it, that, upon a
 representation made to him, in Queen Katherine's name,
 that King Henry seemed resolved to proceed to a second
 marriage, the Pope sent out a second breve on the 5th The Pope's second
 of January 1531. declaring any such marriage to be breve a-
 null, and the issue by it to be illegitimate; denouncing gainst the
 the severest censures possible against all that should be King's
 any ways assisting in it, and requiring the King to marrying
 live with the Queen in all conjugal affection till the another
 suit was brought to a conclusion. wife.

Something was to be done to stop proceedings at Pleadings
 Rome; or upon this an immediate rupture must follow. by an ex-
 This brought on the sending an *excusator* in the name cusator.
 of the King and kingdom, to show that the King was
 not bound to appear upon the citation; nor yet to send
 a proctor to appear in his name. Sigismund Dondalus,
 and Michael de Conrades, two eminent advocates, were
 brought to Rome to maintain the plea of the *excusator*.
 They sent over the substance of their pleadings, which
 was printed at London by Berthelet. The sum of it
 was, Capisuchi, Dean of the Rota, had cited the King
 to Rome to answer to the Queen's appeal: the chief in-
 structions sent by Carn were, to insist on the indignity
 done the King, to cite him to come out of his kingdom:
 but it seems that was a point that the advocates thought

PART fit to leave to the ambassadors; they thought it not
 III. safe for them to debate it, so they pleaded on other
 1530. heads.

They insisted much on that, (*de loco tuto*,) that no man ought to be cited to a place where he was not in full safety. It could not be safe, neither for the King nor the kingdom, that he should go so far from it. They showed likewise, that, to make a place safe, all the intermediate places through which one must pass to it must be likewise safe. The Pope therefore ought to send delegates to a safe place, either (*in partibus*) where the cause lay, or in the neighbourhood of it. It was said against them, that a cause once received in the court of Rome could never be sent out of it: but they replied, the Pope had once sent delegates into England in this cause, and upon the same reason he might do it again; indeed the cause was never in the court, for the King was never in it. But it was said, the King might appear by a proctor: they answered, he was not bound to send a proxy where he was not bound to appear in person, but was hindered by a just impediment: nor was the place safe for a proxy. In a matter of conscience, such as marriage was, he could not constitute a proctor; for by the forms he was to empower him fully, and to be bound by all that he should do in his name. It is true, in a perpetual impediment, a proctor must be made: but this was not perpetual; for the Pope might send delegates.

An *excusator* was to be admitted in the name of the King and kingdom, when the impediment was clear and lasting; they confessed, if it was only probable, a proctor must be constituted. There was no danger to be apprehended in the King's dominions: the Queen's oath was offered, that she could not expect justice in that case. They showed this ought not to be taken, and could not be well grounded; but was only the effect of

weak fear: it appearing evidently, that not only the Queen herself, but that all who declared for her, were safe in England. They did not insist on this, that the court ought to sit (*in partibus*) in the place where the cause lay: it seems they found that would not be borne at Rome: but they insisted on a court being to sit in the neighbourhood. They showed, that though the *excusator's* powers were not so full as to make him a proxy; yet they were not defective in that which was necessary for excusing the King's appearance, and for offering the just impediments, in order to the remanding of the matter. The book is full of the subtilties of the canon-law, and of quotations from canonists.

Thus this matter was pleaded, and, by a succession of many delays, was kept on foot in the court of Rome above three years; chiefly by the interposition of Francis: for Langey tells us, that the King of France wrote once or twice a week to Rome, not to precipitate matters. That court, on the other hand, pressed him to prevail with King Henry not to give new provocations. He wrote to Rome from Arques in the beginning of June 1531, and complained of citing the King to Rome: he said, learned persons had assured him that this was contrary to law, and to the privilege of kings, who could not be obliged to leave their kingdom; adding, that he would take all that was done for or against King Henry as done to himself.

There is a letter writ from the Cardinal of Tournon to King Francis, but without a date, by which it appears, "that the motion of an interview between the Pope and the King of France was then set on foot: and he assures the King, that the Pope was resolved to satisfy him at their meeting; that he would conduct King Henry's affair so dexterously, that nothing should be spoiled: he must, in point of form, give way to some things that would not be acceptable to

BOOK
II.
1530.

The French
King ob-
tains many
delays.
P. 319.
Melange
Hist. Let-
tres de Roy,
p. 1.

PART "him, that so he might not seem too partial to King
 III. "Henry; for whom, out of the love that he bore to
 1550. "King Francis, he would do all that was in his power,
 "but desired that might not be talked of."

On the 4th of May he wrote to him, that the Emperor threatened, that, if King Henry went on to do that injury to his aunt, he would make war on him by the King of Scotland: but they believed he would neither employ his purse, nor draw his sword in the quarrel. Langey reports the substance of King Henry's letters to Francis; he complained of the Pope's citing him to answer at Rome, or to send a proxy thither. In all former times, upon such occasions judges were sent to the place where the cause lay. Kings could not be required to go out of their dominions: he also complained of the papal exactions.

Now there were two interviews set on foot, in hopes to make up this matter, that seemed very near a breach. Francis had secretly begun a negociation with the Pope for the marriage of the Duke of Orleans, afterwards King Henry the Second, and the famous Katherine de Medicis: Francis, whose heart was set on getting the dutchy of Milan above all other things, hoped by this means to compass it for his second son. He likewise pretended, that, by gaining the Pope entirely to his interests, he should be able to make up all matters between King Henry and him. But to lay all this matter the better, the two Kings were to have an interview first, in the neighbourhood of Calais, which the Bishop of Bayonne, who was now again in England, was concerting. King Henry pressed the doing it so, that he might come back by All-Saints to hold his parliament. The Bishop saw King Henry would be much pleased if Francis would desire him to bring Anne Boleyn over with him, and if he would bring on his part the Queen of Navarre. The Queen of France was a Spaniard, so

Le Grand,
 p. 558.

it was desired she might not come ; he also desired that the King of France would bring his sons with him, and that no Imperialists might be brought, nor any of the Raillieurs, (Gaudiseurs,) for the nation hated that sort of people. Bayonne writes, he had sworn not to tell from whom he had this hint of Anne Boleyn : it was no hard thing to engage Francis into any thing that looked like gallantry ; for he had writ to her a letter in his own hand, which Montmorancy had sent over. At the interview of the two Kings, a perpetual friendship was vowed between them : and King Henry afterwards reproached Francis for kissing the Pope's foot at Marseilles, which, he affirms, he promised not to do ; nor to proceed to marry his son to the Pope's niece, till he gave the King of England full satisfaction ; and added, that he promised, that if the Pope did proceed to final censures against Henry, he would likewise withdraw himself from his obedience ; and that both the Kings would join in an appeal to a general council.

Soon after that the King returned from this interview, he married Anne Boleyn ; but so secretly, that none were present at it but her father and mother, and her brother, with the Duke of Norfolk. It went generally among our historians, that Cranmer was present at the marriage ; and I reported it so in my History : but Mr. Strype saw a letter of Cranmer's to Hawkins, then the King's ambassador at the Emperor's court, in which he writes, *Notwithstanding it hath been reported throughout a great part of the realm, that I married her, which was plainly false ; for I myself knew not thereof a fortnight after it was done : and many other things he reported of me, which be mere lies and tales.* In the same letter, he says it was about St. Paul's day. This confirms Stow's relation. But to write with the impartial freedom of an historian : it seems, the day of the marriage was given out wrong on design. The ac-

BOOK II.

1530.

An interview between the two Kings.

The King marries Anne Boleyn.

PART count that Cranmer gives of it cannot be called in
 III. question. But Queen Elizabeth was born, not, as I
 1531. put it, on the 7th, but as Cranmer writes in another
 letter to Hawkins, on the 13th or 14th of September:
 so there not being full eight months between the mar-
 riage and that birth, which would have opened a scene
 of raillery to the court of Rome, it seems the day of
 the marriage was then said to be in November. And
 in a matter that was so secretly managed, it was no
 hard thing to oblige those who were in the secret to si-
 lence. This seems to be the only way to reconcile
 Cranmer's letter to the reports commonly given out of
 the day of the marriage.

Cotton
 Libr.
 Vitell.
 B. 14.

The news of this was soon carried to Rome. Car-
 dinal Ghinnuccius wrote to the King, "that he had a
 " long conversation with the Pope, when the news was
 " first brought thither. The Pope resolved to take no
 " notice of it; but he did not know how he should be
 " able to resist the instances that the Emperor would
 " make. He considered well the effects that his cen-
 " sures would probably have. He saw, the Emperor
 " intended to put things past reconciliation; but it was
 " not reasonable for the Pope to pass censures, when it
 " did not appear how they could be executed. He
 " could not do any thing prejudicial to the King, un-
 " less he resolved to lay out a vast sum of money;
 " which he believed he would not do, the success be-
 " ing so doubtful. And he concludes, that they might
 " depend upon it that the Emperor could not easily
 " bring the Pope to pass those censures that he de-
 " sired."

At this time, the third breve was published against
 the King, on the 15th of November: but it seems it
 was for some time suppressed; for it has a second date
 added to it, of the 23d of December in the year 1532:
 " in which, after a long expostulation upon his taking

“ Anne as his wife, and his putting away the Queen, BOOK
 “ while the suit was yet depending ; the Pope exhorts II.
 “ him to bring back the Queen, and to put Anne away, 1531.
 “ within a month after this was brought to him ; other-
 “ wise he excommunicates both him and Anne :” but
 the execution of this was suspended. Soon after this,
 Benet wrote a letter to the King, all in cipher ; but
 the deciphering is interlined. He writes, “ the Pope
 “ did approve the King’s cause as just and good ; and
 “ did it in a manner openly. For that reason, he did
 “ not deliver the severe letter that the King wrote
 “ upon this breve, lest that should too much pro-
 “ voke him. The Emperor was then at Bologna, and
 “ pressed for the speedy calling a general council ; and,
 “ among other reasons, he gave the proceeding against
 “ the King for one. The King’s ambassadors urged
 “ the decree of the council of Nice, that the bishops of
 “ the province should settle all things that belonged to
 “ it ; so by this, he said, the Pope might put the mat-
 “ ter out of his hands. But the Pope would not hear
 “ of that. He writes further, that an old and famous
 “ man, who died lately, had left his opinion in writing,
 “ for the King’s cause, with his nephew, who was in
 “ high favour with the Pope. The Emperor was tak-
 “ ing pains to engage him in his interests, and had of-
 “ fered him a bishoprick of 6000 ducats a year, likely
 “ soon to be void. The King’s ambassadors had pro-
 “ mised him, on the other hand, a great sum from the
 “ King : they upon that ask orders about it speedily,
 “ lest too long a delay might alienate him from the
 “ King.”

There is also a long letter, but without a date, writ-
 ten by one who was born in Rome, but was employed
 to solicit the King’s cause. He told the Pope, and was
 willing to declare it to all the cardinals in the con-
 sistory, “ that if they proceeded further in the King’s

PART "cause, it would prove fatal to the see. They had al
III. "ready lost the Hungarians, with a great part of Ger-
1531. "many; and would they now venture to lose Eng-
 "land, and perhaps France with it? The King thought
 "his marriage with Queen Anne was firm and holy,
 "and was resolved to prosecute his cause in that court
 "no more. The King said, he was satisfied in his own
 "conscience; but yet, if the Pope would judge for his
 "present marriage, both he and his ministers said, it
 "would be agreeable to him."

Langcy,
p. 317.

P. 330.

The cardinals of France pressed the King of France to use all endeavours to bring King Henry with him to the interview at Marseilles, or one fully empowered to put an end to the matter of the divorce. Langcy was sent to propose it to King Henry; but that King told him, since he saw such a train of dissimulation in the Pope's proceedings, and delays upon delays, that had quite disgusted him. He had now obtained a sentence in England of the nullity of his marriage, in which he acquiesced: and upon that he was married, though secretly. He was resolved to keep it secret till he saw what effects the interview had: if the Pope would not do him justice, he would deliver the nation from that servitude.

Rymer.

June 23,
1531.

He had obtained the judgment of some universities concerning the citation to Rome. The University of Orleans gave their opinion, that he was not bound to appear at Rome, neither in person, nor by proxy; and that the citation was null; but that there ought to be a delegation of judges in the place where the cause lay. Many advocates in the court of parliament of Paris gave their opinions to the same purpose. The canonists in Paris thought, that the King could not be cited to go to Rome; but that judges ought to be sent to determine the matter in some safe place.

June 14,
1531.

Aug. 19,
1531.

King Henry wrote to his ambassadors with the King

of France, to divert him from the interview with the Pope, as a thing too much to the Pope's honour. And whereas the King of France wrote, that his chief design in it was to serve the King: he wrote upon it, that he was so sure of his nobility and commons, that he had no apprehension of any thing the Pope could do. He therefore desired him to write to the Cardinals of Tournon and Grandimont, and to his ambassadors at Rome, to press the admitting the *excusator's* plea; for that was a point in which all princes were concerned.

BOOK II.
1531.
King Henry opposes the interview with the Pope in vain.
Rymer, MS.

King Francis pretended, that the breaking off the project of the interview could not be done: it had now gone too far, and his honour was engaged. He was very sorry that the *excusator's* plea was rejected; yet he did not despair but that all things might be yet set right; which made him still more earnest for the interview. And he was confident, if the King would come to the meeting, all would be happily made up: but since he saw no hope of prevailing with the King for that, he desired that the Duke of Norfolk might be sent over, with some learned persons, who should see the good offices he would do.

The Duke of Norfolk was sent over upon this, and he found the King of France at Montpellier in the end of August; but told him, that upon the last sentence that was given at Rome, the King looked on the Pope as his enemy, and he would resent his usage of him by all possible methods. He studied to divert the interview, otherwise he said he must return immediately. King Francis answered, that the sentence was not definitive; but though he could not break the interview, that was concerted by King Henry's own consent, he promised he would espouse the King's affair as his own. He pressed the Duke of Norfolk so earnestly to go along with him, that once he seemed convinced that it

The Duke of Norfolk sent to France.

PART might be of good use in the King's cause, and a memo-
 III. rial was given him of the method of settling it: he upon

1531. this sent the Lord Rochford to the King, to see if he
 • would change the orders he had given him; and he staid
 only a few days after he had dispatched him. But he
 said his orders for his return were positive: if a change
 of orders should come, he would quickly return; if not,
 he would get some learned men to be sent, to see what
 might be devised at Marseilles.

But soon
 recalled.

The King of France wrote to his ambassador with
 King Henry, that if the Duke of Norfolk could have
 been allowed to go with him to Marseilles, much might
 have been done; and he sent with that a part of the
 Cardinal of Tournon's last letter to him of the 17th of
 August, in which he wrote, "that he had spoke fully
 " to the Pope, as the King had ordered him, about the
 " King of England's affair: the Pope complained that
 " King Henry had not only proceeded to marry con-
 " trary to the breve he had received, but that he was
 " still publishing laws in contempt of his see; and that
 " Cranmer had pronounced the sentence of divorce as
 " legate. This gave the cardinals such distaste, that
 " they would have been highly offended with the Pope,
 " if he had done nothing upon it. He therefore advised
 " the King to carry the Duke of Norfolk with him to
 " Marseilles; for if King Henry would but seem to re-
 " pair the steps he had made in the *attentates*, as they
 " called them, and do that which might save the Pope's
 " honour, he assured him, such was his love to him, that
 " for his sake he would do all that was desired, with all
 " his heart. But he feared expedients would not be
 " readily found, if the Duke of Norfolk went not to
 " Marseilles."

The King
 of France
 was to have
 been god-
 father, if

The King of France sent such messages to King
 Henry by the Duke of Norfolk, and such compliments
 to Queen Anne, as highly pleased them: for his ambas-

sador wrote to him, that, since the Duke of Norfolk's BOOK coming, King Henry expressed his confidence and II. friendship for him in a very particular manner. King 1531. Henry had asked him, if he had no order to stand god-Queen Anne had brought a son. father in the King of France's name, in case the Queen should be delivered of a son. He answered, he had none ; but he would write to the King upon the subject. The Duke of Norfolk said, he had spoke to the King of France about it ; who agreed to it, that either the ambassador, or some other sent express, should do it. The child's name was to be Edward or Henry ; (but the birth proving a daughter, this went no further.) He adds in his letter, that Gardiner, then Bishop of Winchester, was sent to Marseilles. The King of France sent from Arles on the 17th of September an order for the christening.

But now the next scene is at Marseilles ; where, after The inter- view at Marseilles. the ceremonies were over, the King of France set himself, as he writes, with great zeal to bring the Pope to be easy in the King's matter : he protested he minded no business of his own, till he should see what could be done in the matter of the King's divorce. The Pope Mel. Hist. said, he left the process at Rome ; so that nothing could P. 142. be done in it. The French ambassador wrote to his master, that King Henry charged him with this, that he himself brought over instructions, with promises that Francis would not proceed to the marriage of his son, till the King's matter was done : the ambassador denied this, and offered to show his instructions, that it might appear that no such article was in them. King Henry insisted that the French King had promised it both to himself, and to the Queen ; and if he failed him in this, he could depend no more on his friendship. When the ambassador told the Duke of Norfolk how uneasy this would be to the King of France, who had the King's concerns so much at heart, and that all the

PART interest that he could gain in the Pope would be employed in the King's service; for if he should break
III. with the Pope, that must throw him entirely into the
1531. Emperor's hands: the Duke of Norfolk confessed all that was true; but said, that the King's head was so embroiled with this matter, that he trusted no living man, and that both he and the Queen suspected himself.

Mel. Hist.
 p. 174.
 Great promises made
 by the Pope.

The Bishop of Auxerre, the French ambassador, had wrote from Rome, "that the Pope would do all that they asked, and more if he durst or could: but he was so pressed by the Emperor's people, that though it was against God and reason, and the opinion even of some of the Imperial cardinals, he was forced to do whatsoever Cardinal Dosme demanded." In a letter to Cardinal Tournon, the Bishop of Auxerre complains, that the King of England was ill used; and in a letter to the Pope's Legate in France, he writes, "that the Pope was disposed to grant King Henry's desire, yet he was so pressed by the Imperialists, that he expected no good from him, unless in the way of dissimbling: he firmly believed he would do well if he durst: his answer to the King of France was as good as could be wished for, he hoped the effects would agree to it: Cardinal Farnese, the ancientest Cardinal, (afterwards Pope Paul the Third,) was wholly for them: the Cardinal of Ancona, next to him in seniority, was wholly Imperialist. He writes, that the ambassadors had an audience of three hours of the Pope, when they delivered the King of France's letters on the King of England's behalf: the Pope said he was sorry that he must determine the matter; for he should have small thanks on both sides. The thing had been now four years in his hands, he had yet done nothing; if he could do as he wished, he wished as they all wished: and he spake this in such a man-

Mel. Hist.
 p. 175.

“ner, that they were much mistaken, if he spoke not as **BOOK**
 “he thought. The Pope asked them what made the **II.**
 “King of France to be so earnest in this matter: they **1531.**
 “answered, that the two Kings were so united, that
 “they were both more touched with the affairs each of
 “the other, than with their own.”

In another letter to Montmorancy, he writes, “that
 “there was a new delay granted for four months. The
 “Pope, upon his granting it, pressed him to write to
 “the King, to prevail with King Henry to send a proxy.
 “He answered, he believed that would not be done, un-
 “less assurance was given that the cause should be re-
 “mitted. If the matter had been then put to the vote,
 “the ancient and learned cardinals would have judged
 “for the King of England; but they were few, and the
 “number of the others was great; so that the cause
 “would have been quite lost.”

At the same time, the Cardinal of Ancona proposed **Cotton Lib.**
 to Bennet and to Cassali, that if a proxy were sent to **Vitell. B.**
 Rome, they should have not only justice, but all man- **19.**
 ner of favour: for both the Pope and the cardinals did **Practices**
 very positively promise, that a commission should be **upon cardi-**
 made to delegates to hear the witnesses in England, re- **nals.**
 serving only the final sentence to the Pope. Cassali
 was upon this sent to England; but his negociation
 had no effect: only he seems to have known well the
 secret method of practising with the cardinals. For,
 upon his return, he met the King of France at Compi-
 egne, with whom he had much discourse about manag-
 ing the cardinals; particularly Cardinal de Monte, (af-
 terwards Pope Julius the Third.) The King of France
 had sent 40,000 crowns to be distributed in the court
 of Rome; upon which, he offers some very prudent
 suggestions. The letter to the King from thence
 seemed so considerable, that I have put it in the Col- **Collect.**
 lection. **Numb. 19.**

PART
III.

1531.

Mel. Hist.
p. 19.

Ibid.

P. 21.

These were the preparations on all hands for the meeting at Marseilles; where Francis protested that he set himself so earnestly to get satisfaction to be given to Henry, that he minded no business of his own till he should see what could be done in that. The Pope said indeed, that he had left the process at Rome; but they wrote over, that they knew this was false: yet by that they saw the Pope intended to do nothing in it. Francis indeed complained, that there was no proxy from the King sent to Marseilles: if there had been one, he said, the business had been ended. It was also reported, that the King of France had said to the Duke of Norfolk, he would be the King's proxy; (here, in the margin, it is set down, *The Duke of Norfolk denies he said this*;) but the King of France knew, that the King would never constitute a proxy, that being contrary to the laws of his kingdom. The Pope confessed that his cause was just: all the lawyers in France were of that mind. But the Pope complained of the injuries done the see by King Henry. Francis answered, the Pope begun doing injuries: but King Henry moved, that, setting aside what was past, without asking reparation of either side justice might be done him; and if it was not done, he would trouble himself no more about it.

He afterwards charged King Francis, "that in several particulars he had not kept his promises to him." "He believed, that if he had pressed the Pope more, he would have yielded. It was said, King Henry was governed by his Council; whereas, he said, he governed them, and not they him. Upon this audience the Duke of Norfolk seemed troubled that the King was so passionate: he had advised the King, but in vain, to let the annats go still to Rome." This is put in the margin.

In another memorial, set next to the former, and, as it seems, writ soon after it, it is said, that the Empero

had sent word to the Queen and her daughter not to BOOK
 come to Spain till he had first got right to be done II.
 them : and that the people were in a disposition to 1531.
 join with any prince that would espouse their quarrel.
 This is said to be the general inclination of all sorts of
 people : for they apprehended a change of religion, and
 a war that would cut off their trade with the Nether-
 lands ; so that the new Queen was little beloved.

But now I must return, and set out the progress of The con-
 vocation
 so meets.
 matters that provoked the Pope and court of Rome
 much. I shall give first the several proceedings of the
 convocation.

The parliament had complained of the oath *ex officio*,
 by which the ordinaries obliged persons to answer to
 such accusations as were laid to their charge upon
 oath : and as they answered, charging themselves, they
 were obliged either to abjure or to burn. To this they
 added some other grievances. When they presented
 them to the King, he told them he could give no an-
 swer till he heard what the clergy would say to them.
 They also passed acts about some points that the clergy
 thought belonged to them ; as mortuaries, plurality of
 benefices, and clergymen taking farms.

The first motion made by the Lower House was con-
 cerning Tracy's testament ; who had left his soul to
 God through Jesus Christ, to whose intercession alone
 he trusted, without the help of any other saint : there-
 fore he left no part of his goods to any that should pray
 for his soul. This touching the clergy very sensibly,
 they begun with it ; and a commission was given for
 the raising his body.

In a following session, the Prolocutor complained of
 another testament, made by one Brown of Bristol, in
 the same strain. So, to prevent the spreading of such
 an example, it was ordered, that Tracy's body should
 be dug up and burnt. In the 84th session, the House

PART
III.

1531.

They treat
concerning
residence.

being thin, an order was made, that all the members should attend, for some constitutions were at that time to be treated of.

In the 91st session, which was in the end of February, the Prolocutor came up with a motion, that those who were presented to ecclesiastical benefices should not be obliged by their bishops to give any bond, obliging them under temporal punishment to residence : but to this no answer was given, nor was any rule made against it. There had been complaints made of clerks non-residents in the former session of parliament ; and it seems some bishops thought, the surest way to stop that clamour was to take bonds for residence. And though this complaint shows the ill temper of the Lower House, since they did not offer any other better remedy ; yet the Upper House offering no answer to it, seems to imply their approving of it.

In the 93d session, Latimer, who had been thrice required to subscribe some articles, refused to do it : he was excommunicated, and appointed to be kept in safe custody in Lambeth. Session 96, it was resolved, that if Latimer would subscribe some of the articles, he should be absolved. Upon that he submitted, confessed his error, and subscribed all the articles except two.

An answer
to the com-
plaints of
the Com-
mons.

In the 97th session, on the 12th of April 1532, the Archbishop proposed to them the preparing an answer to the complaints that the Commons had made to the King against the proceedings in their courts.

In the 98th session, the preamble of that complaint was read by Gardiner, with an answer that he had prepared to it. Then the two clauses of the first article, with answers to them, were also read and agreed to, and sent down to the Lower House. Latimer was also brought again before them, upon complaint of a letter that he had written to one Greenwood, in Cambridge.

In the 99th session, an answer to the complaint of the

Commons was read and agreed to, and ordered to be **BOOK** laid before the King; with which he was not satisfied. **II.**
 Latimer being called to answer upon oath, he appealed **1531.**
 to the King, and said, he would stand to his appeal.

Peyto and Elston, two brethren of the house of the **Proceed-**
 Observants in Greenwich, accused Dr. Curren for a ser- **ings against**
 mon preached there: but the Archbishop ordered them **heretics.**
 to be kept in custody, with the Bishop of St. Asaph,
 till they should be dismissed.

In the 100th session, the King sent a message by Gardiner, intimating, that he remitted Latimer to the Archbishop: and upon his submission, he was received to the sacraments. This was done at the King's desire: but some bishops protested, because this submission did not import a renunciation usual in such cases. After this, four sessions were employed in a further consideration of the answer to the complaints of the House of Commons.

In the 105th session, the Prolocutor brought up four draughts concerning the ecclesiastical authority, for making laws in order to the suppressing of heresy: but declared, that he did not bring them up as approved by the House; he only offered them to the bishops, as draughts prepared by learned men. He desired they would read them, and choose what was true out of them: but added, that he prayed, that, if they prepared any thing on the subject, it might be communicated to the Lower House. Some of these are printed: I shall there- **Rights of**
 fore only insert one in my Collection, because it is the **an English**
 shortest of them, and yet does fully set forth their de- **Convoca-**
 sign. It was formed in the Upper House, and agreed to **tion.**
 in the Lower, with two alterations. In it they pro- **Collect.**
 mise the King, "that for the future, such was the trust **Numb. 20.**
 "that they put in his wisdom, goodness, and zeal, and **The peti-**
 "his incomparable learning, far exceeding the learning **tion to the**
 "of all other princes that they had read of, that *during* **King.**

PART III. " *his natural life*, they should not enact, promulge, or
 1531. " put in execution, any constitution to be made by
 " them, unless the King by his royal assent did license
 " them so to do. And as for the constitutions already
 " made, of which the Commons complained, they would
 " readily submit the consideration of these *to the King*
 " *only* : and such of these as the King should judge
 " prejudicial and burdensome, they offered to moderate
 " or annul them according to his judgment. Saving to
 " themselves all the immunities and liberties granted to
 " the church, by the King and his progenitors, with all
 " such provincial constitutions as stand with the laws
 " of God, and *holy church*, and of the realm, which
 " they prayed the King to ratify : providing that, till
 " the King's pleasure should be made known to them,
 " all ordinaries might go on to execute their jurisdiction
 " as formerly." This did not pass easily ; there was
 great debating upon it : but upon adding the words,
during the King's natural life, which made it a tem-
 porary law ; and by adding the words, *holy church*,
 after the laws of God, which had a great extent ; this
 form was agreed to : but what effect this had, or whe-
 ther it was offered to the King, does not appear. The
 alterations that were afterwards made will appear to any
 who compares this with the submission ; of which a
 particular account will be found in my History.

The Bishop of London, presiding in the absence of
 the Archbishop, told them, that the Duke of Norfolk
 had signified to him, that the House of Commons had
 granted the King a fifteenth, to be raised in two years ;
 so he advised the clergy to be as ready as the laity had
 been to supply the King. The Prolocutor was sent
 down with this intimation : he immediately returned
 back, and proposed that they should consider of an an-
 swer to be made to the King, concerning the ecclesi-
 astical authority ; and that some might be sent to the

King, to pray him that he would maintain the liberties **BOOK**
of the church, which he and his progenitors had con- **II.**
firmed to them : and they desired, that the Bishops of **1531.**
London and Lincoln, with some abbots, the Dean of
the King's chapel, and Fox, his Almoner, would inter-
cede in behalf of the clergy ; which they undertook
to do.

In the 106th session, which was on the 10th of May, The sub-
mission
made to the
King, one
Bishop only
dissenting.
the Archbishop appointed a committee to go and treat
with the Bishop of Rochester at his house upon that
matter. In the 107th session, the 13th of May, the
Archbishop appointed the Chancellor of Worcester to
raise Tracy's body : then they agreed to the answer they
were to make to the King. In the 108th session, on
the 15th of May, the writ for proroguing the convoca-
tion was brought to the Archbishop : at the same time,
the Duke of Norfolk, the Marquis of Exeter, the Earl
of Oxford, the Lord Sands, Lord Chamberlain, and the
Lord Bullen, and Lord Rochford, were in a secret con-
ference with the Archbishop and Bishops for the space
of an hour ; when they withdrew, the Prolocutor and
clergy came up. The Archbishop asked, how they had
agreed to the schedule ; which, as appears, was the form
of the submission. The Prolocutor told him, how many
were for the affirmative, how many for the negative,
and how many were for putting off the three articles (of
the submission.) The Archbishop said, he expected
those lords would come back to him from the King,
and so sent them back to their House. These lords
came back to the chapter-house, and, after some discourse
with the bishops, they retired. After dinner, the sche-
dule was read in English ; and the Archbishop asked,
if they agreed to it ; they all answered they did agree
to it, only the Bishop of Bath dissented. Then he sent
it down by his Chancellor, to propose it to the Lower
House. After that, on the 15th of May, it seems the

PART schedule was sent back by the Lower House, though
III. that is not mentioned in the abstract that we have re-
 1531. maining : for that day the convocation was prorogued,
 and the next day the Archbishop delivered it to the
 King, as enacted and concluded by himself and others.
 The convocation was prorogued to the 5th of November.

And thus this great transaction was brought about in little more than a month's time ; the first motion towards it being made on the 12th of April, and it was concluded on the 15th of May. It appears, by their heat against Tracy's testament, and against Latimer, that they who managed the opposition that was made to it were enemies to every thing that looked towards a reformation. It seems Fisher did not protest ; for though, by their sending a committee to his house, it may be supposed he was sick at that time, yet he might have sent a proxy, and ordered a dissent to be entered in his name : and that not being done, gives ground to suppose that he did not vehemently oppose this submission. By it, all the opposition that the convocations would probably have given to every step that was made afterwards in the Reformation, was so entirely restrained, that the quiet progress of that work was owing chiefly to the restraint under which the clergy put themselves by their submission : and in this the whole body of this reformed church has cheerfully acquiesced, till within these few years, that great endeavours have been used to blacken and disgrace it.

I have seen no particular account how this matter went in the convocation at York, nor how matters went there ; save only that it was agreed to give a tenth. I have seen a letter of Magnus, one of the King's chaplains, who was required by Cromwell to go thither, where Dr. Lee was to meet him. There is no year added in the date of the letter ; but since he mentions

The proceedings at
 York.

the last convocation, that had given a great sum of **BOOK**
 money, and owned the King to be the Supreme, that fixes **II.**
 it to this session. He dates it from Marybone the 21st **1531.**
 of April, as it will be seen in the Collection. "He was **Collect.**
 " then in an ill state of health, but promises to be at **Numb. 21.**
 " York soon after the beginning of their convocation.
 " He complains, that he had no assistance at the last
 " meeting; and that the books, which the King had
 " promised should be sent after him, were not sent:
 " which made the King's cause to be the longer in
 " treating, before it came to a good conclusion. The
 " prelates and clergy there would not believe any re-
 " port of the acts passed at London, unless they were
 " showed them authentically, either under seal, or by
 " the King's letters. He hopes both these things, which
 " had been neglected formerly, would be now done;
 " otherwise the clergy in those parts would not proceed
 " to any strange acts: so he warns him, that all things
 " may be put in order."

Whatsoever it was that passed either in the one or the other convocation, the King kept it within himself for two years; for so long he was in treating terms with Rome: and if that had gone on, all this must have been given up. But when the final breach came on, which was after two years, it was ratified in parliament.

Before the next meeting, Warham died. He had all along concurred in the King's proceedings, and had promoted them in convocation; yet in the last year of his life, six months before his death, on the 9th of February 1531, he made a protestation of a singular nature, not in the House of Lords, but at Lambeth; and so secretly, that mention is only made of three notaries and four witnesses present at the making of it. It is to this effect; *that what statutes soever had passed, or were to pass in this present parliament, to the prejudice of the*

PART
III.

1531.

Collect.
Numb. 99.
Proceed-
ings during
the vacancy
of Canter-
bury.

Pope, or the apostolic see ; or that derogated from, or lessened the ecclesiastical authority, or the liberties of his see of Canterbury, he did not consent to them ; but did disown and dissent from them. This was found in the Longueville Library, and was communicated to me by Dr. Wake, the present Bishop of Lincoln. I leave it with the reader, to consider what construction can be made upon this ; whether it was in the decline of his life put on him by his Confessor, about the time of Lent, as a penance for what he had done ; or if he must be looked on as a deceitful man, that, while he seemed openly to concur in those things, he protested against them secretly. The instrument will be found in the Collection. Upon his death, the Prior and Convent of Christ's-Church of Canterbury deputed the Bishop of St. Asaph to preside in the convocation. On the 20th of February, in the 4th session, the Bishop of London moved, that the two Universities should be exempted from paying any part of the subsidy : the same was also desired for some religious orders ; and it was agreed to, Gardiner only dissenting as to the exemption of the religious orders. It may reasonably be supposed, that his opposing this was in compliance with the King, who began to show an aversion both to the monks and friars, seeing they were generally in the interests of Queen Katharine ; and Gardiner was the most forward in his compliances of all the clergy, Bonner only excepted, though the old leaven of popery was deep in them both.

In the 111th session, on the 26th of March, Latimer was again brought before them : and it was laid to his charge, that he had preached contrary to his promise. Gardiner inveighed severely against him ; and to him all the rest agreed. When the Prolocutor came up, the President spoke to him of the subsidy : then the matter of the King's marriage was brought before them. Gar-

Cranmer produced some instruments, which he desired them to read : they were the judgments of several Universities. Some doubted if it was safe to debate a matter that was then depending before the Pope ; but the President put an end to that fear, by producing a breve of the Pope's, in which all were allowed to deliver their opinions freely in that matter : so he exhorted them to examine the questions to be put to them carefully, that they might be prepared to give their opinions about them.

In the 112th session, the President produced the original instruments of the Universities of Paris, Orleans, Bologna, Padua, Bourges, and Tholouse ; (Angiers and Ferrara are not named ;) and, after much disputing, they were desired to deliver their opinions as to the consummation of the marriage. But because it was a difficult case, they asked more time. They had till four o'clock given them ; then there were yet more disputings : in conclusion, they agreed with the Universities. This was first put to them ; though in the instrument made upon it, it is mentioned after that which was offered to them in the next session.

On the 2d of April 1533, Cranmer being now consecrated, and present, two questions were proposed, and put to the vote. The first was, *Whether the prohibition to marry the brother's wife, the former marriage being consummated, was dispensable by the Pope ?* Or, as it is in the minutes, *Whether it was lawful to marry the wife of a brother dying without issue, but having consummated the marriage ? And if the prohibition of such a marriage was grounded on a divine law, with which the Pope could dispense, or not ?* There were present sixty-six divines, with the proxies of an hundred and ninety-seven absent bishops, abbots, and others : all agreed to the affirmative, except only nineteen.

The second question was, *Whether the consummation*

BOOK
II.
1531.

The convocation judges against the King's marriage.

Rymer.

PART of *Prince Arthur's marriage was sufficiently proved?*

III. This belonged to the canonists; so it was referred to

1531. the bishops and clergy of that profession, being forty-four in all, of whom one had the proxy of three bishops; all these, except five or six, affirmed it: of these, the Bishop of Bath and Wells was one. Of all this a public instrument was made.

In the account I formerly gave of this matter, I offered a conjecture concerning the constitution of the two Houses, that deans and archdeacons, who sate in their own right, were then of the Upper House; which I see was without any good ground. I likewise committed another error through inadvertence: for I said, the opinions of nineteen universities were read; whereas only six were read. And the nineteen, which I added to the number of the universities, was the number of those who did not agree to the vote.

The Archbishop, Cranmer, gives sentence against it.

These questions were next sent to the convocation of the province of York; where there were present twenty-seven divines, who had the proxies of twenty-four who were absent: and all these, two only excepted, agreed to the first question. There were likewise forty-four canonists present, with the proxies of five or six: to them the second question was put; and all these were for the affirmative, two only excepted. The whole representative of the church of England, in the convocation of the two provinces of Canterbury and York, did in this manner give their answer to the two questions put to them; upon which Cranmer wrote to the King on the 11th of April, complaining that the great cause of his matrimony had depended long: and upon that, he desired his licence to judge it; which the King readily granted. So he gave sentence, condemning it on the 23d of May: and then the King openly owned his second marriage; for the new Queen's big belly could be no longer concealed.

This was highly resented at Rome, as an open attempt upon the Pope's authority; and these steps, in their style, were called the *attentates*: so, considering the blind submission to the popes, in which the world had been kept for so many ages, it was no wonder to find the Imperialists call upon the Pope, almost in a tumultuary manner, to exert his authority to the full, when he saw it so openly affronted. And it is very probable, that if the Pope had not, with that violent passion, that Italians have for the advancing their families, run into the proposition for marrying his niece to the Duke of Orleans, he would have fulminated upon this occasion: but he, finding that might be broke off, if he had proceeded to the utmost extremities with King Henry, was therefore resolved to prolong the time, and to delay the final sentence; otherwise the matter would have been ended much sooner than it was.

Gardiner, Bryan, and Bennet were sent as ambassadors to the King of France, to Marseilles. Bonner was also sent thither on a more desperate service; for he was ordered to go and read the King's appeal from the Pope to a general council, in the Pope's own presence, at such time and in such a manner as the King's ambassadors should direct. Of the execution of this he gave the King a very particular account, in a letter to him, bearing date at Marseilles the 13th of November 1533: which the reader will find in the Collection, copied from the original. In it he tells the King,

"That, being commanded by his ambassadors to intimate to the Pope in person the provocations and appeals that he had made to a general council; he carried one Penniston, who it seems was a notary, with him, to make an act concerning it. They came to the Pope's palace on the 17th of November, in the morning. He found some difficulty in getting access; for he was told that the Pope was going to hold a con-

BOOK
II.

1531.

With that
the court of
Rome was
highly of-
fended.Cott. Libr.
Vitell. B.

14.

Collect.
Numb. 23.Bonner in-
timates the
King's ap-
peal to the
Pope.

PART III. 1531. "sistory, so that no other business was to interpose
 "yet he got into the Pope's chamber, where the Pope
 "was with the two Cardinals De Medicis and Lorrain
 "the Pope being appareled in his stole to go to the
 "consistory. The Pope quickly observed Bonner, for
 "he had prayed the Datary to let the Pope know he
 "desired to speak with him : the Datary said it was not
 "a proper time, but Bonner was resolved to go imme-
 "diately to him ; so he told the Pope of it ; who upon
 "that dismissed the Cardinals, and, going to a window,
 "he called him to him. Upon that Bonner told him the
 "message he had from the King to read before him,
 "making such apology, first in the King's name, and
 "then in his own, as was necessary to prepare him for
 "it. The Pope cringed in the Italian way, but said, he
 "had not time then to hear those papers ; but bade him
 "come again in the afternoon, and he would give him a
 "full audience. When he came again, he was, after
 "some others had their audience, called in ; Penniston
 "following him, whom the Pope had not observed in
 "the morning. So Bonner told him, that it was he who
 "had brought over his commission and orders ; upon
 "that the Pope called for his Datary, and for Simonetta
 "and Capisuchi. Till they came in, the Pope in dis-
 "course asked both for Gardiner and Brian, seeming
 "not to know that they were at Marseilles ; and he la-
 "mented the death of Bennet : he complained of the
 "King's using him as he did. Bonner, on the other
 "hand, complained of his unkind usage of the King ;
 "and that he had, contrary to his promise, avocated
 "the cause, when it was brought to the point of giving
 "sentence ; and had now retained the cause to Rome,
 "whither the King could not come personally, nor was
 "he bound to send a proctor : and he urged the matter
 "very close upon the Pope. He also complained, that,
 "the King's cause being just, and esteemed so by the

" best learned men in Christendom, yet the Pope kept BOOK
 " it so long in his hands. The Pope answered, that, had II.
 " not the Queen refused the judges as suspect, and taken 1531.
 " an oath that she expected no justice in the King's
 " dominions, he would not have avocated the cause : but
 " in that case, notwithstanding his promise, he was
 " bound to do it ; and the delay of the matter lay wholly
 " at the King's door, who did not send a proctor.
 " While Bonner was replying, the Datary came in, and
 " the Pope cut him short ; and commanded the Datary
 " to read the commission : which he did. The Pope
 " often interrupted the reading it with words that ex-
 " pressed a high displeasure : and when the appeal was
 " read to the next lawful general council to be held in
 " a proper place, he expressed with some rage his in-
 " dignation ; but restrained himself, and said, all that
 " came from the King was welcome to him ; but by his
 " gesture and manner it appeared he was much dis-
 " composed. Yet after that, he showed how willing he
 " was to call a council, but that the King seemed to
 " put it off ; he ordered the Datary to read it quite
 " through : in the end mention being made of the
 " Archbishop of Canterbury's sentence, he spake of that
 " with great contempt. He also observed, that the King
 " in words expressed respect to the church and to the
 " apostolic see, yet he expressed none to his person.
 " While they were thus in discourse, the King of France
 " came to see the Pope, who met him at the door. That
 " King seemed to know nothing of the business, though
 " Bonner believed he did know it. The Pope told him
 " what they were about ; they two continued in private
 " discourse about three quarters of an hour, and seemed
 " very cheerful : then that King went away, the Pope
 " conducted him to the door of the antechamber. When
 " the Pope came back, he ordered the Datary to read
 " out all that remained : the Pope often interrupting

PART " him as he read. When the first instrument was read
 III. " to an end, Bonner offered the two appeals that the

1531. " King had made to a general council: these the
 " Pope delivered to the Datary, that he might read
 " them.

It was re-
 jected by
 the Pope.

" When all was read, the Pope said he would consi-
 " der with the cardinals what answer was to be given
 " them; and seemed to think that the writings were to
 " remain with him: but Bonner pressing to have them
 " again, he said he would consider what answer he was
 " to give to that. So the Pope dismissed him, after an
 " audience that lasted three hours. The Datary told
 " Bonner, there was to be a consistory next day; after
 " that he might come to receive his answer. On the
 " 10th, a consistory was held in the afternoon; the Pope
 " was long taken up with the blessing of beads, and ad-
 " mitting persons of quality of both sexes to kiss his
 " foot. When that was over, he called Bonner in, and
 " the Pope began to express his mind towards the King,
 " that it was to do him all justice, and to please him all
 " he could; and though it had not been so taken, yet
 " he intended to continue in the same mind: but, ac-
 " cording to a constitution of Pope Pius, that con-
 " demned all such appeals, he rejected the King's appeal
 " to a general council, as frivolous and unlawful. As
 " for a general council, he would use all his diligence to
 " have it meet, as he had formerly done: but the calling
 " it belonged wholly to him. He said he would not re-
 " store the instruments; and told Bonner, that the
 " Datary should give him his answer in writing. Bon-
 " ner went to the Datary's chamber, where he found
 " the answer already written, but not signed by him:
 " next day he signed it, adding the *salvo* of answering
 " it more fully and more particularly, if it should be
 " thought meet.

" The Pope left Marseilles the next day, and went

Anti-Sanderus.

Collect.
Numb. 24.

Le Grand,
p. 571.
Bellay sent
over to the
King by
King Fran-
cis.

PART " at the interview studied nothing so much as to advance
 III. " Henry's matters : yet he heard that he complained of
 1531. " him as having done less than he expected, which he
 " took much amiss. It was agreed by the two Kings,
 " that a proposition should be set on foot for the Duke
 " of Orleans marrying the Pope's niece ; which had not
 " been before thought of. The matter was so far ad-
 " vanced, and the interview so settled, that Francis
 " could not afterwards put it off with honour ; all being
 " done pursuant to their first agreement at Calais. The
 " Pope promised to make no new step in King Henry's
 " matter, if he would do the same. But King Henry
 " did innovate in many particulars ; yet, contrary to all
 " men's expectations, he had effectually restrained the
 " Pope from showing his resentments upon it. And he
 " was in a fair way to have engaged the Pope against
 " the Emperor, if King Henry would have given him
 " any handle for it. Once Francis hoped to have
 " brought Henry to Marseilles ; but he judged that was
 " not fit for him, and promised to send the Duke of
 " Norfolk in his stead : for notwithstanding the sentence
 " passed at Rome, a remedy was proposed, if a person
 " was sent with full powers, as was expected. When
 " Gardiner came to Marseilles, he said he had orders to
 " do whatsoever Francis should direct him ; but indeed
 " he brought no such powers. The Pope was resolved
 " to do all that he could advise him for Henry's satis-
 " faction ; and Francis would enter upon none of his
 " own affairs till that was first settled : he still waited
 " for powers from England, but none were sent. This
 " might have provoked Francis to have been less zeal-
 " ous, but it did not : instead of sending what Francis
 " expected, there was an appeal made from the Pope to
 " a general council, which so highly provoked the Pope,
 " that what he had been labouring to do a whole week,
 " was pulled down in one hour. It was also an injury

" to Francis to use the Pope ill without his knowledge, BOOK
 " when he was in his house, doing that there which II.
 " they durst not have done any where else. This gave 1531.
 " great joy to the Spaniards ; and though the Pope of-
 " fered to put Leghorn, Parma, and Placentia, with
 " other places of greater importance, into Francis's hand,
 " yet upon the rupture with Henry he would treat of
 " nothing ; so he concluded the marriage, with no ad-
 " vantage to himself from it : and yet for all this zeal
 " and friendship that he had expressed to King Henry,
 " he had no thanks, but only complaints. He saw he
 " was disposed to suspect him in every thing, as in par-
 " ticular for his treating with the King of Scotland,
 " though by so doing he had taken him wholly out of
 " the Emperor's hands. He proposes of new to King
 " Henry, the same means that were proposed at Mar-
 " seilles, in order to the reconciling him to the Pope,
 " with some other motions, which he will see are good
 " and reasonable ; and upon that all that passed would
 " be easily repaired. He perceived plainly at Marseilles,
 " that the King's ambassadors had no intentions to
 " bring matters to an agreement ; and when he told
 " them that he saw there was no intention to make up
 " matters, they only smiled. It touched the King of
 " France very sensibly, to see all his friendship and
 " good offices to be so little understood and so ill re-
 " quited. He was offered the dutchy of Milan if he
 " would suffer the Emperor and the Pope to proceed
 " against the King of England : but he was now to
 " offer to King Henry, if he would reconcile himself to
 " the Pope, a league between the Pope and the two
 " Kings offensive and defensive. But if King Henry
 " would come into no such agreement, yet he was to as-
 " sure him, that he would still continue in a firm and
 " brotherly friendship with him ; and if by reason of
 " his marriage, and the censures that might be passed

PART "on that account, any Prince should make war upon
 III. "him, that he would assist him according to their
 1531. "treaties : and that he would so manage the King of
 "Scotland, that he should engage him into a defensive
 "league with him. In conclusion, he desired that some
 "other better instruments than the Bishop of Win-
 "chester might be employed ; for he thought he had no
 "good intentions, neither to the one nor the other of
 "them."

There is some reason to suspect that these instructions are not fully set forth by Le Grand ; for the best argument to persuade the King to come to terms of reconciliation, was to tell him what the Pope had said to him of the justice of his cause. It is certain that Francis owned that on other occasions : this makes it highly probable that it was set forth in these instructions ; so that I cannot help suspecting that some part of them is suppressed.

Cott. Libr.
 Nero B. 6.
 A representation
 made to the
 Emperor.

At this time, the King, in a letter to his ambassador that was at the Emperor's court, after he had ordered him to lay open the falsehood of the reports that had been carried to the Emperor, of Queen Katherine's being ill used ; and to complain of her obstinate temper, and of her insisting on her appeal to the Pope, after the law was passed against all such appeals : he adds, that, as he had told the Emperor's ambassador at his court, the Pope had to the French King confessed that his cause was just and lawful ; and that he had promised to him at Marseilles, that, if the King would send a proxy, he would give sentence for him in his principal cause : which the King refused to do, looking on that as a derogation from his royal dignity. The Pope, it seems, looked on his refusing to do this as a contempt, and pronounced sentence against him, notwithstanding his appeal to a general council, that had been personally intimated to him. This the King imputed to

his malice, and his design to support his usurped authority. BOOK-II.

The Bishop of Paris coming to London, had very long and earnest conferences with the King: in conclusion, the King promised, that if the Pope would supersede his sentence, the King would likewise supersede the separating himself entirely from his obedience: upon

1531.

Memoirs de Bell. p. 414. He prevailed much on the King to submit.

that, though it was in winter, he went immediately post to Rome. At the same time the King sent a letter to

A letter of the King's to his ambassadors at Rome. Rymer MSS.

his ambassadors at Rome: he tells them, "that, after the interview at Marseilles, he had heard both by

Collect. Numb. 25.

"Bonner and Sir Gregory, that the Pope had in a

"lively manner spoken to the Emperor in favour of the

"King's cause, and seemed more inclined than formerly

"to do him justice. He had proposed, that the King

"should send a mandate, desiring his cause might be

"tried in an indifferent place; upon which he would

"send a legate and two auditors to form the process,

"reserving the judgment to himself: or, that the King

"of France and he would concur to procure a general

"council, by concluding a truce for three or four years;

"upon which he would call one, and leave the King's

"cause to be judged in it. The same overtures were

"made to the King by the Pope's Nuncio. He pre-

"tended that Sir Gregory had made them to the Pope

"in the King's name; and that the Pope had agreed to

"them: yet the King had never sent any such orders

"to Sir Gregory, but rather to the contrary. Yet since

"the Pope in these overtures showed better inclinations

"than formerly, which indeed he was out of hope of, he

"ordered thanks to be given him in his name. The

"King asked nothing in return for all the service he

"had done him and the see, but justice according to

"the laws of God, and the ordinances of the holy coun-

"cils; which if he would now do speedily, setting

"aside all delays, he might be sure that he and his

PART " kingdom would be as loving to him and his see, as
 III. " they had been formerly accustomed to be : but for the
 1531. " truce, how desirous soever he was of outward quiet,
 " yet he could not set himself to procure it till he had
 " first peace in his own conscience, which the Pope
 " might give him ; and then he would use his best en-
 " deavours for a general peace with the King of France,
 " from whom he would never separate himself. He
 " therefore charges them to press the Pope to remit the
 " fact, to be tried within the kingdom, according to the
 " old sanctions of general councils. If the Pope would
 " grant his desire, he would dispose all his allies to con-
 " cur in the service of that see. He could not consent
 " to let his cause be tried out of the realm : it was con-
 " trary both to his prerogative, and to the laws of his
 " kingdom ; and by his coronation oath he was bound
 " to maintain those. So, without the consent of his par-
 " liament, he could not agree to it ; and he was sure
 " they would never consent to that. He hoped the
 " Pope would not compel him to do things prejudicial to
 " the papal dignity, as it was then exercised, which, un-
 " less he were forced to it by the Pope's conduct to-
 " wards him, he had no mind to do. The Pope had
 " said to Sir Gregory, that, by their laws, the Pope
 " could not dispense in such a marriage unless there
 " was an urgent cause pressing it : and the clearing this
 " point he thought would more certainly advance the
 " King's cause, than the opinion of lawyers and divines,
 " that the Pope could not dispense with it. The Em-
 " peror had said to the Pope, that there was an ex-
 " tremely bloody war at that time between England and
 " Spain ; for the pacifying which, the dispensation al-
 " lowing the marriage was granted : whereas in the
 " league signed by his father, and by Ferdinand and
 " Isabella, upon which the dispensation was obtained,
 " no such thing was pretended ; the marriage was agreed

"to for the continuance and augmentation of their BOOK
 "amity, and upon the account of the good qualities of II.
 "the Queen: it was also plainly expressed in that league, 1531.
 "that her former marriage was consummated. So the
 "dispensation was granted without any urgent cause:
 "and therefore, by the Pope's own concession, it could
 "not be valid. He sent to Rome an attested transcript
 "of that league: so if the Pope would refer the judging
 "in this matter to the church of England, and ratify
 "the sentence given in it, he will not only acquire the
 "obedience of us and of our people, but pacify the dis-
 "putes that have been raised, to the quiet of all Chris-
 "tendom. He concludes, that if the Pope seemed dis-
 "posed to be benevolent to the King, they were not to
 "declare all this as his final answer, but to assure him,
 "that he would study by all honourable ways to concur
 "with the Pope's towardly mind, if he will earnestly
 "apply himself and persevere in such opinion as may
 "be for the acceleration of the said cause." This is all
 that I can find of the submission that he offered; but
 how much further his promises sent by the Bishop of
 Paris went, does not appear to me.

To quicken the court of France to interpose effectually Duke of
 with the Pope, to bring this matter to the conclusion Norfolk's
 that all the Papists of England laboured earnestly for, letter to
 the Duke of Norfolk wrote on the 27th of January a Montmo-
 very full letter on the subject to Montmorancy. rancy.
 "He Le Grand,
 "was glad that the Bishop of Paris was sent to Rome, p. 588.
 "with instructions expressing the entire union that was
 "between the two Kings. He wished he might suc-
 "ceed; for if the Pope would persist in his obstinacy
 "to favour the Emperor, and to oppress the King in his
 "most just cause, an opposition to his authority would
 "be unavoidable: and it would give occasions to many
 "questions, greatly to his prejudice, and against his
 "usurpations. It began to be believed, that the Pope

PART " had no authority out of Rome, any more than any
 III. " other bishop has out of his diocese: and that this
 1531. " usurped authority grew by the permission of princes,
 " blinded by popes; who, contrary to the laws of God,
 " and the good of the church, had maintained it. To
 " support this, many clear texts of Scripture were
 " brought, with reasons founded on them: and many
 " histories were alleged to prove, that popes themselves
 " were made by the emperors; and that their authority
 " was only suffered, but not granted nor confirmed by
 " emperors or kings. Of all this the bishops, and other
 " doctors, had made such discoveries, that he himself,
 " and other noblemen, as well as the body of the peo-
 " ple, were so convinced of it, that, if the King would
 " give way to it, (which, if no interposition saves it,
 " probably he will do,) this present parliament will with-
 " draw from the Pope's obedience; and then every thing
 " that depends on it will be hated and abhorred by the
 " whole nation: and other states and kingdoms may
 " from thence be moved to do the same. He, out of
 " the friendship that was between them, gave him this
 " advertisement. He apprehended some ill effects
 " from the readiness the King of France had expressed
 " to favour the Pope, even to the prejudice of his own
 " authority: for he had taken a bull to do justice in
 " his own kingdom; as if he had not full authority to
 " do that without a bull. The Pope and his successors
 " might make this a precedent for usurping on the
 " royal authority. He also complains, that though
 " their King had promised to the Earl of Rochford,
 " that Beda, who had calumniated the King so much,
 " and was his enemy in his just cause, should be ba-
 " nished, not only from Paris, but out of his kingdom;
 " yet he was now suddenly recalled. He wishes these
 " things may be considered in time; he does not pro-
 " pose that the King of France should turn the Pope's

“ enemy ; but if there came a rupture between the BOOK
 “ King and the Pope, that he would not so favour the II.
 “ Pope, as to give him more boldness in executing his 1531.
 “ malice against the King, or his subjects : and that
 “ they might not be deceived by his promises, as if he
 “ would enable Francis to recover his dominions in.
 “ Italy, if he should be thereby engaged to lose the
 “ friendship of the King and his allies.”

This came in time to quicken the court of France ; Cott. Lib. Vitell. B. 14.
 for, by a letter writ from Rome on the 20th of February, it appears, that the Pope was at that time in great The Pope was in great anxiety.
 anxiety. He was pressed hard by the Imperialists on the one hand, and he saw the danger of losing England on the other hand. To some about him he expressed a great inclination to be reconciled to the King : he sent secretly for some great lawyers ; they were positive that the King's cause was just, and that his second marriage was good. But now the matter being brought to a crisis, I shall give it in the words of Du Bellay, who no doubt had his information from his brother. “ King Mem. Du Bellay, p. 414, 415, 416.
 “ Henry, upon the remonstrances that the Bishop of
 “ Paris made to him, condescended, that, if the Pope
 “ would supersede the sentence till he sent judges to
 “ hear his matter, he would supersede the executing
 “ that which he was resolved to do ; which was, to se
 “ parate himself entirely from obedience to the see of
 “ Rome. And the Bishop of Paris offering to undertake
 “ the journey to Rome, he assured him, that when he
 “ obtained that which he went to demand there, he
 “ would immediately send him sufficient powers to con-
 “ firm that which he had promised ; trusting in him,
 “ by reason of the great friendship that he had for so
 “ long a time borne him ; for he had been ambassador
 “ in his court for two years.

“ It was a very severe winter ; but the Bishop thought
 “ the trouble was small, so he might accomplish that

PART " which he went upon. So he came in good time to
III. " Rome, before any thing was done ; and, in an audience

1531. " ence in the consistory, he gave an account of the
Bellay was " which he had obtained of the King of England, for
to go to " the good of the church. The proposition was judged
Rome, in " reasonable, and a time was assigned him for getting
hopes to " the King's answer : so he dispatched a courier to the
make up " King, with a charge to use such diligence, that he
the breach. " might return within the time limited.

The final " The day that was set for the return of the messenger
sentence " being come, and the courier not come back, the Imperialists
given in " pressed in consistory, that the Pope should
great haste. " give sentence. The Bishop, on the other hand, pressed
" both the Pope in particular, and all the cardinals
" that they would continue the time only for six days
" alleging, that some accident might have happened to
" the courier : the sea might not be passable, or the
" wind contrary ; so that, either in going or coming, the
" courier might be delayed : and since the King had
" patience for six years, they might well grant him
" delay for six days. He made these remonstrances in
" full consistory ; to which many of those who saw the
" clearest, and judged the best of things, condescended
" but the greater number prevailed over the lesser number
" ber of those, who considered well the prejudice that
" was like to happen to the church by it ; and they
" went on with that precipitation, that they did in one
" consistory that which could not be done in three
" consistories ; and so the sentence was fulminated.

The courier " Two days had not passed, when the courier came
came two " with the powers and declarations from the King of
days too " England, of which the Bishop had assured them
late. " This did much confound those who had been for the
" precipitating the matter. They met often, to see if
" they could redress that which they had spoiled ; but
" they found no remedy. The King of England, seeing

“ with what indignity he was used, and that they showed **BOOK**
 “ as little regard to him as if he had been the meanest **II.**
 “ person in Christendom, did immediately withdraw **1531.**
 “ himself and his kingdom from the obedience of the
 “ church of Rome ; and declared himself to be, under
 “ God, the *Head of the Church of England.*”

We have a further account of this transaction in Le Grand, p. 630, 631. Further proofs of this matter.
 the letters that Mr. Le Grand has published. On the
 22d of February, Raince, the French ambassador, wrote
 from Rome a letter full of good hopes : and it seems the
 Bishop of Paris wrote in the same strain ; but his letter
 of the 23d of March is very different from that : it was
 on the same day that the consistory was held. “ There
 “ were two and twenty cardinals present when sentence
 “ was given ; by which King Henry’s marriage with
 “ Queen Katherine was declared good and valid, and
 “ the issue by it lawful. Upon hearing the news of
 “ this, he went and asked the Pope about it, who told
 “ him it was true ; but that though some would have
 “ had it immediately intimated, he had delayed the or-
 “ dering that till after Easter. He, with the other
 “ French ambassadors, made no answer to the Pope :
 “ only the Bishop of Paris told him, he had no other
 “ business there ; so he must return home again. They
 “ did not put the Pope in mind of the promises and as-
 “ surances he had given them to the contrary, when
 “ they saw it was to no purpose ; and it was not easy to
 “ say such things as the occasion required : but the Bi-
 “ shop intended to speak more plainly to the Pope
 “ when he should take his leave of him, which would
 “ be within three or four days. He adds, that, for some
 “ reasons, which he would tell the French King, they
 “ were in doubt whether that which was done was not
 “ conform to a secret intention of the King’s, that was
 “ not made known to them. He apprehended, if he
 “ staid longer there, it might give the King of England

PART III. "cause of suspicion: for he had by his last letters to
 1531. "him given him assurances, upon which perhaps he
 "had dismissed his parliament; for which he would be
 "much displeased with the Bishop. He desires the
 "King will give advice of this with all diligence to
 "King Henry; and then all the world would see, that
 "the King had done all that was possible for him to do,
 "both to serve his friend, and to prevent the great mis-
 "chief that might follow to the church, and to all Chris-
 "tendom: for there was not any one thing omitted
 "that could have been done. The Imperialists were
 "running about the streets in great bodies, crying, *Em-
 pire and Spain*, as if they had got a victory; and had
 "bonfires and discharges of cannon upon it. The Car-
 "dinals Trevulce, Rodolphe, and Priane were not of
 "that number; others had not behaved themselves so
 "well as was expected. Raince, one of the ambassadors,
 "said, he would give himself to the devil if the Pope
 "should not find a way to set all right that is now
 "spoiled: he pressed the other ambassadors to go again
 "to the Pope for that end, it being a maxim in the
 "canon-law, that matrimonial causes are never so
 "finally judged but that they may be reviewed: they
 "were assured that the Pope was surprised in this, as
 "well as he had been in the first sentence passed in
 "this matter. The Pope had been all that night ad-
 "vising with his doctors how to find a remedy, and
 "was in great pain about it: upon the knowledge of
 "this they were resolved to go to him, and see if any
 "thing was to be expected. In a postscript, he tells
 "the King that he ought not to think it strange, if in
 "their last letters they gave other hopes of the opinions
 "of the cardinals, than appeared now by their votes:
 Mel. Hist. "they took what they wrote to him from what they
 p. 117. "said, which they heard; and not from their thoughts,
 "which they could not know." By a letter that Pom-

pone Trevulce wrote from Lyons to the Bishop of BOOK
 Auxerre, it appears, that the Bishop of Paris passed II.
 through Lyons in his return on the 14th, two days be- 1531.
 fore. "In it he gave him the same account of the final
 " sentence, that was formerly related : the Bishop said
 " to him, it was not the Pope's fault, for he was for a de-
 " lay ; and if they had granted a delay of six days, the
 " King of England would have returned to the obedi-
 " ence of the apostolic see, and left his cause to be
 " proceeded in according to justice ; but the Imperial-
 " ists and their party in the consistory pressed the
 " matter so, that they would admit of no delay : but
 " when after a day the courier came, the Imperialists
 " themselves were confounded. He adds one thing
 " that the Bishop told him of his brother the Cardinal,
 " that he pressed the delay so earnestly, that he was re-
 " proached for it, and called a Frenchman : he avowed
 " that he was a servant to the Most Christian King,
 " and that the King of France, and his predecessors,
 " had never done any thing but good to the apostolic
 " see."

And now I have laid together all the proceedings in Reflections
 the matters relating to the King's divorce, and his on this
 breach with the court of Rome. In opening all this, I breach.
 have had a great deal of light given me by the papers
 that Mr. Le Grand has published, and by the book that
 he gave me ; for which, whatever other differences I
 may have with him, I return him in this public way
 my hearty thanks. There appears to have been a signal
 train of providence in the whole progress of this matter,
 that thus ended in a total rupture. The court of Rome,
 being overawed by the Emperor, engaged itself far at
 first ; but when the Pope and the King of France were
 so entirely united as they knew they were, it seems they
 were under an infatuation from God to carry their au-
 thority so far at a time, in which they saw the King of

PART III. England had a parliament inclined to support him in his breach with Rome. It was but too visible, that the King would have given all up, if the Pope would have done him but common justice. But when the matter was brought so near a total union, an entire breach followed, in the very time in which it was thought all was made up. Those who favoured the Reformation saw all their hopes as it seemed blasted ; but of a sudden all was revived again. This was an amazing transaction ; and how little honour soever this full discovery of all the steps made in it does to the memory of King Henry, who retained his inclinations to a great deal of popery to the end of his life ; yet it is much to the glory of God's providence, that made the persons most concerned to prevent and hinder the breach, to be the very persons that brought it on, and in a manner forced it.

The sentence was given at Rome on the 23d of March, on the same day in which the act of the succession to the crown of England did pass here in England : and certainly the parliament was ended before it was possible to have had the news from Rome of what passed in the consistory on the 23d of March ; for it was prorogued on the 30th of March. So that if King Henry's word had been taken by the Pope and the consistory, he seems to have put it out of his power to have made it good, since it is scarce possible to think, that a parliament that had gone so far in the breach with Rome, could have been prevailed on to undo all that they had been doing for four years together.

All in England concur to renounce the Pope's authority.

Nothing material passed in convocation before the 31st of March, and then the Actuary exhibited the answer of the Lower House to this question, *Whether the Bishop of Rome has any greater jurisdiction given him by God in the holy Scriptures, within the kingdom of England, than any other foreign bishop ?* There were thirty-two for the negative, four for the affirmative, and

one doubted. It was a thin house, and no doubt many absented themselves on design : but it does not appear how this passed in the Upper House, or whether it was at all debated there ; for the prelates had by their votes in the House of Lords given their opinions already in the point. The convocation at York had the same position, no more made a question, put to them on the 5th of May : there the Archbishop's Presidents were deputed by him to confirm and fortify this. After they had examined it carefully, they did all unanimously, without a contrary vote, agree to it ; upon which an instrument was made by the Archbishop, and sent to the King, which will be found in the Collection, as it was taken out of the Register of York.

BOOK
II.
1531.

Collect.
Numb. 26.

The King sent the same question to the University of Oxford, and had their answer. That part of the King's letter that relates to this matter, and the University's answer, were sent me, taken from the Archives there, by the learned Mr. Bingham ; which will be found in the Collection. The King required them to examine the question sent by him to them, concerning the power and primacy of the Bishop of Rome, and return their answer under the common seal, with convenient speed ; according to the sincere truth. Dated from Greenwich the 18th day of May. The answer is directed to all the sons of their mother church, and is made in the name of the Bishop of Lincoln their Chancellor, and the whole convocation of all doctors, and masters-regents, and non-regents. " It sets forth, that whereas the King had received the complaints and petitions of his parliament against some intolerable foreign exactions ; and some controversies being raised concerning the power and authority of the Bishop of Rome, the King, that he might satisfy his people, but not break in upon any thing declared in the Scriptures, (which he will be always most ready to defend with his blood,) had

Collect.
Numb. 27.

PART "sent this question to them, (setting it down in the
 III. "terms in which it was proposed to the Convocation.

1531. "They upon this, to make all the returns of duty and
 "obedience to the King, had brought together the
 "whole faculty of divinity : and for many days they
 "had searched the Scriptures, and the most approved
 "commentators ; and had collated them diligently, and
 "had held public disputations on the matter : and at
 "last they had all unanimously agreed, that the Bishop
 "of Rome has no greater jurisdiction given him by
 "God, in the holy Scriptures, in this kingdom of Eng
 "land, than any other foreign bishop. This determi
 "nation, made according to the statutes of their Univer
 "sity, they affirm and testify as true, certain, and agree
 "ing to the holy Scriptures." Dated on the 27th of
 June 1534. Here was a long deliberation ; it lasted
 above five weeks after the King's letter, and was a very
 full and clear determination of the point.

To this I shall add the fullest of all the subscriptions,
 instruments, and oaths that was made, pursuant to these
 laws and decrees of convocation. I have seen several
 others to the same purpose ; of which Rymer has pub
 lished many instruments, all from page 487 to page
 527, of *ecclesiastics*, *regulars* as well as *seculars*, *men
 dicants*, and *carthusians* : but that from the Prior and
 Chapter of Worcester being much the fullest of them
 all, I shall only insert it in my Collection, and leave
 out all the rest, that I may not weary the reader with a
 heavy repetition of the various forms, in which some
 expatiated copiously, to show their zeal for the King's
 authority, and against the papacy ; which was looked on
 then as the distinguishing character of those who de
 signed to set on a further reformation : whereas those
 who did adhere to their former opinions, thought it
 enough barely to sign the proposition, and to take the
 oath prescribed by law.

Collect.
 Numb. 28.

There was likewise an order published, but how soon it does not appear to me; Strype says, in June 1534; it was before Queen Anne's tragical fall, directing the bidding prayers for the King, as the only and Supreme Head of this catholic Church of England; then for Queen Anne, and then for the Lady Elizabeth, daughter to them both, our Princess; and no further in the presence

BOOK
II.

1531.

An order
for the bidding of
prayers
and preaching.

of the King and Queen: but in all other places they were to pray for all archbishops and bishops, and for the whole clergy, and such as shall please the preacher to name of his devotion; then for all the nobility, and such as the preacher should name; then for the souls of them that were dead, and such of them as the preacher shall name. Every preacher was ordered to preach once, in the greatest audience, against the usurped authority of the Bishop of Rome; and he was left after that to his liberty: no preachers were in the pulpit to inveigh against, or to deprave one another; if they had occasion to complain, they were to do it to the King, or the bishop of the diocese. They were not to preach for or against purgatory, the honouring of saints, that faith only justifieth, to go on pilgrimages, or to support miracles: these things had occasioned great dissensions, but those were then well pacified. They were to preach the words of Christ, and not mix with them men's institutions, or to make God's laws and men's laws of equal authority; or to teach that any man had power to dispense with God's law. It seems there was a sentence of excommunication with relation to the laws and liberties of the church published once a year, against all such as broke them; this was to be no more published. The collects for the King and Queen by name were to be said in all high masses: they were likewise to justify to the people the King's last marriage, and to declare how ill the King had been used by the Pope in all that matter, with the proofs of the unlawfulness of his for-

PART
III.

1531.

Collect.
Numb. 29.

mer marriage; and a long deduction was made of the process at Rome, and of all the artifices used by the Pope to get the King to subject himself to him, which I need not relate: it contains the substance of the whole cause, and the order of the process formerly set forth. I have put it in the Collection. All that is particular in it is, that the King affirms, that a decretal bull was sent over, decreeing, that if the former marriage was proved, and if it did appear, that as far as presumptions could prove it, that it was consummated, that marriage was to be held unlawful and null. This bull, after it was seen by the King, was, by the Bishop of Rome's commandment, embezzled by the cardinals. He adds another particular, which I find no where but here; that the Pope gave out a sentence in the manner of an excommunication and interdiction of him and his realm; on which complaint being made, as being contrary to all law and right, the fault was laid on a new officer lately come to the court; who ought to have been punished for it, and the process was to cease: but though this was promised to the King's agents, yet it went on, and was set up in Flanders. Perhaps the words in the Bishop of Paris's last letter, that the Pope was surprised in the last sentence, as he had been in the first, are to be explained and applied to this. He also mentions the declarations that the Pope had made to the French King and his council, of what he would gladly do for the King, allowing the justness of his cause; and that he durst not do it at Rome for fear of the Emperor, but that he would come and do it at Marseilles; and therefore he promised to that King to give judgment for the King: so he would send a proxy, which he knew before that he would not do, nor was he bound to do it.

Thus the King took care to have his cause to be fully set forth to all his own subjects: his next care was to have it rightly understood by all the Princes of Europe

I have found the original instructions that he gave to **BOOK**
 Paget, then one of the clerks of the signet, whom he **II.**
 sent to the King of Poland, and the Dukes of Pome- **1531.**
 rania and Prussia, and to the cities of Dantzic, Stetin,
 and Coningsburg; and it is to be supposed, that others
 were sent to other princes and cities with the like in-
 structions, though they have not come in my way. I
 have put them in the Collection. By these,

Collect.
 Numb. 30.

“ Their old friendship was desired to be renewed ; Instruc-
 “ the rather, because the King saw they were setting tions given
 “ themselves to find out the truth of God’s word, and to Paget
 “ the justice of his laws ; and the extirpation of such sent to
 “ corrupt errors and abuses, by which the world has some
 “ been kept slaves under the yoke of the Bishop of Northern
 “ Rome, more than the Jews were under the ceremonies courts.
 “ of Moses’s law. The King orders Paget to let them
 “ understand his great desire to promote, not only a
 “ friendship with them, but the common good of all
 “ Christendom : he orders him to give them an account
 “ of the whole progress of his cause of matrimony, with
 “ the intolerable injuries done him by the Bishop of
 “ Rome, and the state in which that matter then stood.
 “ He was first to show them the justice of the King’s
 “ cause, then to open the steps in which it had been
 “ carried on. Here all the arguments against his mar-
 “ riage are stated, to make it appear to be contrary both
 “ to the laws of God, of nature, and of men. In this the
 “ King did not follow his own private opinion, nor that
 “ of the whole clergy of his realm ; but that of the most
 “ famous universities of Christendom : and therefore,
 “ by the consent of his whole parliament, and by the
 “ sentence of the Archbishop of Canterbury, he has,
 “ for the discharge of his own conscience, and the good
 “ of his people, and that he might have a lawful suc-
 “ cessor to rule over them, separated himself from the
 “ Princess Dowager, and was then married to Queen

PART " Anne ; of whom follows a very exalted character, set
 III. " ting forth the purity of her life, her constant virginity
 1531. " her maidenly and womanly pudicity, her soberness
 " her chasteness, her meekness, her wisdom, her descent
 " of noble parentage, her education in all good and law
 " ful shows and manners, her aptness to procreation o
 " children, with her other infinite good qualities, which
 " were more to be esteemed than only progeny. If an
 " should object to this second marriage, as contrary t
 " the Pope's laws ; he asserts, that every man's privat
 " conscience is to him the supreme court for judgment
 " so the King was satisfied in his own conscience, tha
 " being enlightened by the Spirit of God, and afterwar
 " by the means formerly set forth, he was judged to b
 " at liberty from his former marriage, and free to con
 " tract a new one. The King also took great pains t
 " satisfy the world, by long travel and study, with in
 " estimable cost and charges, though he had no fruit
 " from it all. Upon this head, Paget was to set fort
 " the Pope's ungodly demeanor in the whole progres
 " of the King's cause ; keeping him off by delays fo
 " seven years and more. At first the Pope, instead o
 " judging the matter himself, sent a commission t
 " England to try it, with full powers, pretending tha
 " it could not be judged at Rome. He gave with thes
 " a decretal bull, in which he pronounced sentence, tha
 " the King might (*convolare ad secundas nuptias*) marr
 " another wife ; yet he gave the Legate secret direction
 " not to proceed by virtue of the decretal bull, nor t
 " give sentence. He wrote a letter to the King with h
 " own hand, in which he approved of the King's caus
 " and promised to the King, on the word of the Pop
 " that he would not avocate the cause, but leave it in i
 " due course ; yet afterwards, contrary to his conscienc
 " and knowledge, he decreed several citations again
 " the King to appear at Rome, to the subversion of th

" royal dignity : or to send a proxy, which cannot be
 " justified by any colour of reason. He cites the Coun-
 " cils of Nice, Afric, and Milevi, against appeals to re-
 " mote places. It was not reasonable to send original
 " instruments, and other documents, to a distant place ;
 " nor, in a matter of conscience, could a man give such
 " a power to a proxy, by which he was bound to stand
 " to that which he should agree to. It was fit that all
 " princes should consider what an attempt this made
 " upon their dignity, for the Pope to pretend that he
 " could oblige them to abandon their kingdoms, and
 " come and appear before him ; by which he might de-
 " pose kings, or rule them according to his own plea-
 " sure : so that all this was not only unjust, but null of
 " itself. Dr. Karn being then at Rome, as the King's
 " subject, he offered a plea excusatory ; yet this was not
 " regarded by the Dean of the Rota, who in that acted
 " as he was directed by the Pope : pretending he had
 " no powers from the King, which by law was not ne-
 " cessary for an *excusator*. Karn had appealed to the
 " Pope : to this Capisucchi gave an ambiguous answer,
 " promising to give a more determinate one afterwards,
 " which yet he never did ; but upon a second appeal
 " the cause was brought into the Consistory, and there
 " it was judged that Karn could not be heard, unless he
 " had a proxy from the King : and when Karn objected
 " that such proceeding was against law, the Pope an-
 " swered, that he might judge all things according to
 " his own conscience ; and so they resolved to proceed
 " in the main cause. At that time the King's ambas-
 " sadors at Rome showed the Pope the determination of
 " the universities of Paris and Orleans, with the opi-
 " nions of the most learned men in France and Italy,
 " condemning the Pope's proceedings as unjust and
 " null ; the words of their opinion being inserted in the
 " instructions : yet the Pope still went on, and sent out

BOOK
II.
1531.

PART "slandrous breves against the King, and designed to
 III. "excommunicate him. To prevent that, the King did
 1531. "order a provocation and appeal to be made from the
 "Pope to a general council, and caused it to be inti-
 "mated to the Pope, but he would not admit it; and
 "pretended, that, by a bull of Pope Pius's, that was con-
 "demned: and that he was superior to all general coun-
 "cils. He rejected it arrogantly, saying, they were
 "heretics and traitors to his person who would appeal
 "from him to any general council. It appeared evi-
 "dently that the Pope, for the defence of his own glori-
 "and ambition, regarded not what injuries he did to
 "Christian princes: so they were all obliged now to be
 "on their guard against such invasions of their autho-
 "rity. For these reasons the King was resolved to re-
 "duce that exorbitant power which the Pope had as-
 "sumed within due limits: so that in his dominion
 "he shall exercise no other jurisdiction than what
 "granted to him by express words of Scripture. Paget
 "was to open all these things to those princes and states
 "desiring that they would adhere to the King in this
 "matter, till it should come to be treated of in a gen-
 "eral council: and in the mean time to give him the
 "best assistance and advice, especially in some articles
 "of which a schedule was to be given him, signed with
 "the King's hand, which he was to communicate
 "them as he should find it convenient. They related
 "to some abuses and customs which seemed necessary
 "to be reformed: and if they would propose any other
 "Paget was to receive their mind, and to assure them
 "that the King, as he desired their assistance in his
 "causes and quarrels, so he would kindly admit
 "whatsoever they should propose, and would endeav-
 "our to extirpate all abuses against God's word and
 "laws; and to do all that lay in him for the reform-
 "tion thereof, for the maintenance of God's word

"the faith of Christ, and the welfare of Christen-
dom." BOOK II.

But because the King did not know what the mind 1534.
of those princes might be, nor how far they were devoted to the Pope, Paget was to try to find out their inclinations, before he should deliver the King's letters to them; and so to proceed according to his discretion, to deliver, or not to deliver his letters, or to show his instructions to them. What followed upon this, and how it was executed, does not appear.

The judicious and diligent Sechendorf, in his History L. iii. §. 6.
Par. 16.
Add.
Negotia-
tions in
Germany.
of Lutheranism, gives an account of a negociation of Paget's, two years before this. Cranmer, who was then the King's ambassador at the Emperor's court, met with John Frederick, Elector of Saxony, at Noremberg, who had secretly left the diet of Ratisbon; and there he delivered letters from the King, both to the Elector, to the Duke of Lunenberg, and to the Prince of Anhalt; which contained only a general offer of friendship. Cranmer came the next day to the Elector, who had two of his ministers about him, and asked him many questions concerning their agreement with the state of religion, the Turkish war, and the church-lands, which (as they heard) they had seized on. He said great things of the King, and of the aid he had offered the Emperor against the Turk, in conjunction with the French King. He asked where Paget was, whom the King had sent to the Elector. General answers were made to all his questions; and for Paget, he had been with the Elector the former year. This passed on to the 15th of July 1532. Four days after this, he came privately to Spalatin, one of the Elector's secretaries, and assured him, that both the King and the French King would assist the Elector and his allies in the matter of religion. In August after that, Paget came to the Elector, who proposed many things to him concerning religion: but the princes

PART III. had then come to an agreement with the Emperor ; so they could enter into no treaty at that time. Only John Frederick did, in a writing under his own hand, offer the scheme of that which was afterwards proposed in their name to the King.

Advices offered the King.

Collect. Numb. 31.

All these negotiations were set on foot, pursuant to a paper of advices offered to the King by Cromwell ; in which there are divers marginal notes writ in the King's own hand, which will be found in the Collection. "First, "all the bishops were to be sent for, especially those "nearest the court, to examine them, Whether they "can prove, that the Pope is above the general council, "or the council above him ? And whether, by the law "of God, he has any authority in England ? Next, they "are to be charged to preach this to the people ; and to "show, that the Pope's authority was an usurpation, "grown up by the sufferance of princes. This ought to "be preached continually at Paul's Cross ; and the Bishop of London was to suffer none to preach there "but those who will set this forth. The same order "was to be given to all other bishops, and to the rulers "of the four orders of friars, particularly to the Friar Observants, and to all abbots and priors. The King's appeal was also to be set up on every church-door in England, that so none may pretend ignorance ; as also the act against appeals to Rome. It was also proposed, that copies of the King's appeal might be sent to other realms, particularly to Flanders. A letter was also proposed, complaining of all the injuries done the King by the Pope ; to be written to him by all the lords spiritual and temporal. The King writes on the margin, *Not yet done ; nor can it well be done before the parliament.* To send spies into Scotland, to see what practices were there : on the margin the King's orders ; *Letters to be written to the Lord Dacres, the Duke of Norfolk, and Sir Thomas Clifford.*

"To send to the Kings of Poland and Hungary, the
 "Dukes of Saxony and Bavaria, the Landgrave of BOOK II.
 "Hesse, and the three ecclesiastical electors: on the 1534.
 "margin the King writes, *In the King's arbitrement.*
 "This, it seems, gave the occasion of sending Paget.
 "The like proposed for the Hans towns: on the mar-
 "gin, in the King's hand, *To know this of the King.*
 "To remember the merchant-adventurers, chiefly those
 "of Brabant: on the margin, *This is already done.*
 "Then it is proposed, that an order be given for esta-
 "blishing the Princess Dowager's house, and the Lady
 "Mary's, and for my Lady Princess's house: this was
 "Elizabeth's. To this, on the margin, it is written by
 "the King, *The order is taken.*"

In June, in the year 1535, after the parliament had Collect.
Numb. 32.
 settled every thing demanded of them, the King pub- A letter of
the King's
to the jus-
tices, to ob-
serve the
behaviour
of the
clergy.
 lished a circular letter, which will be found in the Col-
 lection, taken from the original. "In which, after he
 "had set forth that both clergy and temporalty had
 "abolished the Bishop of Rome's usurpations, and had
 "united to the crown the dignity of *Supreme Head in*
 "*earth of the Church of England*; which was also ap-
 "proved in convocation, and confirmed by their oaths
 "and subscriptions: he adds, that, considering what
 "quiet would follow in the nation, if the bishops and
 "clergy would sincerely, and without dissimulation,
 "publish the many and great abuses of the Pope's usur-
 "pation; he had sent letters to all bishops, charging
 "them, not only in their own persons, but by their
 "chaplains, to preach the true and sincere word of God
 "to the people, and to give warning to all ecclesiastical
 "persons to do the same; and to cause the Pope's name
 "to be rased out of all the books of divine service. He
 "had also required the justices of peace to examine
 "whether the bishops and clergy did this sincerely; or
 "whether they did it coldly, or feignedly; or used any

PART III. "addition or gloss to it. Upon all this, the King re-
 1535. "quires them, at their assizes and sessions, to make di-
 "ligent search, whether the bishops and clergy do their
 "duty sincerely. Likewise, at their meetings, they
 "were to set the same forth to the people; and also de-
 "clare the treasons committed by the Bishop of Ro-
 "chester and Sir Thomas More, who by divers secret
 "practices intended to breed among the people most
 "mischievous opinions; for which they, with some
 "others, had suffered as they deserved. He requires
 "them, if they found any fault or dissimulation in any
 "person, that they should immediately signify it to the
 "King and his council, as that which was of the great-
 "est moment to the quiet of the kingdom; threatening
 "such punishment of those who were negligent in this,
 "as would make them examples to all others: and he
 "charges them upon their allegiance to obey all this
 "punctually."

Collect.
 Numb. 33.

But it seems this had not the effect that was expected; therefore in April after this, a new letter or proclamation was writ to some of the nobility, setting forth that he had heard that some, both *regulars* and *seculars*, did secretly extol the authority of the Bishop of Rome, praying for him in the pulpit, and making him a God, preferring his power and laws to God's most holy laws. The King therefore, out of his desire to maintain unity and quiet among his people, and to bring them to the knowledge of the truth, and to be no more blinded with superstition and false doctrine, required them, that where-soever they found any person spreading such pernicious doctrines, to the exaltation of the Bishop of Rome, to cause them to be apprehended and put in prison without bail or mainprise.

The Arch-
 bishop of
 York is sus-
 pected to
 favour the
 Pope.

Among the bishops, all were not equally honest, nor zealous. Lee, Archbishop of York, and Gardiner, were those in whom the old leaven had the deepest root: so

the King being informed that Lee, though he had given BOOK
in his profession, subscribed and sealed by him, yet did II.
not his duty in his diocese and province, neither in 1535.
teaching himself, nor causing others to teach the people,
conform to what was settled both in convocation and
parliament, sent him orders both to preach these things,
and to order all other ecclesiastical persons in his pro-
vince to do the same. Upon this he wrote a long vindica-
tion of himself in June 1535, which will be found in
the Collection.

Collect.
Numb. 34.

“ He sets forth in it the complaints that the King sig- He justifies
“ nified had been made of him, with the orders that he himself.
“ had received from the King, and then sets out his own
“ conduct. He acknowledges he had received, at the
“ end of the last parliament, a book sent from the Arch-
“ bishop of Canterbury, as a book of orders for preach-
“ ing: (probably that which is the 28th paper in the
“ Collection.) Upon his receiving it, he went on Sun-
“ day next to York, and there he set forth the cause of
“ the King’s marriage, and the rejecting the Pope’s au-
“ thority, very fully: and, that this might be done the
“ more publicly, he had caused it to be published at
“ York the Sunday before that he would be there, and
“ so took care to have a full audience: so that there
“ was a great multitude there. His text was, *I have*
“ *married a wife, and therefore I cannot come*: and he
“ so declared the King’s matters, that all seemed satis-
“ fied. It is true he did not touch the title of the King
“ as the Supreme Head, for there was no order given as
“ to that, for it was thus only ordered to have it named
“ in the prayer. It is true he did not use to bid prayers,
“ for the greater haste to utter his matter. But upon
“ the receipt of that book, he commanded his officers to
“ make out a great number of them, to be sent to every
“ preacher in his diocese: and by all that he ever heard,
“ every one of his curates followed that book, and has

PART "done their duty in every particular enjoined in it: he
 III. "took care that all who preached in their churches
 1535. "should follow the rules prescribed in it. He also sent
 "a book to every house of friars. And for the religious
 "when any such person came to him, naming particularly
 "the Carthusians and the Observants, for counsel, he
 "told them what he had done himself, and advised them
 "to do the same. On Good-Friday last, he had ordered
 "the collect for the Pope to be left out; and also the
 "mentioning him in other parts of the service: he de-
 "sired the King would examine these things, and he
 "would find he was not so much in fault as he imputed
 "it to him. He had been hitherto open and plain, and
 "had never deceived the King. He had also sent let-
 "ters to the Bishops of Duresme and Carlisle, pursuant
 "to the letters that he had from the King: and had
 "charged his archdeacons to see that all obedience
 "might be given to the King's orders. He had, since
 "he received the King's last letters, on the Sunday fol-
 "lowing, declared to the people every thing comprised
 "in them. He refers himself to Magnus and Lawson,
 "two of the King's chaplains, who heard him, to make
 "report of what they thought of it. Whatever he pro-
 "mised to the King he would fulfil it; and he had
 "done every thing as the King commanded, and would
 "still do it, so God were not offended by it. He be-
 "sought the King not to believe any complaints of him
 "till he have heard his answer. Some thought it was a
 "high sacrifice, when they could bring such a poor
 "priest as he was under the King's displeasure: but he
 "trusted God would continue in him a gracious mind
 "to his priests and chaplains, and that he would give
 "their enemies, who studied to provoke him against
 "them, better minds for the future."

Of the suf-
 ferings of
 Fisher and
 More.

I have no particulars to add to the relation I gave of
 the sufferings of Fisher and More. There are heavy

things laid to their charge; but except Fisher's being BOOK II. 1535.
 too much concerned in the business of the Nun of Kent,
 which was without doubt managed with a design to
 raise a rebellion in the nation, I do not find any other
 thing laid to his charge: and it does not at all appear
 that More gave any credit or countenance to that mat-
 ter. Yet I have seen that often affirmed. In our own
 days, when things have happened both together, though
 the one did not by any sort of proof appear to be con-
 nected with the other, yet they have been represented
 as done in concert: so the conspiracy of the Nun, and
 those who managed that imposture, was given out both
 at home and abroad as having its rise from Fisher, who
 indeed knew of it, and seemed to give credit to it;
 and from More, though he had no share at all in it.

The King of France was not satisfied with this way
 of proceeding: he thought it too violent, and that it
 did put things past all possibility of a reconciliation.
 He had answered for the King to the Pope at Marseilles,
 and he was in such a concern for him, that the wrong
 steps he made reflected on himself. He told the King's
 ambassador, that he advised the banishing of all such of-
 fenders, rather than the putting them to death. That
 King confessed there had been extreme executions and
 cruelty lately exercised in his own kingdom: but he
 was now putting a stop to it, and resolved to call home
 all those that had fled out of his kingdom. He had seen
 a relation of More's sufferings, by which it appeared
 that he exhorted his daughter to all duty and respect to
 the King, which made the proceedings against such a
 man to be the more censured.

The ambassadors wrote this to the King soon after
 More's death. The King wrote, on the 23d of August,
 an answer from Thornbury to this purpose; "If the
 "King of France had answered for the King, and had
 "justified his cause, he had done what was just and

Collect.
Numb. 25.
Bymer
MSS.
An expos-
tulation
with the
court of
France.

PART
III.

1535.

“suitable to their friendship: the conspiracies of Fisher and More to sow sedition, and to raise wars, both within and without the kingdom, were manifestly proved to their face; so that they could not avoid, nor deny it. The relation he had seen concerning More’s talk with his daughter at his death was a forged story; the King took it in ill part that King Francis should so lightly give ear and credit to such vain tales. This ungrateful behaviour showed that the King of France had not that integrity of heart that the King deserved, and might expect from him. Then follows a vindication of the laws lately made, which indeed were only old laws revived. The banishing of traitors was no ways convenient: that was to send them in places where they might more safely and conveniently execute their conspiracies. Upon all which the ambassador was ordered to expostulate plainly, but discreetly, both with the King and with the Great Master. There appears a strain of coldness in the whole intercourse between the two courts of France and England, ever from the interview at Mar-silles to this time.”

The King of France engages himself to adhere to and defend the King in his second marriage.

Collect.
Numb. 36.

Pope Clement was now dead, with whom the King of France was more closely united: and he found the King’s friendship was yet so necessary to him, that he resolved to remove all jealousies: so, to give the King a full assurance of his firmness to him, he sent him a solemn engagement to adhere to him. It is true, I have seen only a copy of this; but it is minuted on the back by Cromwel’s hand, and is fairly writ out. There is no date set to it, but it was during Queen Anne’s life, and after Pope Clement’s death, so probably it was sent over about this time. It will be found in the Collection.

It begins thus; “That both friendship and piety did require that he should employ his whole strength and

Authority to maintain the justice of his dearest friend. BOOK
The King of England, Defender of the Faith, Lord of II.
Ireland, and, under God, Supreme Head of the Church 1535.
of England, had by a dispensation, granted by Pope
Julius, contracted a marriage in fact with Katherine of
Spain, relict of the King's elder brother Arthur, and
had one daughter yet living of that marriage: that
King, upon great and weighty reasons, well known to
King Francis, had withdrawn himself from that marriage, and had lawfully and rightfully married Anne,
now his Queen, of whom he hath issue the Princess
Elizabeth: and a debate had arisen concerning the
dispensation, and the first marriage, and the legitimacy of the issue by it; in which King Francis by
many arguments did perceive, that the Pope himself
had not a due regard to equity; and that what by the
iniquity of the times, what by ill practice against all
law and right, many things were done. The King
therefore consulted the men of the greatest integrity
in his kingdom, and the most learned both in divinity
and in the laws of the church; whom he charged to
make a report to him according to their consciences,
as in the sight of God, having first conferred among
themselves fully upon the whole matter: he does
therefore, upon all their unanimous opinion, clearly
perceive that the dispensation granted by the Pope
was in itself null, both by reason of the surprise put
on him by the grounds pretended in it for obtaining
it, but chiefly because the Pope could not dispense in
that case; since such marriages are contrary to the
laws of God and of nature: for the Pope has no authority to dispense in that case; so that the marriage
between King Henry and Queen Katherine was incestuous and null, as contrary to the laws of God and
man; and by consequence the Lady Mary, born of
that marriage, was illegitimate. And further, that

PART
III.
1535.

“ the marriage the King has contracted with Anne, now
 “ his Queen, was holy, lawful, and good : and that
 “ Elizabeth, born of that marriage, and all the other
 “ issue that might come of it, was lawful, and ought so
 “ to be esteemed. He adds, that many of the cardinals
 “ naming particularly the late Cardinal of Ancona, and
 “ even the late Pope Clement himself, did declare their
 “ own positive opinion to himself personally at Mar
 “ seilles, and frequently to his ambassadors, that the
 “ dispensation granted by Pope Julius, upon which the
 “ first marriage was made, was null and void : and that
 “ Pope would have declared this by a final and defini
 “ tive sentence, if private affections and human regard
 “ had not stood in his way. All which that King did
 “ solemnly declare. He therefore, looking on that dis
 “ pensation as null and void, and by consequence on
 “ the marriage contracted by that authority as unlawfu
 “ and incestuous, and on the Lady Mary as incapable
 “ to succeed, being born in it ; did judge and affirm, that
 “ the marriage with Queen Anne, and the issue come
 “ or to come from it, was lawful and valid ; and that
 “ the just right of succeeding to the crown was vested
 “ in the issue of that marriage : and that all judgment
 “ and censures either by the late Pope Clement, or by
 “ any other judge, that were made and published, or
 “ that might hereafter be made or published, were, and
 “ are null and void, unjust, and unlawful. And he pro
 “ mised on the word and faith of a King, and under the
 “ forfeiture of all his goods, and of all the goods of his
 “ subjects, in the form of a contract of guaranty, both
 “ for himself and his heirs successors, that he, at all
 “ times, and in all places, particularly in all synods or
 “ general councils, and before all persons, and against
 “ all men whatsoever that should oppose it, of what
 “ rank or condition soever they might be, he would
 “ both by himself, and by his subjects, maintain and

“defend it, and (if need were) justify it, by a strong **BOOK**
 “hand, and with all his forces. Nor would he ever, for **II.**
 “the future, publicly or privately, directly or indirectly, **1535.**
 “go against it, or so much as attempt it, nor suffer it to
 “be attempted by any other, as much as in him lay.”

Here was as positive an assurance, as could be put in **From**
 words. And though princes have in former times, as **which he**
 well as in our own days, made bold with their promises **never de-**
 and treaties; and have very easily thrown them off, or **parted.**
 broke through them, without any appearance of great
 remorse or shame; yet it must be confessed, that Fran-
 cis did never, even in the war that he afterwards had
 with King Henry, depart from, or falsify this engage-
 ment.

BOOK III.

*Of what happened during the Time comprehended in the
Third Book of the History of the Reformation ; from
the Year 1535. to King Henry's death, Anno 1546-7.*

KING Henry seemed not a little pleased with his **BOOK**
title of the Supreme Head of the Church of England ; **III.**
of which it was enacted, in the session of parliament **1535.**
that sat after the breach was made with Rome, that it **The King**
should be for ever joined to the other titles of the crown, **was much**
and be reckoned one of them. He ordered an office for **pleased**
all ecclesiastical matters, and a seal to be cut ; which, in **with the**
an inhibition sent to the Archbishop, in order to a royal **title of Su-**
visitation of the whole clergy of all England, is, for aught **preme**
I know, first mentioned. It is dated the 18th of Sep- **Head.**
tember 1535 ; and, at the end, these words are added ;
“ Under our seal that we use in ecclesiastical matters,
“ which we have ordered to be hereunto appended.”

The Archbishop of Canterbury's title was also in con- **The Arch-**
vocation, ordered to be altered : instead of the title of **bishop of**
Legate of the Apostolic See, he was to be designed Me- **Canter-**
tropolitan, and Primate. This last was one of his an- **bury's title**
cient titles. In that session, there was some discourse **changed.**
concerning heresy, and of some English books ; in par-
ticular, of Tindal's books. And there was a book laid be-
fore them, with the title of a Primer ; of which there is
no other account given, but that, from the rubrics of it,
they suspected it was a book not fit to be published.
This, it seems, produced a petition to the King, that he
would command all heretical books to be called in,

PART
III.

1535.

Cranmer
and Gar-
diner op-
pose one
another.Collect
Numb. 37.Cranmer
vindicates
himself.

within a time limited ; and that he would appoint the Scripture to be translated in the vulgar tongue ; but that, though the laity might read it, yet they were to be required not to dispute concerning the catholic faith.

It is very probable, that a breach was upon this occasion begun between Cranmer and Gardiner. The sharpness against heresy was probably supported by Gardiner ; as the motion for the translation of the Bible was by Cranmer. But when Cranmer, in order to an archiepiscopal visitation of the whole province, having obtained the King's licence for it on the 28th of April, sent out his inhibition according to form, to the ordinaries during the visitation ; upon this, Gardiner complained to the King of it, for two reasons. He thought the title of Primate of England did derogate from the King's power. The other was, that since his diocese had been visited within five years last past, and was now to pay for ever tenths to the King, it ought not to be charged with this visitation. Of this Cromwell gave Cranmer notice. He, on the 12th of May, wrote a vindication of himself ; which will be found in the Collection.

“ He believed that Gardiner (who wanted neither law, invention, nor craft to set out his matters to the best advantage) studied to value himself upon his zeal for the King's supremacy, that so he might seem more concerned for that than for himself. Cranmer laid himself, and all his titles, at the King's feet ; but he wrote, why did not Gardiner move this sooner ? for he had received his monition on the 20th of April. The Pope did not think it lessened his supremacy, that he had many primates under him : no more did his title lessen the King's supremacy. Gardiner knew well, that if the Pope had thought those subaltern dignities had weakened his supreme one, he would have got all the bishops to be put on the level ; there

“ being many contentions concerning jurisdiction in the **BOOK**
 “ court of Rome. But if all the bishops of the kingdom **III.**
 “ set no higher value on their styles and titles than he **1535.**
 “ did, the King should do in those matters what he
 “ pleased: for if he thought that his style was in any
 “ sort against the King’s authority, he would beg leave
 “ to lay it down. He felt in his heart, that he had no
 “ sort of regard to his style or title, further than as it
 “ was for the setting forth of God’s word and will; but
 “ he would not leave any just thing at the pleasure of
 “ the Bishop of Winchester, he being no otherwise af-
 “ fectionate to him than he was. In the Apostles’ days,
 “ there was a Diotrophes, who loved the preeminence;
 “ and he had more successors than all the other Apostles;
 “ from whom all glorious titles, and much pomp, was
 “ come into the church. He wished that he, and all his
 “ brethren, might leave all their styles, and call them-
 “ selves only the Apostles of Jesus Christ; so that they
 “ took not the name vainly, but were such indeed; and
 “ did order their dioceses, so that not parchment, lead,
 “ or wax, but the conversation of their people, might be
 “ the seals of their office; as St. Paul said the Corin-
 “ thians were to him.” He answers the other part very
 fully; but that will be found in the letter itself, it not
 being of that importance to deserve that any abstract
 should be made of it.

It was soon observed, that there was a great faction **Bishops**
 formed against any reformation in doctrine or worship; **proceed a-**
 and that those who favoured and promoted it were ill **gainst those**
 used by the greater part of the bishops: of which I shall **who desir-**
 give one instance, and by it one may judge of the rest; **ed a refor-**
 for I have seen many complaints to the same purpose. **mation.**
 Barlow was, by Queen Anne’s favour, made Prior of
 Haverford West, in Pembrokeshire. He set himself to
 preach the pure Gospel there, and found many were
 very desirous to hear it; but he was in danger of his

PART
III.

1535.

life daily by reason of it: and an accusation being brought against him by a Black Friar there, set on by Rawlins, then Bishop of St. David's, who both rewarded him for it, and recommended him to the Arches: for Barlow had appealed to the King. He owns, that, by Cromwell's favour, their design against him was defeated; but he having sent a servant home about business, the Bishop's officers cited him to their courts, and ransacked his house; where they found an English Testament, with an exposition of the sermon on the mount, and of some other parts of the New Testament. Upon this, they clamoured against him as a heretic for it. They charged the Mayor of the town to put him and some others in prison, seeking by all means to find witnesses against them; but none appearing, they were forced to let them go, but valued themselves upon this their zeal against heresy. He sets forth the danger that all were in, who desired to live according to the laws of God, as became faithful subjects: for in that multitude of monks, friars, and secular priests, that was then in those parts, there was not one that sincerely preached the word of God, and very few that favoured it. He complains of the enormous vices, fraudulent exactions, and heathenish idolatry, that was shamefully supported under the clergy's jurisdiction; of which he offered to make full proof, if it should be demanded and received: but that being done, he desired leave to remove from thence; for he could neither go home, nor stay there safely, without a special protection. This letter will be found in the Collection.

Collect.
Numb. 38.

Barlow was that year made Bishop of St. Asaph, and the year after was translated to St. David's; and was after that removed to Wells, but driven out by Queen Mary; and was made Bishop of Chichester by Queen Elizabeth, in which he lived ten years.

The secret opposition that the bishops gave to the

steps made towards a reformation, obliged Cromwell to **BOOK**
 send many agents, in whom he trusted, up and down **III.**
 the nation, to observe all men's tempers and behaviour. 1535.

Legh, among others, being sent to York, did (in Ja-^{The Arch-}
 nuary) enjoin the Archbishop, by an order from the ^{bishop of}
 King, to preach the word of God, and to set forth the ^{York much}
 King's prerogative. He also enjoined him to bring up ^{suspected.}

to the King all the foundations of his see, and all com-
 missions granted to it. In these he did not doubt but
 they would find many things fit to be reformed: and
 he advised, that every bishop might be so ordered, that
 their dioceses might be better instructed and edified.
 That would establish them in their fidelity to the King,
 and to his succession: but the jurisdictions might be
 augmented, or diminished, as should seem convenient.

This letter, which will be found in the Collection, opens ^{Collect.}
 a design, that I find often mentioned, of calling in all the ^{Numb. 39.}

Pope's bulls, and all the charters belonging to the several
 sees, and regulating them all. But perhaps the first
 design being the suppressing the monasteries, it was
 not thought fit to alarm the secular clergy till that was
 once done: yet the order for sending up all bulls was
 at the same time generally executed. There is a letter

of Tonsall's writ soon after this to Cromwell, put in the
 Collection, in which he mentions the King's letters to ^{Collect.}
 all the bishops, to come up immediately after the feast ^{Numb. 40.}

of the Purification, with all the bulls they had obtained
 from Rome at any time. But the King, considering
 that Tonsall had gone down but late, ordered Dr.
 Layton to write to him, that he needed not come up;
 but advised, that he should write to the King that he
 was ready to do as other bishops did, and to deliver up
 all such bulls as the King desired of him. Layton
 wrote to him, that Cromwell, as his friend, had assured
 the King that he would do it.

In answer to this, Tonsall thanked him for his kind-

PART III. ness on that, and on many other occasions. "He did
 1535. "not understand to what intent these bulls were called
 "for, (and it seems he apprehended it was to have all
 "the bishops give up their right to their bishopricks,)
 "yet he had sent them all up to be delivered at the
 "King's pleasure. He adds, that he hoped by this de-
 "mand the King did not intend to make him leave his
 "bishoprick, and both to turn him out of his living, and
 "to ruin all his servants, that had their living only by
 "him; in which, he wrote, he could not be thought
 "either ambitious, or unreasonable: so he desired to
 "know what the King's pleasure was, not doubting but
 "that the King would use him as well as he used the
 "other bishops in the kingdom, since, as he had obtained
 "these bulls by him, he had renounced every thing in
 "them that was contrary to his prerogative. He had
 "but five bulls, for the rest were delivered to those to
 "whom they were addressed: so he commits himself
 "to the King's goodness, and to Cromwell's favour;"

Cott. Libr. dating his letter from Aukland the 29th of January,
 Cleop. E. 4. which must be in the year 1535-6.

Tonstall might be under more than ordinary apprehensions of some effect of the King's displeasure; for as he had opposed the declaring him to be the Supreme Head, in the convocation of York; so he had stuck firmly to the asserting the lawfulness of the King's marriage to Queen Katherine. Before the meeting of the parliament, in which that matter was determined, he, with the proxy that he sent to the Bishop of Ely, wrote him a letter, of which Mr. Richard Jones saw the original, which he has inserted in his voluminous Collections, that are in the Bodleian Library, in which these words are, after he had told him that he had given him full power to consent or dissent from every thing that was to be proposed: he adds,

"Yet nevertheless, I beseech you, if any thing harm-

“ful or prejudicial in any point to the marriage between **BOOK**
 “the King’s Highness and the Queen’s Grace shall be **III.**
 “proposed, wherein our voices shall be demanded ; in **1535.**
 “your own name say what you will, and what God
 “putteth in your mind : but I desire you, and on God’s
 “behalf I require you, never in my name to consent to
 “any such thing proposed, either harmful or prejudicial
 “to the marriage aforesaid ; but expressly to dissent
 “unto the same : and for your discharge on that behalf,
 “ye may show, when you think it requisite, this my
 “particular declaration of my mind, made unto you
 “therein ; and what I have willed and required you to
 “do in my name in this point, praying your Lordship
 “not to do otherwise in my name, as my singular trust
 “is in you, that ye will not.” Dated from Aukland in
 January, but neither day nor year are mentioned.

The session of parliament, in which the act of the succession passed, by which the King’s marriage with Queen Katherine was condemned, meeting in January, this letter seems to be written before that session ; and yet no opposition was made to that act in the House of Lords, either by the Bishop of Ely, or by the Bishop of Bath, whom he had made his second proxy, as appears by the same letter, in which he is also named. The act passed so soon, that it was read the first time on the 20th of March, and passed on the 23d in the House of Lords, without either dissent or protest. It is also certain that Tonstall afterwards took the oath enjoined by that act. But how these bishops came to be so silent upon that occasion, being so solemnly required to do otherwise by Tonstall ; and how he himself came to change, and to take the oath, is that of which I can give no account. It is certain King Henry had a very particular regard for him ; but yet by this letter it appears, that he had some fears of a severity aimed at himself:

Cotton Lib.
 Cleop. E. 4.

PART but he was afterwards in all things very compliant, even
 III. to the end of King Edward's reign.

1536. There came up, from all parts of the kingdom, man
 Complaints of the ill behaviour and bad practices of the
 of the monks and friars; of the last chiefly, for the Mendican
 friars. order being always abroad begging, they had man
 more occasions to show themselves: and though the
 monks had not those occasions to be in all public places
 yet it was very visible that they were secretly disposing
 the people to a revolt. So it was resolved to proceed
 against them all by degrees: and, after the visitation
 and injunctions, which had no great effect, they began
 with the smaller houses, that were not above 200l.
 year: this swept away at once all the Mendicants, who
 were the most industrious, and by consequence the most
 dangerous.

The Arch- The Archbishop of York was much suspected: and i
 bishop of many apologies look like intimations of some guilt, h
 York clears himself. had a great deal; for he took many occasions to justify
 himself. Upon the act for taking all the lesser mona
 steries into the King's hands, he expressed great zeal i
 serving the King, which appears in a letter of his to
 Cromwell in April 1536. He gave a strict command
 Collect. Numb. 41. ment to his archdeacons to warn all in the monasteries
 within the act, not to embezzle or convey away any
 thing belonging to the house: and if they had done
 any such thing, to restore it. He ordered them to give
 warning to all others not to meddle with any such goods.
 He had also warned the Mayor of York and his bre
 thren, and the Master of the Mint there, to receive none
 of the goods or plate of these monasteries. Having thus
 expressed his care in that matter, he made an earnest
 suit for two places that were of the patronage of his see.
 The one was St. Oswald's, which was a free chapel; the
 Prior was removable at the Archbishop's pleasure, and

he might put secular priests in it, if he pleased. The BOOK
 other was Hexham, upon the borders of Scotland, which III.
 was once an episcopal see ; and there not being a house . 1536.
 between Scotland and that lordship, if that house
 should go down, there would be a great waste that
 would run far into the country. Whether he obtained
 these suits or not, does not appear to me. After that he
 adds, that he had given order that no preachers should
 be suffered that preached novelties, and did sow seeds
 of dissension. Some, after that they were forbid to
 preach, did go on, and preach still. He had ordered
 process against them ; some of them said they would
 get the King's licence : if that were done, he must be
 silent ; but he hoped Cromwell would hinder that, and
 give him notice if they had obtained the King's licence.
 Some said they had the Archbishop of Canterbury's
 licence : but none of these should be obeyed there ; none
 but the King's licences, and his.

Upon the many complaints of preachers of all sorts, Reg. Heref.
Fox. fol. 6.
 King Henry wrote a circular letter to all the bishops on
 the 12th of July, letting them know, that, considering All preach-
ing is for
some time
prohibited.
 the diversity of opinion in matters of religion, he had
 appointed the convocation to set forth certain articles of
 religion, most catholic : but, to prevent all distraction in
 the minds of his people, he ordered, that, till that was
 published, no sermons should be preached till Michael-
 mas, unless by the Bishop, or in his presence, or in his
 cathedral, where he is to take care to furnish such as he
 can answer for : every bishop is therefore required to
 call in all his licences for preaching, and to publish this
 in the King's name. He is also required to imprison all
 those who acted against this order ; and not to suffer
 any private conventicles or disputations about these
 matters. To this is added, a direction for the *bidding of*
prayers ; that they should pray for departed souls, that
 God would grant them the fruition of his presence :

PART and a strict charge is laid on curates, that when the
III. articles of religion shall be sent them, they should read
 1536. them to their people, without adding or diminishing ;
 excepting only such to whom he shall under his seal
 give power to explain them.

The blind Bishop of Norwich, Nix, was condemned in a *præmunire*, and put out of the King's protection, for breaking through a custom, that the town of Thetford had enjoyed past all memory, that no inhabitant of that town could be brought into any ecclesiastical court, but before the Dean of that town : yet that old and vicious Bishop cited the Mayor before him, and charged him, under the pain of excommunication, not to admit of that custom. Upon this, judgment was given in the temporal courts against the Bishop : but he was now received into the King's protection. In the pardon, mention is made of his being convicted upon the statute of provisors. Stokesly Bishop of London was charged with the breach of the same statute, for which he took out a pardon.

Rymer. During these years, Cromwell carried no higher character than that of Secretary of State : but all applications were made to him in ecclesiastical matters ; so whether this was only by reason of his credit with the King, or if he was then made Vicar-General, does not appear to me. But as the King took care to keep all things quiet at home, so he set himself to cultivate a particular friendship with the Princes of the Empire of the Ausburgh Confession ; hoping by their means to be able to give the Emperor a powerful diversion, if he should go about to execute the Pope's censures. The King of France had been for some time endeavouring to beget a confidence of himself in the minds of those princes ; pretending that he was neither for the divine, nor the unbounded authority that the popes had assumed ; but only he thought it was reasonable to allow them a

A treaty
 with the
 Lutheran
 princes.

primacy in the church, and to set limits to that. Lan- BOOK
III.
1536.
gey was the person most employed in the managing of this matter. But when the King came to understand that the King of France had sent for Melancthon, being then at Langley, he ordered the Duke of Norfolk and the Lord Rochford to write to Cromwell, commanding him to dispatch Barnes immediately to Germany; and to use such diligence, that, if it was possible, he might meet Melancthon before he was gone into France; and to dissuade his going thither, since the French King was then persecuting those who did not submit to the Pope's usurped authority. He was to use all possible arguments to divert him from going, and to persuade him all he could to come over to England; showing him the conformity of the King's opinions with his own, and setting forth the King's noble and generous temper: but if he was gone into France, Barnes was to go on to the princes of Germany, and Cromwell was to send a messenger with him, to be sent back with an account of the state of matters among them. He was to engage the princes to continue firm in the denial of the Pope's authority; in which their honour was deeply concerned: and they might depend upon the King in that matter, who had proceeded in it with the advice of the most part of the great and famous clerks in Christendom, from which he would never vary, nor alter his proceedings. Barnes was to carry over a book written on that subject, and some sermons of the bishops, and to put the princes on their guard as to the French King; for he assured them, that both he and his council were altogether Papists.

Barnes was likewise directed to send Hains (after- Barnes sent
to them.
wards Dean of Exeter) and Christopher Mount (an honest German, who was long employed by the crown of England) to Sir John Wallop, the King's ambassador in France, on pretence that they went as his friends to

PART visit him. If Melancthon was in France, they were
III. to go secretly to him, to dissuade his stay long there,
1536. or his altering his opinion in any particular. Some
 copies of the book, and the sermons, were to be carried
 by them to France. If it is true that the King of France
 was so set to maintain the Pope's supremacy, Wallop was
 to represent to him, how contrary that was to his honour,
 to subject himself to the Pope, and to persuade others
 to do the same; and to charge him that he would re-
 member his promise to maintain the King's cause and
 proceedings: and since the King did not move the sub-
 jects of any other prince, why should the French King
 study to draw the Germans from their opinion in that
 matter; which the King thought himself much con-
 cerned in, since it was so much against the King's in-
 terest and his own promise? Wallop was to use all
 means to incline him rather to be of the King's opinion.
 They also ordered Cromwell to write to the Bishop of
 Aberdeen, that the King took it very unkindly that his
 nephew, the King of Scotland, was suing to marry the
 Duke of Vendome's daughter without his advice: he
 had proposed it to him before, and then he would not
 hearken to it. This negligence the King imputed to
 that Bishop, and to the rest of the Scottish council:
 the letter concludes, that Barnes should not be staid
 for further instructions from the Bishop of Canterbury.
 These should be sent afterwards by the Almoner, (Fox.)

Collect.
Numb. 42.

Melan-
thon's
going to
France pre-
vented.

PaperOffice.

This letter will be found in the Collection.

This came soon enough to stop Melancthon's journey
 to France. The Great Master, and the Admiral of
 France, did not think of any thing with relation to
 Germany, but of a civil league, to embroil the Empe-
 ror's affairs. They were against meddling in points of
 religion; and so were against Melancthon's coming to
 France. They were afraid that the French divines and
 he would not agree; and that might alienate the Ger-

man princes yet more from the court of France. Hains BOOK
and Mount wrote this over from Rheims, on the 8th of ^{III.}
August 1535. It is true, Langey was sent to bring him, ^{1536.}
hoping to meet him at Wirtemberg: but he was not
come thither; only the heads of their doctrine were
sent to him. With these he came back to France. The
King's divines made some emendations; which, Langey
said to Mount, he believed the Germans would submit
to: and so he was sent back with a gold chain, and let-
ters to bring Melancthon, and six other eminent Ger-
man divines, with him. Of this Mount gave the King
advice the 7th of September in that year.

This whole matter came to nothing; for Francis's ^{The French}
sister, the Queen of Navarre, was the person who pressed ^{King fluctuates.}
him chiefly to it; hoping by this, once to engage him
in some point of doctrine, which, as she hoped, might
draw on a rupture with Rome: but his ministers di-
verted him from all thoughts of engaging in doctrinal
matters; and they put him on entering into a league
with the princes of the Empire, only with relation to
their temporal concerns. Nor were the German princes
willing to depart in a tittle from the Augsburg Confession,
or enter upon new treaties about points that were set-
tled already among them; which might give occasion
to new divisions among themselves. And no doubt, the
King's interposing in the matter with such earnestness
had great weight with them; so he was delivered from
the alarm that this gave him. But to go on with our
King's affairs in Germany.

Fox, with Heath, (on whom Melancthon set a high ^{Sect. I. iii.}
value,) was sent, soon after Barnes, to negotiate with the ^{§. 18. par.}
Germans. He had many conferences with some ^{Of Fox sent to}
their divines, and entered into a large treaty about ^{Germany.}
several articles of religion with those of Wittemberg,
which lasted three months, to the Elector's great charge,
and the uneasiness of the Germans.

PART III. Melancthon had dedicated his Commentary on the Epistles to the King; who sent him (upon it) a present of 200 crowns, and wrote a letter to him, full of particular expressions of esteem, and assurances that he would always assist him in those his pious labours. Dated from Winchester the 1st of October 1535. Fox seemed to assure them, that the King would agree with them in all things: and told them, that the King had already abolished the popish superstitions, which he called the Babylonish tyranny; calling the Pope Antichrist. They of Wittemberg insisted on the abuses of the mass, and on the marriage of the clergy; and took notice, that the King had only taken away some smaller abuses, while the greatest were still kept up. So that Melancthon wrote on the margin of their paper, at this part of it, in Greek, *Nothing sound*. All this was sent over to the King; but did not at all please him. For, in an answer written by Cromwell, these words are a part of it: "The King knowing himself to be the "learnedest Prince in Europe, he thought it became "not him to submit to them; but he expected they "should submit to him." They, on the other hand, saw the great advantage of his protection and assistance; so that they brought Luther to make an humble submission to him, asking him pardon for the manner of his writing against him; which I find intimated, though it never came in my way. They studied also to gain both upon his vanity, offering him the title of the *Defender*, or *Protector of their League*; and on his interest, by entering into a close confederacy with him.

It was an opinion common enough in that time, that the Emperor was the sovereign of Germany. Gardiner, in several of his letters, seems to be of that mind: and upon that account, he endeavoured to possess the King with a prejudice against his treating with them, that it was to animate subjects to revolt against their Prince:

whereas, by the constitution and laws of the empire, **BOOK**
the princes had secured to themselves the right of coin- **III.**
ing, fortifying, arming, and entering into treaties, not **1536.**
only with one another, but with foreign princes, for
their defence. A homage was indeed due to the Em-
peror ; and a much greater submission was due to the
diet of the Empire : but the princes were sovereigns in
their own territories, as the Hanse towns were free states.
Fox pressed them to approve of all that the King had
done in the matter of his divorce, and of his second
marriage. To which they gave the answer that I had
inserted in my History, among the transactions of the
year 1530 : but the noble Seckendorf shows, that it was
sent in the year 1536. In their answer, as they ex-
cused themselves from giving their opinion in that mat-
ter till they were better informed, they added, (which,
it seems, was suppressed by Fox,) " Though we do
" agree with the ambassadors, that the law against
" marrying the brother's wife ought to be kept, yet we
" are in doubt whether a dispensation might not take
" place in this case ; which the ambassadors denied.
" For that law cannot oblige us more strictly than it
" did the Jews : and if a dispensation was admitted to
" them, we think the bond of matrimony is stronger."
Luther was vehemently against the infamy put on the
issue of the marriage. He thought the Lady Mary
was cruelly dealt with, when she was declared a bastard.
Upon Queen Katherine's death, they earnestly pressed
the restoring her to her former honour. So true were
they to that which was their principle, without regard-
ing the great advantage they saw might come to them
from the protection of so great a King.

His ambassadors, at that time, gave these princes an
advertisement of great importance to them, that was
written over to the King by Wiat, then his ambassador
in Spain ; that the Emperor had, in a passionate dis-

PART course with him, called both the Elector and the Land-
III. grave his enemies, and rebels. The truth was, the
 1536. Elector did not entirely depend on all that Fox said to
 him. He thought the King had only a political design
 in all this negociation ; intending to bring them into a
 dependance on himself, without any sincere intentions
 with relation to religion. So he being resolved to ad-
 here firmly to the Augsburg Confession, and seeing no
 appearance of the King's agreeing to it, he was very
 cold in the prosecution of this negociation. But the
 Princes and States of that Confession met at this time
 at Smalcald, and settled the famous Smalcaldic league ;
 of which the King's ambassadors sent him an authentic
 copy, with a translation of it in English ; which the
 reader will find in the Collection.

Collect.
 Num b. 43.

“ By it, John Frederick, Elector of Saxony, with his
 “ brother Ernest ; Philip, Ernest, and Francis, Dukes of
 “ Brunswick ; Ulric, Duke of Wirtemberg ; Philip, Land-
 “ grave of Hesse ; the Dukes of Pomeran ; four brothers,
 “ Princes of Anhalt ; two brothers, Counts of Mansfield ;
 “ the deputies of twenty-one free towns ;” which are not
 named in any order, for Hamburg and Lubeck are the
 last save one : but, to avoid disputes, they were named
 in the order in which they came, and produced their
 powers. “ All these did, on behalf of themselves and
 “ their heirs, seeing the dangers of that time, and that
 “ many went about to disturb those, who suffered the
 “ sincere doctrine of the Gospel to be preached in their
 “ territories ; and who, abolishing all abuses, settled
 “ such ceremonies as were agreeable to the word of
 “ God ; from which their enemies studied to divert
 “ them by force and violence. And since it was the
 “ magistrate's duty to suffer the sincere word of God to
 “ be preached to his subjects, and to provide that they
 “ be not violently deprived of it : therefore, that they
 “ might provide for the defence of themselves and their

" people, which is permitted to every man, not only by **BOOK**
 " the law of nature, but also by the written laws, they **III.**
 " entered into a christian, lawful, and friendly league ; **1536.**
 " by which they bound themselves to favour all of their
 " body, and to warn them of any imminent danger,
 " and not to give their enemies passage through their
 " territories. This was only for their own defence, and
 " not to move any war. So if any of them should be
 " violently assaulted for the cause of religion, or on any
 " pretence, in which the rest should judge that religion
 " was the true motive, the rest of the confederacy were
 " bound, with all their force and power, to defend him
 " who was so assaulted in such a manner, as for the cir-
 " cumstances of the time shall be adjudged : and none
 " of them might make any agreement or truce, without
 " the consent of the rest. And, that it might not be un-
 " derstood that this was any prejudice to the Emperor
 " their lord, or to any part of the empire, they de-
 " clare, that it was only intended to withstand wrongful
 " violence. They also resolved to receive all into this
 " confederacy who received the Augsburg Confession, and
 " desired to be joined to it. And whereas the confede-
 " racy made six years before was to determine on the
 " *Sunday invocavit* of the following year, in which the
 " Princes of Wirtemberg, Pomeran, and Anhalt, and six
 " of the cities, were not comprehended ; they received
 " them into this confederacy, which was to last for ten
 " years after the *Sunday invocavit* : and if any war
 " should be begun, but not finished within these ten
 " years, yet it shall be continued till the war is brought
 " to an end ; but at the end of the ten years, it shall be
 " lawful to the confederates to prolong it further. And
 " they gave their faith to one another, to observe this
 " religiously, and set their seals to it."

On the same day, the King's answer was offered to the demands the princes had made : both which are in

PART the Paper Office ; and both will be found in the Collec-
III. tion. Their demands were, " that the King would set
 1536. " forth the true doctrine of Christ, according to the
 Collect. " Augsburg Confession ; and that he would defend that
 Numb. 44. " doctrine at the next general council, if it be pious,
 " catholic, free, and truly Christian : and that neither
 " the King, nor the princes and states of that union,
 " should without mutual consent agree to any indiction
 " of a general council made by the Bishop of Rome ;
 " but that if such a council should be called, as they
 " had desired in their answer to Vergerius, the Pope's
 " ambassador, it should not be refused : and that if a
 " council shall be celebrated, to which the King and
 " these princes do not agree, they shall (to their power)
 " oppose it : and, that they will make protestations
 " against it, that they will not obey any constitution
 " made in it, nor suffer any decrees made in it to be
 " obeyed ; but will esteem them null and void, and
 " will make their bishops and preachers declare that to
 " their people. That the King will associate himself to
 " the league, and accept the name of the Defender or
 " Protector of it. That they will never suffer the mo-
 " narchy of the Bishop of Rome to take place ; nor grant
 " that it is expedient that he should have preeminence
 " before all other bishops, or have any jurisdiction in
 " the dominions of the King, and of the Princes. That
 " upon these grounds they enter into a league with one
 " another. And in case of any war, either for the cause
 " of religion, or any other cause whatsoever, that they
 " should not assist those who begin any such war.
 " That the King shall lay down a hundred thousand
 " crowns ; which it shall be lawful to the confederates
 " to make use of, as a moiety of that which they them-
 " selves shall contribute : and if need be, in any cause
 " of urgent necessity, to contribute two hundred thou-
 " sand crowns ; they joining as much of their own

“ money to it. And if the war shall end sooner than **BOOK**
 “ that all the money is employed in it, what remains **III.**
 “ shall be restored to the King. And they assured **1536.**
 “ him, that they should not convert this money to any
 “ other use, but to the defence of the cause of religion,
 “ together with their own money. And since the
 “ King’s ambassadors were to remain some time in Ger-
 “ many, disputing with their learned men about some
 “ points; they desire, that they may know the King’s
 “ mind, and that he will signify it to the Elector of
 “ Saxony, and the Landgrave of Hesse: and then the
 “ Princes will send their ambassadors, and a learned
 “ man with them, to confer with the King about the ar-
 “ ticles of doctrine, and the ceremonies of the church.”

To these the King sent two different answers, one
 after another. The first, that will be found in the
 Collection, was, “ That the King intended to set forth **Collect.**
 “ the true doctrine of Christ, which he was ready to de- **Numb. 45.**
 “ fend with life and goods: but that he being reckoned
 “ somewhat learned, and having many learned men in
 “ his kingdom, he could not think it meet to accept at
 “ any creature’s hand what should be his faith, or his
 “ kingdom’s; the only ground of which was in Scrip-
 “ ture, with which he desired they would not be grieved:
 “ but that they would send over some of their learned
 “ men to confer with him and his learned men, to the
 “ intent that they might have a perfect union in faith.
 “ He would also join with them in all general councils,
 “ that were catholic, free, and held in a safe place, for
 “ the defence of the true doctrine of the Gospel: and as
 “ for ceremonies, there may be such a diversity in these
 “ used through the whole world, that he thought that
 “ ought to be left to the governors of the several domi-
 “ nions, who know best what is convenient for them-
 “ selves. He agreed that neither he nor they should
 “ accept of the indiction of a general council, but by all

PART " their mutual consent ; but that if such a free council
 III. " may be held in a safe place, it shall not be refused.

1536. " The King did not think fit to accept the title offered
 • " by them till first they should be thoroughly agreed
 " upon the articles of doctrine : but that being once
 " done, he would thankfully accept of it. To that of a
 " defensive league, he added one clause, that they should
 " not suffer any of their subjects to serve those who set
 " on them in any such war : he thought it not reason-
 " able that he should bear any share of the wars already
 " past, (which it seems was secretly mentioned, though
 " not expressed in their demands ;) but for the future,
 " he was willing to contribute 100,000 crowns as they
 " desire. Upon further considering their demands, the
 " King sent a second and fuller answer, which will be
 " likewise found in the Collection.

Collect.
 Numb. 46.

" It begins with very tender expressions of the sense
 " the King had of their benevolence to him, and of their
 " constancy in adhering to the truth of the Gospel : he
 " acknowledges the goodness of God in giving them
 " such steadfastness and strength. Their wondrous vir-
 " tues had so ravished the King, that he was determined
 " to continue in a correspondence of love with them on
 " all occasions." Then follow some explanations of the
 " former memorial, but not very important, nor differing
 " much from it : only he lets them know, " that it was not
 " for any private necessity of his own, that he was moved
 " to join in league with them ; for by the death of a
 " woman, all calumnies were extinct, (this is meant of
 " Queen Anne,) so that neither the Pope nor the Em-
 " peror, nor any other prince, had then any quarrel
 " with him : yet, that they might know his good affec-
 " tion to them, he would contribute the sum they de-
 " sired, and upon the terms they proposed ; only on his
 " part he demanded of them, that in case any prince
 " invaded his dominions on the account of religion, that

" they would furnish him, at their expence, with 500
 " horsemen completely armed, or ten ships well arrayed
 " for war, to serve for four months: and that it should
 " be at the King's choice, whether horse or ships: and
 " that they should retain at the King's charge such a
 " number of horse and foot as the King should need,
 " not exceeding the number of 200 horse, and 5000 foot:
 " or instead of the foot, twelve ships in order, with all
 " things necessary, which the King might keep in his
 " service as long as he pleased: and last of all, that the
 " confederates will promise in all councils, and every
 " where else, to promote and defend the opinion that
 " Dr. Martin, (so they named Luther,) Justus Jonas,
 " Cruciger, Pomeran, and Melancthon had of his mar-
 " riage." This negotiation sunk to a great degree upon
 Queen Anne's tragical fall: and as the King thought
 they were no more necessary to him, so they saw his
 intractable humour, and had no hope of succeeding with
 him, unless they would have allowed him a dictatorship
 in matters of religion. Yet to end all this negociation at
 once,

BOOK
 III.
 1536.

The Elector of Saxony and the Landgrave of Hesse
 wrote a letter to the King, which will be found in the
 Collection, taken from the original, occasioned by Pope
 Paul the Third's summoning " a general council to
 " meet at Mantua on the 23d of May, upon which the
 " Emperor had sent messengers to them, to give them
 " notice of it, and to require them to come to it, either
 " in person, or by their proctors: but though they had al-
 " ways desired a council for the reforming of those abuses
 " that had continued so long, by the negligence or cor-
 " ruption of popes and prelates; yet in this bull the
 " Pope clearly insinuates that he will not suffer the re-
 " storing of true doctrine, or the correcting of abuses, to
 " be treated of, but that their doctrine, without any ex-
 " amination, was to be condemned with infamy. He

Collect.
 Numb. 47.

PART III. "also endeavoured to oblige all, by the receiving of his
 1536. "bull, without taking cognizance of the matter, to ex-
 "tirpate and destroy the doctrine they professed: so
 "that if they had accepted the bull, they had seemed to
 "be involved in that design. They therefore told the
 "Emperor's minister, that they looked on that bull as
 "unjust and pernicious: and they desired he would let
 "the Emperor know that they could not accept of it.
 "They did not doubt but the Pope, or his party about
 "the King, would upon this occasion pretend, that the
 "Pope had done his duty, and would study to load
 "them with ill characters: so they thought it necessary
 "to justify themselves to the King and other princes
 "on this occasion.

"They sent over with this a full vindication of their
 "proceedings, which they desired the King would read,
 "and that he would consider not only the present
 "danger of the Germans, but the common concern of
 "the whole church, in which it was visible that all good
 "discipline was lost, and that great and worthy men
 "had wished and desired that some received abuses, that
 "could not be denied, might be amended: therefore
 "they recommend the cause of the church, and their
 "own cause, to his care." This is dated the 25th of
 March 1537.

Collect. Numb. 48. I have in my other work given an account of the am-
 bassadors whom they sent into England, of the repre-
 sentations they made, and of a full paper that they of-
 fered to the King: to all which I have nothing now to
 add, but that I have found a letter of Cranmer's to
 Cromwell, which I have put in the Collection, in which
 he complains of the backwardness of the bishops. The
 ambassadors had been desired to tarry one month, that
 their book might be considered: but though he moved
 them to treat about it, as they had done upon other
 articles, they answered him, they knew the King had

taken it on himself to answer them ; and that a book to BOOK
 that end was already devised by him : therefore they III.
 would not meddle with the abuses complained of. The 1536.
 bishops desired that the Archbishop would go on to
 treat of the sacraments of matrimony, orders, confirma-
 tion, and extreme unction, in which they knew certainly
 that the Germans would not agree with them, except
 only in matrimony. “ He saw the bishops were seek-
 “ ing an occasion to break the concord : and that no-
 “ thing would be done, unless there came a special
 “ command from the King. They saw they could not
 “ defend the abuses, and yet they would not yield that
 “ point : he complains likewise that the ambassadors
 “ were very ill lodged ; multitudes of rats were running
 “ in their chambers day and night, and their kitchen
 “ was so near their parlour, that the smell was offensive
 “ to all that came to them. He wishes that a more con-
 “ venient house might be offered them.”

It is true, the King used them with a particular civility,
 and spoke to them before all his court in a most oblig-
 ing manner ; and often wished that Melancthon might
 be sent over to him. Cranmer and Cromwell used them
 with all possible kindness. Cranmer wrote often by
 them to the Elector, exhorting him to continue firm
 and zealous for the truth and purity of the Gospel ; but
 under all the shows of the King's favour, they under-
 stood that his heart was turned from them. He wrote,
 when he dismissed them, to the Elector, in terms full of
 esteem for their ambassadors ; “ not doubting but good
 “ effects would follow on this beginning of conferences
 “ with them : but the matter being of the greatest im-
 “ portance, it ought to be very maturely considered.
 “ He again desired that Melancthon might be sent over Seck. l. iii.
 “ to him, that he might treat with him ; promising that par. 66.
 “ he would apply himself wholly to what became a
 “ Christian Prince to pursue.” Dated the 1st of October

PART
III.

1536.

1538. During this embassy, there was an Anabaptist seized by the Landgrave of Hesse; in whose papers they found that he had some followers in England, that he had hopes of great success there, and was designing to go thither, but he said he was forbidden by the Spirit: upon this they wrote an account of all they found to the King, and gave him a description of the Anabaptists of Germany. They were much spread through Frisia and Westphalia, and in the Netherlands; chiefly in those places where none of their preachers were tolerated. The not baptizing infants was the known character of the party; but with this, they were for a community of goods: they condemned all magistracy, and all punishing of crimes, which they thought was a revenge forbidden by Christ. They condemned all oaths, and were against all order and government. They seemed to be Manichæans in religion: they despised the Scriptures, and pretended to particular illuminations; and allowed both polygamy and divorce at a man's pleasure: and wheresoever their numbers increased, they broke out into sedition and rebellion. They wrote all this to the King in a letter, that by the style is believed to be penned by Melancthon, both to let him see how far they themselves were from favouring such corruptions, and to put the King on his guard against them.

Here ends this negociation; for I find no mark of any further commerce between them: and though this run out far beyond the year 1535, in which it was begun, yet I thought it best to lay it all together, and so to dismiss it. The unlooked for accidents that happened in England had wrought much on the King's temper; his own inclinations were still biassing him to adhere to the old opinions and practices; and the popish party watched and improved all advantages, of which a very signal one happened soon, to their great joy.

Queen Katherine, or, as she was called, the Princess

Dowager, died first. I have nothing to add concerning her, but that I fell on a report of a conversation that Sir Edmond Bedingfield and Mr. Tyrrel had with her, in which she solemnly protested to them, that Prince Arthur never knew her carnally, and insisted much on it; and said, many others were assured of it. But on the contrary, Bedingfield urged very fully all the probabilities that were to the contrary: and said, that, whatever she said on that subject, it was little believed, and it seemed not credible. The tragedy of Queen Anne followed soon after this: it broke out on the first of May 1536, but it seems it was concerted before; for a parliament was summoned, at least the writs were tested the 27th of April before.

There is a long account of her sufferings given by Meteren, in that excellent history that he wrote of the wars in the Netherlands, which he took from a full relation of it, given by a French gentleman, Crispin, who was then in London, and, as Meteren relates the matter, wrote without partiality. He begins it thus: "There was a gentleman who blamed his sister for some lightness that appeared in her behaviour: she said the Queen did more than she did, for she admitted some of her court to come into her chamber at undue hours; and named the Lord Rochford, Norris, Weston, Brereton, and Smeton the musician. And she said to her brother, that Smeton could tell much more: all this was carried to the King."

When the matter broke out on the first of May, the King, who loved Norris, sent for him, and said, if he would confess those things with which the Queen was charged, he should neither suffer in his person nor his estate; nor so much as be put in prison: but if he did not confess, and were found guilty, he should suffer the extremity of the law. Norris answered, he would much rather die than be guilty of such falsehood; that

BOOK III.

1536.

Cott. Libr.
Otho. C.

10.

Meteren
Hist. des
Pays Bas,
l. i. f. 20.

PART it was all false, which he was ready to justify in a combat against any person whatsoever: so he was sent
III.
1536. with the rest to the Tower. The confession of Smeton was all that was brought against the Queen. He, as was believed, was prevailed on to accuse her; yet he was condemned contrary to the promise that had been made him: but it was pretended that his crime was, that he had told his suspicions to others, and not to the King; and when it was alleged, that one witness was not sufficient, it was answered, that it was sufficient. He adds, that the Queen was tried in the Tower; and that she defended her honour and modesty in such a way, as to soften the King, (for she knew his temper,) by such humble deportment, to favour her daughter. She was brought to her trial without having any advocate allowed her; having none but her maids about her. A chair was set for her, and she looked to all her judges with a cheerful countenance, as she made her curtsies to them without any fear: she behaved herself as if she had been still Queen; she spoke not much in her own defence; but the modesty of her countenance pleaded her innocence, much more than the defence that she made; so that all who saw or heard her believed her innocent. Both the magistrates of London, and several others who were there, said, they saw no evidence against her; only it appeared, that they were resolved to be rid of her.

She was made to lay aside all the characters of her dignity; which she did willingly: but still protested her innocence. When she heard the sentence, that she was to be beheaded, or burnt, she was not terrified, but lifted up her hands to God, and said, "O Father! O Creator! Thou, who art the way, the truth, and the life; thou knowest that I have not deserved this death." And turning herself to her judges, (her uncle, the Duke of Norfolk, being the Lord High Steward,)

she said, " My Lords, I will not say that your sentence
 " is unjust, nor presume that my opinion ought to be BOOK
III.
 " preferred to the judgment of you all. I believe you 1536.
 " have reasons and occasions of suspicion and jealousy,
 " upon which you have condemned me : but they must
 " be other than those that have been produced here in
 " court, for I am entirely innocent of all these accusa-
 " tions ; so that I cannot ask pardon of God for them.
 " I have been always a faithful and loyal wife to the
 " King. I have not, perhaps, at all times showed him
 " that humility and reverence, that his goodness to me,
 " and the honour to which he raised me, did deserve. I
 " confess I have had fancies and suspicions of him, which
 " I had not strength nor discretion enough to manage ;
 " but God knows, and is my witness, that I never failed
 " otherwise towards him : and I shall never confess any
 " other, at the hour of my death. Do not think that
 " I say this on design to prolong my life ; God has
 " taught me to know how to die, and he will fortify
 " my faith. Do not think that I am so carried in my
 " mind, as not to lay the honour of my chastity to
 " heart ; of which I should make small account now in
 " my extremity, if I had not maintained it my whole
 " life long, as much as ever Queen did. I know these
 " my last words will signify nothing, but to justify my
 " honour and my chastity. As for my brother, and
 " those others, who are unjustly condemned, I would
 " willingly suffer many deaths to deliver them : but
 " since I see it so pleases the King, I must willingly
 " bear with their death, and shall accompany them in
 " death, with this assurance, that I shall lead an endless
 " life with them in peace." She said all this, and a great
 deal more : and then, with a modest air, she rose up,
 and took leave of them all. Her brother, and the other
 gentlemen, were executed first. " He exhorted those
 " who suffered with him to die without fear ; and said

PART " to those that were about him, that he came to die,
 III. " since it was the King's pleasure that it should be so.

1536.

" He exhorted all persons not to trust to courts, states, and kings, but in God only. He had deserved a heavier punishment for his other sins ; but not from the King, whom he had never offended : yet he prayed God to give him a long and a good life. With him, all the rest suffered a death, which they had no way deserved. Mark Smeton only confessed, he had deserved well to die : which gave occasion to many reflections.

" When the Queen heard how her brother and the other gentlemen had suffered, and had sealed her innocence with their own blood ; but that Mark had confessed he deserved to die ; she broke out into some passion, and said, Has he not then cleared me of that public shame he has brought me to ? Alas ! I fear his soul suffers for it, and that he is now punished for his false accusation. But for my brother and those others, I doubt not but they are now in the presence of that Great King, before whom I am to be to-morrow."

It seems that gentleman knew nothing of the judgment that passed at Lambeth, annulling the marriage ; for it was transacted secretly. It could have no foundation or colour, but from that story mentioned in Cavenish's Life of Wolsey, of the Lord Percy's addresses to her. He was now examined upon that : but it will appear, from his letter to Cromwell, that he solemnly purged both himself and her from any precontract ; being examined upon oath by the two Archbishops : and that he received the sacrament upon it, before the Duke of Norfolk, and some of the King's council that were learned in the spiritual law ; assuring them by his oath, and by the sacrament that he had received, and intended to receive, that there was never any contract,

or promise of marriage, between her and him. This he **BOOK**
 wrote on the 13th of May, four days before the Queen's **III.**
 execution ; which will be found in the Collection. **1536.**

This shows plainly, that she was prevailed on, between **Collect.**
 fear and hope, to confess a precontract, the person not **Numb. 49.**
 being named.

The French gentleman gives the same account of the manner of her death, and of her speech, that all the other writers of that time do. " When she was brought " to the place of execution, within the Tower, he says " her looks were cheerful ; and she never appeared " more beautiful than at that time. She said to those " about her, Be not sorry to see me die thus ; but pardon me from your hearts, that I have not expressed " to all about me that mildness that became me ; and " that I have not done that good that was in my power " to do. She prayed for those who were the procurers " of her death. Then, with the aid of her maids, she " undressed her neck with great courage, and so ended " her days."

This long recital I have translated out of Meteren ; for I do not find it taken notice of by any of our writers. I leave it thus, without any other reflections upon it, but that it seems all over credible.

Thevet, a Franciscan friar, who, for seventeen or eighteen years, had wandered up and down Europe to prepare materials for his *Cosmography*, (which he published in the year 1563,) says, that many English gentlemen assured him, that King Henry expressed great repentance of his sins, being at the point of death ; and, among other things, of the injury and the crime committed against Queen Anne Boleyn, who was falsely accused, and convicted of that which was laid to her charge. It is true, Thuanus has very much disgraced that writer, as a vain and ignorant plagiarist : but he, having been of the order that suffered so much for their

Cosmog.
l. xvi.

PART adhering to Queen Katherine, is not to be suspected of
III. partiality for Queen Anne. We must leave those secrets
 1536. to the great day.

It may be easily believed, that both the Pope and the Emperor, as they were glad to be freed from the obligation they seemed to be under to protect Queen Katherine, so Queen Anne's fall gave them a great deal of ill-natured joy. The Pope, upon the first news of her disgrace, sent for Cassali, expressing a great deal of pleasure upon the Queen's imprisonment; and, at the same time, spoke very honourably of the King. "He hoped, upon these emergents, all matters would be brought to a good agreement; and that the King would reconcile himself to the see, by which he would become the arbiter of all Europe. He told Cassali, that he knew how good an instrument he was in Pope Clement's time; and what pains he took, both with the Pope and the Emperor, to prevent the breach. He added, that the naming of Fisher to be a cardinal was so pressed on him, that he could not decline it. He desired Cassali would try how any messenger that he might send to the King would be received; for, as soon as he knew that, he would send one immediately." Of all this Cassali wrote an account to the King.

Cott. Lib.
 Vitell. B.
 14.

At the same time, Pace gave him an account of a long conversation he had with the Emperor on the same subject: for he was then the King's ambassador in that court. "The Emperor excused his adhering to his aunt, whom he could not in honour forsake: but at the same time, he said, he abhorred the Pope's bull for deposing the King; and he was so far from any thoughts of executing it, that he commanded it to be suppressed in his dominions; nor did he encourage, as was suspected, the King of Scotland to undertake to execute it. He imputed the breach that had been

“made between him and the King to the French BOOK
 “King; who, he said, was like an eel in a man’s hand, III.
 “ready to forsake him, *and even to renounce God, who,* 1536.
 “*he believed, had given him over to a reprobate mind.* He
 “was resolved now to return to his old friendship with
 “the King; and he would not hearken to intimations
 “given him by the agent of France, that the King had
 “poisoned his aunt. He pressed him to legitimate the
 “Princess Mary. He might do that, without owning
 “the lawfulness of the marriage; which was a point in
 “which he would stir no more. She was born in a
 “marriage in fact, and *bona fide*; and in many cases,
 “in which marriages had been dissolved, yet the legiti-
 “macy of the issue was often secured.”

Of all this Pace gave the King an account; and Cott. Libr.
 pressed, with some vehemence, the legitimating the Vitell. B.
 Princess. The Emperor was then going to Rome; so 14.
 King Henry intended to join Cassali with Pace in his
 embassy to the Emperor. Pace begged that might not
 be done; expressing a great aversion to him, as being a
 base and a perverse man. It is plain, Pace pressed the
 King much to think of being reconciled to the Pope.
 Cardinal Ghinucci offered his service again to the King,
 with expressions full of zeal. Grandvill also entered
 with Cassali upon the same subject: but Cassali wrote
 to the King, that he did not at all meddle in that mat-
 ter. The Emperor went to Rome, and Pace followed
 him thither. The King sent a dispatch to Pace, which Paper Office.
 will be found in the Collection, telling him of the mo-Collect.
 tion that the Emperor’s ambassador made to him for Numb. 30.
 returning to the old friendship with their master. They
 also made him some overtures in order to it. First, the
 Emperor would be a mean to reconcile him to the Bi-
 shop of Rome: he also hoped that the King would con-
 tribute towards the war against the Turk; and that,
 since there was an old defensive league between them,

PART and since it seemed that the French King intended to
III. invade the dutchy of Milan, he expected the King
 1536. would assist him according to that league.

The King
 answered
 that coldly.

To all this the King answered, "that the interruption
 " of their friendship proceeded from the Emperor, who
 " had made him ill returns for the services he had done
 " him. For he pretends he made him first King of
 " Spain, and then Emperor. When the empire was at
 " his disposition, he had furnished him with money; so
 " that he ought to thank the King only for all the ho-
 " nour he was advanced to : but in lieu of that, he had
 " showed great ingratitude to the King, and had not
 " only contemned his friendship, but had set on all the
 " ill usage he had met with from the Bishop of Rome ;
 " which, as he understood, he owed chiefly to him. Yet,
 " such was the King's zeal for concord among Christian
 " princes, and such was his nature, that he could con-
 " tinue his displeasure against no man, when the cause
 " of it was once removed : so if the Emperor would de-
 " sire him to forget all that was past, and would purge
 " himself of all particular unkindness to him, he would
 " be willing to return to their old friendship ; but he
 " having received the injuries, would not sue for a re-
 " conciliation, nor treat upon the foot of the old leagues
 " between them, till the reconciliation should be first
 " made, and that without any conditions : when that
 " was done, he would answer all his reasonable de-
 " sires.

He refuses
 any treaty
 with the
 Pope.

" But as for the Bishop of Rome, he had not pro-
 " ceeded on such slight grounds, that he could in any
 " sort depart from what he had done ; having founded
 " himself on the laws of God, of nature, and honesty,
 " with the concurrence of his parliament. There was
 " a motion made to him from that Bishop for a recon-
 " ciliation, which he had not yet embraced, nor would
 " he suffer it to be compassed by any other means ; and

“ therefore he would not take it in good part, if the **BOOK**
 “ Emperor would insist in that matter, for the satis- **III.**
 “ faction of the Bishop of Rome, that was his enemy ; 1536.
 “ or move him to alter that, which was already deter-
 “ mined against his authority. When there was a ge-
 “ neral peace among Christian princes, he would not be
 “ wanting to give an aid against the Turk ; but till the
 “ friendship between the Emperor and him was quite
 “ made up, he would treat of nothing with relation to
 “ the King of France : when that was done, he would
 “ be a mediator between them. This was the answer
 “ given to the Emperor’s ambassador ; which was com-
 “ municated to Pace, that, in case he had any discourse
 “ with the Emperor on the subject, he should seem only
 “ to have a general knowledge of the matter, but should
 “ talk with him suitably to these grounds ; encouraging
 “ the Emperor to pursue what he had begun, and ex-
 “ tolling the King’s nature and courage, with his incli-
 “ nation to satisfy his friends, when he was not too
 “ much pressed : that would hurt and stop good pur-
 “ poses. And he orders him to speak with Grandvill of
 “ it, of whom it seems he had a good opinion, and that
 “ he should represent to the Emperor the advantage
 “ that would follow, on the renewing their old friend-
 “ ship, but not to clog it with conditions ; for whatever
 “ the King might be afterwards brought to upon their
 “ friendship, when made up, the King would not suffer
 “ it to be loaded with them ; for the King had suffered
 “ the injury : but he was ordered to say all this as of
 “ himself, and Pace was ordered to go to court, and put
 “ himself in Grandvill’s way, that he might have occa-
 “ sion to enter upon these subjects with him.” Thus
 that matter was put in a method ; so that in a little
 time the friendship seemed to be entirely made up.

The King would never hearken to a reconciliation **Proceedings**
 with the Pope. On the contrary, he went on in his de- **in convo-**
 cation.

PART sign of reforming matters in England. In the convocation in the year 1536, Cromwell came and demanded
III. a place as the King's Vicar-General: the Archbishop
 1536. assigned him the place next above himself. On the 21st of June, the Archbishop laid before the House the sentence definitive of the nullity of the King's marriage with Queen Anne, which Cromwell desired they would approve. It was approved in the Upper House, and sent down to the Lower, in which it was also approved. On the 23d of June, the Prolocutor, with the clergy, offered a book to the Upper House, in which they set forth a collection of many ill doctrines that were publicly preached within the province. On the 28th of June, the confirmation of the decree concerning the King's last marriage was subscribed by both Houses. On the 11th of July, the book concerning the articles of faith, and the ceremonies, was brought in by the Bishop of Hereford, and was signed by both Houses. These were also signed by the Archbishop of York, and the Bishop of Duresme. On the 20th of July, the Bishop of Hereford brought another book, containing the reasons why the King ought not to appear in a council, summoned by the Pope to meet at Mantua: this was likewise agreed to, and subscribed by both Houses. I have nothing new to add to the account I have given in my History of the other proceedings in matters of religion this year; in which no convocation sate at York. There are several draughts of these articles, that are in several places corrected by the King's own hand; some of the corrections are very long and very material: of these only it was that I meant, and not of the engrossed and signed articles themselves, when I said they were corrected by the King; as I have been misunderstood.

Pool made
 a cardinal.

By these steps it appearing clearly that the King had no thoughts of a reconciliation with Rome, the Pope on his part resolved to create him as much trouble

as he could. Pool had been sent over from England to **BOOK**
 Paris while the suit of divorce was in dependance: he **III.**
 was particularly recommended by the Bishop of Bay- **1536.**
 onne, in one of his letters to Montmorency, as a person
 of great hopes, and much favoured by the King: he
 came after that to England; for he tells himself that he
 was in England while the point of the Supreme Head-
 ship was in debate. He says he was then absent, which
 shows that at that time he was contented to be silent in
 his opinion, and that he did not think fit to oppose
 what was doing. He was afterwards suffered to go and
 settle at Padua, where the gravity of his deportment,
 that was above his age, and the sweetness of his temper,
 made him be very much considered. He was still sup-
 ported from England; whether only out of his deanery
 of Exeter, or by any farther special bounty of the King's,
 is not certain. In several letters from Padua, he ac-
 knowledges the King's bounty and favour to him, and
 in one he desires a farther supply. He being com-
 manded by the King to do it, wrote over his opinion
 concerning his marriage: the King sent it to Cranmer
 before his being sent out of England: for that faithful
 and diligent searcher into the transactions of those times,
 Mr. Strype, has published the letter that he wrote upon
 it; the year is not added, but the date being the 13th
 of June, it must be before he was sent out of England,
 this being writ before he was consecrated; for he sub-
 scribes Cranmer, and upon his return he was consecrated
 long before June. It is written to the Earl of Wilt-
 shire: he mentions Pool's book, and commends both
 the wit and eloquence of it very highly; he thinks, if it
 should come abroad, it would not be possible to stand
 against it. Pool's chief design in it was, to persuade the
 King to submit the matter wholly to the Pope. In it,

"He set forth the trouble that might follow upon the
 "diversity of titles to the crown, of which the wars He wrote
 first against
 the divorce.

PART " upon the titles of Lancaster and York had given
 III. " them a sad warning. All that was now healed, and

1536. " therefore care should be taken not to return to the like
 " misery. He could never agree to the divorce, which
 " must destroy the Princess's title, and accuse the King
 " of living so long in a course of incest, against the law
 " of God and of nature. This would increase the
 " hatred the people began to bear to priests, if it should
 " appear that they had so long approved that which is
 " found now to be unlawful. As for the opinions of the
 " Universities, it was known they were often led by af-
 " fections ; and that they were brought over with great
 " difficulty to declare for the King : but he sets in op-
 " position to them, the King's father and his council,
 " the Queen's father and his council, and the Pope and
 " his council. It could not be expected that the Pope
 " would condemn the act of his predecessor, or consent
 " to the abridging his own power, and do that which
 " would raise sedition in many kingdoms, particularly
 " in Portugal. He next shows the Emperor's power,
 " and the weakness of France ; that the prohibiting our
 " trade to the Netherlands would be very ruinous, and
 " that the French were never to be trusted. They never
 " kept their leagues with us ; for neither do they love
 " us, nor do we love them : and if they find their aid
 " necessary to England, they will charge it with intole-
 " rable conditions." This is the substance of that letter.
 So that at this time Pool wrote only to persuade the
 King by political considerations to submit wholly to
 the Pope's judgment. The matter rested thus for some
 time : but when the breach was made, and all was past
 reconciling, then Cromwell wrote to him, by the King's
 order, to declare his opinion with relation to the King's
 proceedings. Upon this reason only he wrote his book,
 as he set forth in a paper of instructions given to one to
 be showed to the King, which will be found in the Col-

Collect.
 Numb. 51.

lection. In which he writes, " that he thinks, if it had
 " not been for that, he had never meddled in the mat-
 " ter, seeing so little hope of success ; and that he had
 " reason to think that what he should write would not
 " be acceptable. They had sent unto him from Eng-
 " land the books written on the contrary part : but he
 " said he found many things suppressed in these ; and
 " all the colours that could be invented were set upon
 " untrue opinions. Besides, what had followed was griev-
 " ous, both in the sight of God, and in the judgment of
 " the rest of Christendom : and he apprehending yet
 " worse effects, both with relation to the King's honour,
 " and the quiet of his realm, did upon that resolve to em-
 " ploy all the wit and learning that God had given him
 " to set forth the truth, and to show the consequences
 " of those ill opinions. He hoped that what he wrote
 " on the subject would fully satisfy all that would ex-
 " amine it. This he did, in hopes that the King, whom
 " God had suffered to be carried away from those opi-
 " nions that he had the honour formerly to maintain,
 " would yet by the goodness of God be recovered out
 " of the evil way he was then in.

" There were great instances of such cases in Scrip-
 " ture, in the stories of David and Solomon ; the last
 " particularly, who, notwithstanding the gift of wisdom
 " that he had from God, yet fell into idolatry. So,
 " though the King was not fallen from the true doctrine
 " of Christ, yet as David, when in a state of sin, was by
 " a prophet, sent to him from God, brought to true re-
 " pentance, and restored to the favour of God, he hoped
 " he might, by the grace of God, be an instrument to
 " bring the King to a better sense of things. Therefore,
 " as he set himself to study the matter, so he prayed
 " earnestly to God to manifest the truth to him : in
 " which he hoped God had heard his prayer ; so he
 " looked for good success. And that he might make the

PART III. 1536. " King apprehend the danger he was in, both from his
 " own people, who hated innovations in religion, and
 " from other princes, to whose honour it belongs to de-
 " fend the laws of the church against all other princes
 " who impugn them, and to make the King more ap-
 " prehensive of this, he had as in his own person brought
 " out all such reasons as might provoke people or
 " princes against him, since he was departing from the
 " course in which he had begun. These reasons, if
 " read apart, without considering the purpose he pro-
 " posed, of representing to the King the danger to
 " which he was exposing himself, might make one
 " think, from his vehemence of style in that argument,
 " that he was the King's greatest enemy ; but the read-
 " ing the whole book will show what his intent in it all
 " was. The book was too long for the King to read ;
 " he desired therefore that he would order some learned
 " and grave man to read it, and to declare his judgment
 " upon it, he being bound with an oath of fidelity, first
 " to God, and then to the King, to do it without affec-
 " tion on either part. He named particularly Tonstall,
 " Bishop of Duresme, whom he esteemed both for learn-
 " ing and fidelity to the King above any other he
 " knew. After Tonstall had first examined it, the King
 " may refer the further examination of it to such other
 " persons as he may think fit ; he was likewise resolved
 " that his book should never come abroad till the King
 " had seen it.

" In these instructions, he mentions that he had sent
 " another book to the King concerning his marriage ;
 " but in that he was disappointed of his intent, as the
 " bearer might inform him, who knew the whole mat-
 " ter. And since God had detected her, who had been
 " the occasion of all the errors the King had been led
 " into, it was the hope of all who loved him, that he
 " would now come to himself, and take that discovery

"as a favourable admonition of God to consider better
 "the opinion of those who dissented from that mar-
 "riage, as seeing the great dishonour and danger like
 "to follow on it. He wished the King would look on
 "that as a warning to return to the unity of the
 "church: he was sensible nothing but the hand of God
 "could work a change in the King's mind; and when
 "that should be done, it would be one of the greatest
 "miracles that the world had seen for some ages; with
 "the most signal characters of God's favour to him,
 "which would deliver him out of those very great dan-
 "gers that must follow upon the meeting of a general
 "council: whereas, if he should return to the unity of
 "the church, no prince would appear in that assembly
 "with more honour than would be paid to him, if he
 "should return; even his fall would prove a great
 "blessing to the church, and tend to the reformation
 "of the whole, and to the manifestation of the honour
 "of God. It would then appear that God had suffered
 "him to fall, to make him rise with more honour; to
 "the greater wealth, not only of his own realm, but of
 "the whole church besides. With these instructions he
 "sent a private letter to Tonstall from Venice, dated
 "Corpus Christi Eve."

BOOK
 III.
 1536.

When his book against the divorce came first to Eng-
 land, he was written to in the King's name to come over
 and explain some things in it; but he excused himself:
 he pretended the love of retirement, and of the noble
 company with whom he lived in an easy and learned
 friendship there. Eloquence seems to be that which he
 turned his mind most to; for in every thing he wrote
 there is much more of declamation than of argument.

Tonstall being thus provoked by Pool, and com-
 manded by the King, wrote a full and solid answer to
 him, on the 13th of July 1536, which will be found in
 the Collection. "He acknowledged he had received

Collect.
 Numb. 52.

PART III. "his letter, as the King has received his book; in
 "which he desired that the reading of it might be first

1536. "put upon him: he had read both his letter and his
 Tonstall "long book, and was truly grieved as he read it; seeing
 writes copiously to him. "both the vehemence of his style, and that he misrepresented the whole matter, as if the King was separated from the church. He wished he had rather written his opinion privately in a letter to the King, which might have been read by himself, and not have enlarged himself into so great a book, which must be communicated and seen of others. What stupidity was it to send so long a book so great a way, by one who might have miscarried in it; and so the book might have fallen into the hands of those who would have published it, to the slander of the King and the kingdom, but most of all to his own, for his ingratitude to the King, who had bred him up to that learning, which was now used against him, in whose defence he ought to have spent both life and learning: he advised him to burn all that he had written on that subject. There appeared a strain of bitterness in his whole book, that was very unbecoming him. He then comes to the argument, to show that the King, by the title of the Supreme Head, did not separate himself nor his church from the unity of the whole body. The King did not take upon him the office belonging to spiritual men, the cure of souls; nor that which belongs to the priesthood, to preach the word of God, and to minister the sacraments. He knew what belonged to his own office as King, and what belonged to the priest's office: no Prince esteemed spiritual men, that were given to learning and virtue, more than he did. His only design was, to see the laws of God sincerely preached, and Christ's faith (without blot) observed in his kingdom; and to reduce his church out of the captivity

“ of foreign powers (formerly usurped) into the state
 “ in which all the churches of God were at the begin-
 “ ning ; and to put away all the usurpations that the
 “ Bishops of Rome had by undue means still increased,
 “ to their own gain, but to the impoverishing of the
 “ kingdom. By this he only reduced things to the
 “ state that is most conformable to the ancient decrees
 “ of the church, which the Bishops of Rome solemnly
 “ promise to observe at their creation ; naming the eight
 “ general councils ; and yet any one, who considers to
 “ what a state the Bishop of Rome had brought this
 “ church, would soon see the diversity between the one
 “ and the other. At Venice he might see these in Greek,
 “ and they were already published in Latin : by which
 “ it appears, that the Bishop of Rome had then no such
 “ monarchy as they have usurped of late.

BOOK
 III.
 1536.

“ If the places of Scripture which he quoted did prove
 “ it, then the Council of Nice did err, which decreed
 “ the contrary ; as the Canons of the Apostles did ap-
 “ point, that the ordinations of priests and bishops
 “ should be made in the diocese, or at most in the pro-
 “ vince, where the parties dwelt. These Canons Da-
 “ mascen reckoned holy Scriptures. Nor can it be
 “ thought that the four general councils would have
 “ acted as they did, if they had understood those pas-
 “ sages of Scripture as he did ; for above a thousand
 “ years after Christ the customs were very contrary to
 “ those now used by the Bishop of Rome : when the
 “ blood of Christ and of the martyrs were yet fresh, the
 “ Scriptures were then best understood, and the cus-
 “ toms then used in the church must be better, than
 “ those that through ambition and covetousness had
 “ crept in since. Light and darkness may be as well
 “ reconciled, as the worldly authority in temporal things
 “ now usurped can be proved from St. Peter’s primacy,
 “ in preaching the word of God. He refers him to

PART " Cardinal Cusa's second book, in which he will find
 III. " this well opened.

1536. " The King going to reform his realm, and to reduce
 " things to the state in which they were some ages ago,
 " did not change, but establish those laws, which the
 " Pope professes to observe. If other princes did not
 " follow him in this, that ought not to hinder him
 " from doing his duty : of which he did not doubt to
 " be able to convince him, if he had but one day's dis-
 " course with him, unless he were totally addicted to
 " the contrary opinion. Pool wrote in his letter, that
 " he thought the King's subjects were offended at the
 " abolishing the Pope's usurpations : but Tonstall as-
 " sured him, that in this he was deceived ; for they all
 " perceived the profit that the kingdom had by it, since
 " the money that was before carried over to Rome was
 " now kept within the kingdom. That was become a
 " very heavy burden, and was daily increasing ; so that
 " if the King would go about to restore that abolished
 " authority, he would find it more difficult to bring it
 " about, than any thing he had ever yet attempted in
 " his parliament. Pool had in his letter blamed Ton-
 " stall for fainting in his heart, and not dying for the
 " authority of the Bishop of Rome. He assures him,
 " that from the time that he understood the progress of
 " Christ's church from the beginning, and had read ec-
 " clesiastical history, he never thought to shed one drop
 " of blood in that cause. None of those who had ad-
 " vantage by that authority would have lost one penny
 " of it to have saved his life : he would do what in him
 " lay to cool that indignation which his book had raised
 " in the King. He desired him not to fancy (from what
 " he saw in Italy, or in other places) that it was so
 " from the beginning. The councils would show him
 " how that dignity was given to the bishops of Rome.
 " The Emperors called those councils, and the dignity

"that was given him was because he was Bishop of
 "the chief city of the Empire, and not for the sake of
 "Peter and Paul. The second place was given to the
 "patriarchs of Constantinople; because it was called
 "New Rome, and so was preferred to Antioch, where
 "St. Peter was bishop, and where the name *Christian*
 "first began; and it was set before Alexandria, and
 "likewise before Jerusalem, where Christ himself
 "preached, and the whole college of the apostles after
 "him, and where James (the brother of our Lord) was
 "the first bishop. That church was called the mother
 "of all the churches. It was also set before Ephesus,
 "where St. John wrote his Gospel, and died. To all
 "these Constantinople was preferred: and yet this was
 "fully settled in the council of Chalcedon, where 630
 "bishops met. If he read the Greek Fathers, Basil,
 "Nazianzen, Chrysostome, and Damascen, he would
 "find no mention of the monarchy of the Bishop of
 "Rome. He desired him to search further into this
 "matter, and he would find that the old fathers knew
 "nothing of the Pope's late pretensions and usurpations.
 "He wished therefore that he would examine these
 "matters more carefully, which had been searched to
 "the bottom in England. The learned men here
 "thought, they were happily delivered from that cap-
 "tivity, to which he endeavours to bring them back.
 "He tells him how much all his family and kindred
 "would be troubled, to see him so much engaged against
 "his King and his country; whom he might comfort,
 "if he would follow the establishment of the whole
 "church of God from the beginning, and leave the sup-
 "porting of those usurpations. He refers him to Gre-
 "gory the Great, who wrote against the Bishop of
 "Constantinople, pretending to the like monarchy. St.
 "Cyprian writes, that all the apostles were of equal
 "dignity and authority: which is also affirmed by the

BOOK
III.
1536.

PART "third council of Ephesus. He begged him not to
 III. "trust too much to himself, but to search further, and
 1536. "not to fancy he had found out the matter already.
 "He prayed him to burn all his papers; and then he
 "hoped he should prevail with the King to keep that
 "which he had sent him secret. He concludes all with
 "some very kind expressions."

This I have abstracted the more fully, for the honour
 of Tonstall's memory; who was a generous and good-
 natured, as well as a very learned man. Pool, who
 was then a cardinal, wrote no answer to this that I
 could find; but he wrote a long letter, either to Ton-
 stall or to Cromwell, in May 1537, which will be found
 in the Collection.

Collect.
 Numb. 58.
 Cardinal
 Pool's vin-
 dication of
 himself.

"He begins it with protestations of his affection to
 "the King, though the King had taken such methods
 "to destroy him, as the like had not been known in
 "Christendom, against any who bore the person that
 "he did at that time; yet he still maintained a deep
 "affection to him. He knew well all that the King had
 "designed against him; which, if he bore the King a
 "small degree of love, would be enough to extinguish
 "it. He saw what he did for the best was taken in
 "the worst part. He did not think it possible, that the
 "King should conceive such indignation against him,
 "as to break through all laws to have him in his
 "hands, and to disturb the whole commerce of nations
 "rather than not have his person in his power. But he
 "still adhered to his former principles, and maintained
 "his former temper towards the King.

"Upon his arrival in France, he was ashamed to
 "hear that, he coming thither in the quality of an am-
 "bassador and legate, one prince should desire of an-
 "other to betray him, and deliver him into the King's
 "ambassador's hands. He himself was so little dis-
 "turbed at it, when he first heard of it, that he said

" upon it, (to those who were about him,) that he never
 " felt himself in full possession of being a cardinal till BOOK
III.
 " then ; since he was now persecuted by him whose 1536.
 " good he most earnestly desired. Whatever religion
 " men are of, if they would observe the law of nations,
 " the law of nature alone would show how abominable
 " it was to grant such a request ; and it was no less to
 " desire it. So that if he had the least spark of an alie-
 " nation from the King in him, such proceedings would
 " blow it up into a fire. He might upon this be justly
 " tempted to give over all commerce with the King,
 " and to procure (by all honest ways) the means to re-
 " pay this malignity, by doing him the utmost damage
 " he could devise : but he did not for that abstain from
 " trying to do all he could for the King's honour and
 " wealth. He acknowledges that the Bishop of Verona
 " was sent by him to the court of France, to intimate
 " that the Pope (for the common good of Christendom)
 " had committed some affairs to him, to treat with the
 " King. That Bishop passed through Abbeville when
 " the Bishop of Winchester and Mr. Brian were there :
 " so he could not but wonder at the King's acting to-
 " wards him ; the whole design of his legation being
 " for the King's honour. Upon which that Bishop de-
 " sired to confer with the King's ambassadors, that he
 " might declare to them the whole truth of the matter,
 " which was made known to them. They, it is true,
 " had no communication with him ; but they sent their
 " secretary, after the Bishop had declared the effect of
 " his legation, as far as it related to the King, to him.

" It seemed visible to all, that the King (in what he
 " had done against him) was abused by false reports,
 " and by the false conjectures of some ; so it was hoped,
 " that, the matter being once cleared, the King would
 " have changed his mind. All this he understood from
 " the Bishop of Verona at his return ; and he readily

PART III. "believed it. That Bishop had been the King's true
 1536. "servant, and had showed (when he was in a capacity
 "to serve him) the sincere love that he bore him. He
 "had been also Pool's particular acquaintance ever since
 "he came out of England. He would have been ready,
 "if the King had consented to it, to have gone and
 "given the King full satisfaction in all things. For, the
 "chief reason of his being sent into France was, the
 "Pope's intending to gain the King, knowing the friend-
 "ship that was between him and the French King : so
 "the Bishop of Verona was thought the fittest person
 "to be first employed, who had great merits on both
 "Kings, for the services he did them when he was in
 "office : and being esteemed the best Bishop in Italy,
 "it was designed that he should accompany Pool, as
 "well as he was sent before, to prepare matters for his
 "coming ; which he, out of his zeal to do God and the
 "King service, undertook very willingly ; and resolved
 "to try how he could get access to the King's person :
 "so now, having fully explained himself, he hoped it
 "would not be thought possible that he had those de-
 "signs, of which the King's proceeding against him
 "showed he suspected him, (which was, that he came
 "on purpose to animate the people to rebel.)

"Upon his first coming to Rome, he acquainted the
 "King with the design, for which he was called thither :
 "and he had acquainted him with the cause of his le-
 "gation. These were not the methods of those who in-
 "tended to rebel. He had then procured a suspension,
 "in sending forth the censures, which at that time
 "might have caused the King more trouble : and he
 "sent his servant purposely with the offer of his assist-
 "ance, animating the chief of his kindred to be con-
 "stant in the King's service. If any had been at Rome,
 "in the King's pay, to do him service, they could not
 "have done more than he did ; so that some began to

"reflect on him, because he would not consent to di-
 "vers things that would have been uneasy to him : BOOK III.
 "and particularly, because he had the censures in his 1536.
 "hand, which were instantly called for by those who
 "had authority to command : yet they never came into
 "their sight, nor hands ; and to that hour he had sup-
 "pressed them. He would go no further in justifying
 "himself, if what he had already done, and what the
 "Bishop of Verona had said, did not do it ; he would
 "take no more pains to clear himself : he rather thought
 "he had been faulty in his negligence in these matters.
 "But there was nothing now left to him, but to pray
 "for the King."

This letter is dated from Cambray : for upon the
 King's message to the French King, to demand him to
 be delivered into his hands, Francis could in no sort
 hearken to that, but he sent to him not to come to his
 court, but to go with all convenient haste out of his do-
 minions : so he retired to Cambray, as being then a
 peculiar sovereignty. The King had a spy, one Throck-
 morton, secretly about Pool, who gave him an account
 of all his motions : but, by what appears in his letters,
 he was faithfuller to Pool than to the King. He wrote
 over, that his book was not then printed, though he had
 been much pressed to print it by those at Rome ; but
 he thought that would hinder the design he went on :
 he believed indeed, that, upon his returning thither, he
 would print it. He tells him, that he had procured the
 suspensions of the Pope's censures, to try if it was pos-
 sible to bring about a reconciliation between the Pope
 and the King : and he adds, that many wondered to see
 the King so set against him, and that he did not rather
 endeavour to gain him. He intended to have staid some
 time in Flanders, but the Regent sent him word, that
 it could not be suffered. He went from thence and
 staid at Leige, where he was on the 20th of August ; for

PART the last of Throckmorton's letters is dated from thence.
III. He writes, that the Pope had called him back, having
 1536. named him to be his legate to the council that he had
 summoned to meet the 1st of November; though it did
 not meet for some years after this.

The King
 was recon-
 ciled to the
 Emperor.

The King's indignation upon his advancement, and
 for his book, carried him to a great many excesses, and
 to many acts of injustice and cruelty; which are not the
 least among the great blemishes of that reign. Wyatt
 was then the King's ambassador at the Emperor's court;
 and by his letters to the King it seems an entire confi-
 dence was then settled with the Emperor. The King
 pressed him much not to suffer the Pope to call a coun-
 cil, but to call one by his own authority, as the Roman
 Emperors had called the first general councils; and he
 proposed Cambray as a proper place for one: but he
 saw he was not like to succeed in that, so he only in-
 sisted on a promise that the Emperor had made, that
 nothing should be done in the council, whensoever it
 should meet, against him or his kingdom.

The King was at this time under much uneasiness,
 for he sent both Bonner and Hains over to the Empe-
 ror's court in conjunction: the one seems to have been
 chosen to talk with those who were still papistical; and
 the other had great credit with the Protestants. Our
 merchants in the Emperor's dominions were threatened
 by the Inquisition for owning the King as supreme
 head of this church. Upon this Wyatt complained to
 the Emperor. But though that Prince vindicated the
 inquisitors, he promised to give such order, that they
 should not be disquieted on that account: and when
 Pole applied himself to the Emperor for leave to affix
 the Pope's bull against the King in his dominions, he
 would not consent to it.

Dr. Lon-
 don's vio-
 lent pro-

I cannot add much to what I wrote formerly with
 relation to the suppression of the monasteries. There

are many letters, setting forth their vices and lewdness, and their robberies, and other ill practices; and now that the design against them was apparent, many run beyond sea with their plate and jewels: but I must not conceal, that the visitors give a great character of the Abbess and nuns of Pollesworth in Warwickshire. Dr.

BOOK III.

1536.

ceedings in suppressing the monasteries.

London, that was afterwards not only a persecutor of Protestants, but a suborner of false witnesses against them, was now zealous even to officiousness in suppressing the monasteries. In the first commission that the visitors had, there was no order for the removing shrines; yet he in his zeal exceeding his commission had done it: upon which Leighton, Legh, and others, desired that a commission for that end might be sent after them, of the same date with their other commissions. He also studied to frighten the Abbess of Godstow into a resignation. She was particularly in Cromwell's favour; so she wrote a plain honest letter to him, complaining of "London's violence, of his artifices to bring them to surrender their house, and of the great charge he put them to: she writes, that she did not hear that any of the King's subjects had been so handled. She insists on her care to maintain the honour of God, and all truth and obedience to the King; therefore she was positively resolved not to surrender her house, but would be ready to do it whensoever the King's command or his should come to her, and not till then." The great character I gave of that Abbess and of her house in my former work, made me resolve to put this letter in the Collection.

Collect. Numb. 54.

The discovery of the cheats in images, and counterfeits in relics, contributed not a little to their disgrace. Among these, that of Boxley in Kent was one of the most enormous. Among the papers that were sent me from Zurich, there is a letter written by the minister of Maidstone to Bullinger, that describes such an image, if

Cheats in images discovered.

PART III. it is not the same, so particularly, that I have put it in the Collection. He calls it the Dagon of Ashdod, or the Babylonish Bel. It was a crucifix that sometimes moved the head, the eyes, and did bend the whole body to express the receiving of prayers; and other gestures were at other times made to signify the rejecting them: great offerings were made to so wonderful an image. One Partridge suspected the fraud, and, removing the image, he saw the whole imposture evidently. There were several springs within it, by which all these motions were made. This was brought to Maidstone, and exposed to all the people there; from thence it was carried to London, and was showed to the King and all his court, and in their sight all the motions were performed. The King's council ordered a sermon to be preached at Paul's, by the Bishop of Rochester, where this imposture was fully discovered; and after sermon it was burnt.

1536.
Collect.
Numb. 55.

- Upon the birth of Prince Edward, matters had a better face: here was an undoubted heir born to the crown: it is true, the death of his mother did abate much of the joy, that such a birth would have given otherwise; for as she was of all the King's wives much the best beloved by him, so she was a person of that humble and sweet temper, that she was universally beloved on that account: she had no occasion given her to appear much in business, so she had no share of the hatred raised by the King's proceedings cast on her. I fell into a mistake from a letter of Queen Elizabeth's, directed to a big-bellied Queen, which I thought belonged to her; but I am now convinced of my error, for it was no doubt written to Queen Katherine, when, after King Henry's death, she was with child by the Lord Seimour. Upon Queen Jane's death, Tonstall, being then at York, wrote a consolatory letter to the King, which will be found in the Collection. It runs upon the common to-

Tonstall
wrote a con-
solatory let-
ter to the
King when
Queen Jane
died.
Coll. N. 56.

pics of affliction, with many good applications of passages of Scripture, and seems chiefly meant to calm and cheer up the King's spirit. But the truth is, King Henry had so many gross faults about him, that it had been more for Tonsall's honour, and better suited to his character, if he had given hints to awaken the King's conscience, and to call upon him to examine his ways, while he had that load upon his mind. Either Tonsall did not think him so faulty as certainly he was, or he was very faulty himself, in being so wanting to his duty upon so great an occasion.

BOOK
III.
1536.

But I go on to more public concerns. The King had by the Lord Cromwell sent Injunctions to his clergy in the year 1536, as he did afterwards in the year 1538, which I have printed in my former work. There was also a circular letter written to the bishops; that to the Bishop of Hereford is dated on the 20th of July 1536, requiring them to execute an order, abrogating some holy-days. The numbers of them were so excessively great, and by the people's devotion, or rather superstition, were like to increase more and more, which occasioned much sloth and idleness, and great loss to the public in time of harvest. It sets forth, that the King, with the advice of the convocation, had settled rules in this matter. The feast of the dedication of churches was to be held every year, on the first Sunday in October: but the feast of the patron of the church was to be no more observed. All the feasts from the first of July to the 29th of September, and all feasts in term-time, were not to be observed any more as holy-days, except the feasts of the Apostles, of the blessed Virgin Mary, and of St. George, and those days in which the judges did not use to sit; but the four quarter-days were still to be offering days. These are all the public injunctions set out about this time. But after the first of these, I find the bishops sent likewise Injunctions to their clergy round

Reg. Heref.
Fox. f. 9.

Orders about holy-days.

PART their dioceses, of which a copy, printed at that time, was
III. given me by my worthy friend Mr. Tate, minister of
 1536. Burnham. The first was by Lee, Archbishop of York,
 Collect. which will be found in the Collection.
 Numb. 57.

Injunctions
 given by
 the Arch-
 bishop of
 York.

“ He begins with the abolishing of the Bishop of
 “ Rome’s authority, and the declaring the King to be
 “ Supreme Head of the Church of England, as well
 “ spiritual as temporal. He requires his clergy to pro-
 “ vide a New Testament in English or Latin within
 “ forty days, and to read daily in it two chapters before
 “ noon, and two in the afternoon; and to study to un-
 “ derstand it. He requires them also to study the book
 “ to be set forth by the King, of the Institution of a
 “ Christian Man. They were to procure it as soon as it
 “ should be published, that they might read two chap-
 “ ters a day in it, and be able to explain it to their
 “ people. All curates and heads of religious houses
 “ were required to repeat the Lord’s Prayer and the
 “ Ave-Maria in English; and at other parts of the ser-
 “ vice, the Creed and the Ten Commandments also in
 “ English, and to make the people repeat these after
 “ them: and none were to be admitted to the sacra-
 “ ment at Easter that could not repeat them. All
 “ parishes were required, within forty days, to provide a
 “ great Bible in English, to be chained to some open
 “ place in the church; that so all persons might resort
 “ to it, and read it for their instruction. Priests were
 “ forbidden to haunt taverns or ale-houses, except on
 “ necessary occasions. The clergy that did belong to
 “ any one church were required to eat together, if they
 “ might, and not to play at prohibited games, as cards
 “ and dice. They must discourage none from reading
 “ the Scriptures, exhorting them to do it in the spirit
 “ of meekness, to be edified by it. They were required
 “ to read to their people the Gospel and Epistle in Eng-
 “ lish. Rules are set for the frequent use of sermons,

" proportioned to the value of their livings : generally BOOK
 " four sermons were to be preached every year, one in III.
 " a quarter. None were to preach but such as had li- 1536.
 " cense from the King or the Archbishop ; nor were
 " they to worship any image, or kneel or offer any lights
 " or gifts to it : but they might have lights in the rood-
 " loft, and before the sacrament, and at the sepulchre
 " at Easter. They were to teach the people that images
 " are only as books to stir them up to follow the saints ;
 " and though they see God the Father represented as
 " an old man, they were not to think that he has a
 " body, or is like a man. All images to which any re-
 " sort is used, are to be taken away. They are to teach
 " the people that God is not pleased with the works
 " done for the traditions of men, when works com-
 " manded by God are left undone ; that we are only
 " saved by the mercy of God, and the merits of Christ ;
 " that our good works have their virtue only from
 " thence. They were to teach the midwives the form of
 " baptism : they were to teach the people to make no
 " private contracts of marriage, nor to force their chil-
 " dren to marry against their wills ; and to open to
 " their people often the two great commandments of
 " Christ, *To love God and our neighbour*, and to live in
 " love with all people, avoiding dissension."

The rest relate to the matters set out in the King's Injunctions.

There were about the same time Injunctions given by Injunctions
 Sampson, Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield, for his by the Bi-
 diocese, which will be found in the Collection. He be- shop of
 gins with a charge to his clergy, " to instruct the peo- Coventry
 ple concerning the King's being the Supreme Head and Litch-
 " of the Church of England, by the word of God ; and field.
 " that the authority used by the Bishop of Rome was Collect.
 " an usurpation. Then he charges them to procure by Numb. 58.
 " the next Whitsuntide a whole Bible in Latin, and also

PART "one in English; and to lay it in the church, that
III. "every man may read in it. Then, with relation to the
 1536. "reading the Scriptures, and the having sermons every
 "quarter, he gives the same charge that Lee gave.
 "As to their sermons, he charges them that they be
 "preached purely, sincerely, and according to the true
 "Scriptures of God. He next requires them in the
 "King's name, and as his minister, to teach the people
 "to say the Lord's Prayer, and the Ave, and the Creed
 "in English: and that four times in every quarter they
 "declare the seven deadly sins, and the Ten Command-
 "ments. And because some, out of neglect of their
 "curates, and to hide their lewd livings, used in Lent
 "to go to confession to friars, or other religious houses;
 "he orders that no testimonial from them shall be suf-
 "ficient to admit one to the sacrament, called by him
 "*God's board*, till they confess to their own curates,
 "unless upon some urgent considerations of conscience,
 "that he or his deputies should grant a special licence
 "for it. That on holy-days, and in time of divine ser-
 "vice, none should go to ale-houses or taverns, nor be
 "received in them: and that the clergy should go in
 "such decent apparel, that it might be known that they
 "were of the clergy."

Collect. Numb. 59. The last of the injunctions in that book was given by Shaxton, Bishop of Salisbury, for his diocese, which will be found in the Collection; they are said to be given out from the authority given him by God and the King.

And by the Bishop of Salisbury. "He begins with provision about non-residents and
 "their curates; in particular, that no French or Irish
 "priest, that could not perfectly speak the English
 "tongue, should serve as curates. They were at high
 "mass to read the Gospel and Epistle in the English
 "tongue, and to set out the King's supremacy, and the
 "usurpations of the Bishop of Rome. The same rules

" are given about sermons as in the former, with this BOOK
 " addition, that no friar, nor any person in a religious III.
 " habit, be suffered to perform any service in the church. 1536.
 " As for reading the New Testament, the clergy are
 " only required to read one chapter every day ; and that
 " every person having a cure of souls should be able to
 " repeat without book the Gospels of Saint Matthew and
 " Saint John, with the Epistles to the Romans, Corin-
 " thians, and Galatians, and the Acts of the Apostles,
 " and the Canonical Epistles : so that every fortnight
 " they should learn one chapter without book, and keep
 " it still in their memory : and that the 28th chapter
 " of Deuteronomy should be read every quarter instead
 " of the general sentence. He gave the same orders
 " that the others gave about images, pilgrimages, and
 " other superstitious observances, and for teaching the
 " people the elements of religion in English ; only he
 " does not join the Ave-Maria with the Lord's Prayer, as
 " the others did. He requires the curates to exhort the
 " people to beware of swearing and blaspheming the
 " name of God, or of Christ's precious body and blood,
 " and of many other sins, then commonly practised : he
 " dispensed with all lights before images, and requires
 " that every church should be furnished with a Bible.
 " He complains of the practice of putting false relics
 " on the people, naming stinking boots, mucky combs,
 " ragged rockets, rotten girdles, locks of hair, gobbets
 " of wood, as parcels of the holy cross, of which he had
 " perfect knowledge ; besides the shameful abuse of
 " such as were perhaps true relics : he prays and com-
 " mands them, by the authority he had under God and
 " the King, to bring all these to him, with the writings
 " relating to them, that he might examine them, pro-
 " mising to restore such as were found to be true relics,
 " with an instruction how they ought to be used. He
 " also orders, that the Ave and pardon-bell, that was

PART "wont to be tolled three times a day, should be no more
III. "tolled."

1536.

Collect.
Numb. 60.

These are all the Injunctions set out by bishops that have fallen into my hands. Here I must acknowledge a very great omission made in the copy that I printed in the Collection added to my History, of a very important paragraph, in the second Injunction given by Cromwell, which will be found in the Collection, together with an omission of a few lines in Bishop Bonner's Injunctions, that were passed over by a very common fault of transcribers, who, seeing the words that they wrote last in the original before them, do not enough examine whether the same words did not belong to a new portion, and so write on without examining whether there are no words or lines between the one and the other: for *churches and chapels* being in two different places, my copier wrote on from the second place, and so omitted some lines between the one and the other. I am very ready to correct what I find amiss; I rather wonder that there is no more occasion for such reprehensions. I know I am not to expect either favour or common civility from some hands. I *do not enter* into faults of a worse nature made by others, but am very ready to confess my own when I see them.

Gresham's
letter to the
King for
putting the
great hos-
pitals in the
hands of
the city.
Collect.
Numb. 61.

I find nothing to add with relation to the dissolution both of the smaller and the greater monasteries, nor of the several risings that were in different parts of the kingdom; only I find a letter of Gresham, then Lord Mayor of London, I suppose he was the father of him who was the famed benefactor to the city; but by the letter which will be found in the Collection, his father was the occasion of procuring them a much greater benefaction. He begun his letter with a high commendation of the King, who, as he writes, "seemed to be "the chosen vessel of God, by whom the true word of "God was to be set forth, and who was to reform all

" enormities. This encouraged him, being then the BOOK
 " Mayor of the city of London, to inform him, for the III.
 " comfort of the sick, aged, and impotent persons, that 1538.
 " there were three hospitals near or within the city,
 " that of Saint George, Saint Bartholomew, and Saint
 " Thomas, and the new Abbey on Tower-Hill, founded
 " and endowed with great possessions, only for the help-
 " ing the poor and impotent, who were not able to help
 " themselves ; and not for the maintenance of canons,
 " priests, and monks, to live in pleasure, not regarding
 " the poor, who were lying in every street, offending all
 " that passed by them : he therefore prayed the King,
 " for the relief of Christ's true images, to give order that
 " the Mayor of London and the Aldermen may from
 " thenceforth have the disposition and rule both of the
 " lands belonging to those hospitals, and of the govern-
 " ors and ministers which shall be in any of them. And
 " then the King would perceive, that whereas now there
 " was a small number of canons, priests, and monks in
 " them for their own profit only ; that then a great
 " number of poor and indigent persons should be main-
 " tained in them, and also freely healed of their infir-
 " mities : and there should be physicians, surgeons, and
 " apothecaries, with salaries to attend upon them. And
 " those who were not able to labour should be relieved ;
 " and sturdy beggars, not willing to labour, should be
 " punished. In doing this, the King would be more
 " charitable to the poor than his progenitor Edgar, the
 " founder of so many monasteries ; or Henry the Third,
 " the renewer of Westminster ; or Edward the Third,
 " the founder of the New Abbey ; or than Henry the
 " Fifth, the founder of Sion and Shene ; and he would
 " carry the name of the protector and defender of the
 " poor."

How soon after this these hospitals were put under
 the government of the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of

PART London, will be found in the history of the city. But
III. I thought this letter was worth remembering, since prob-

1538. bably it gave the rise to the putting those endowments in such hands, in which, to the wonder of all the world, we see such a noble order and management, and such an overflowing of charity, that not only all their revenues are with the exactest management possible applied wholly to the use for which they were designed; but that the particular bounties of those whom God has blessed in the city, that are annually given to them, do far exceed their stated revenues: of which there are yearly accounts published in Easter week; and which no doubt do bring down great blessings on the city, and on all its concerns.

The King
 grows se-
 vere against
 the re-
 formers.

The state of matters began to turn about this time. The King seemed to think that his subjects owed an entire resignation of their reasons and consciences to him; and, as he was highly offended with those who still adhered to the papal authority, so he could not bear the haste that some were making to a further reformation, before or beyond his allowance. So, in the end of the year 1538, he set out a proclamation on the 16th of November.

In it he prohibits the importing of all foreign books, or the printing of any at home without licence, and the printing any parts of Scripture, till they were examined by the King and his Council, or by the Bishop of the diocese. He condemns all the books of the Anabaptists and Sacramentaries; and appoints those to be punished who vented them. He requires that none may argue against the presence of Christ in the sacrament, under the pain of death, and of the loss of their goods; and orders all to be punished who did disuse any rites or ceremonies not then abolished: yet he orders them to be observed without superstition only as remembrances, and not to repose in them a trust of salvation by observ-

ing them. He requires that all married priests should no more minister the sacrament, but be deprived, with further punishment or imprisonment at the King's pleasure. What follows after this will be found in the Collection; for the whole did not seem so important as to be all set down, it being very long. "The King, considering the several superstitions and abuses which had crept into the hearts of many of his unlearned subjects, and the strife and contention which did grow among them, had often commanded his bishops and clergy to preach plainly and sincerely, and to set forth the true meaning of the sacramentals and ceremonies, that they might be quietly used for such purposes as they were at first intended: but he was informed that this had not been executed according to his expectation; therefore he requires all his archbishops and bishops, that in their own persons they will preach with more diligence, and set forth to the people the word of God sincerely and purely; declaring the difference between the things commanded by God, and these rites and ceremonies commanded only by a lower authority, that they may come to the true knowledge of a lively faith in God, and obedience to the King, with love and charity to their neighbours. They were to require all their clergy to do the same, and to exhort the people to read and hear with simplicity, and without arrogance, avoiding all strife and contention, under the pain of being punished at the King's pleasure."

To this he adds, "That it appearing clearly that Thomas Becket, sometime Archbishop of Canterbury, did stubbornly withstand the laws established against the enormities of the clergy by King Henry the Second, and had fled out of the realm into France, and to the Bishop of Rome to procure the abrogating of these laws; from which there arose great troubles in the

BOOK
III.
1538.
Collect.
Numb. 62.
He sets out
a long pro-
clamation.

An account
set forth by
the King of
Thomas
Becket.

PART " kingdom: his death, which they untruly called his mar-
 III. " tyrdom, happened upon a rescue made by him, upon
 1538. " which he gave opprobrious words to the gentlemen who
 " counselled him to leave his stubbornness, and not to stir
 " up the people, who were risen for that rescue. He called
 " one of them bawd, and pulled Tracy by the bosom
 " almost down to the pavement of the church. Upon
 " this fray one of the company struck him, and in the
 " throng he was slain. He was canonized by the Bi-
 " shop of Rome, because he had been a champion to
 " maintain his usurped authority, and a defender of the
 " iniquity of the clergy. The King, with the advice of
 " his council, did find there was nothing of sanctity in
 " the life or exterior conversation of Becket, but that
 " he rather ought to be esteemed a rebel and a traitor;
 " therefore he commands that he shall be no more
 " esteemed nor called a saint, that his images shall be
 " every where put down, and that the days used for
 " his festival shall be no more observed, nor any part
 " of that service be read, but that it should be razed out
 " of all books. Adding, that the other festivals already
 " abrogated shall be no more solemnized, and that his
 " subjects shall be no more blindly abused to commit
 " idolatry, as they had been in time past. I will leave
 " it to our historians to compare the account here given
 " of Becket's death with the legends, and to examine
 " which of them is the truest."

A circular
 letter to the
 justices of
 peace.

Soon after this, the King, understanding that very
 malicious reports were spread about the country, poison-
 ing people's minds with relations to every thing that the
 King did; saying they would be made pay for every
 thing they should eat, and that the register of births
 and weddings was ordered for this end, that the King
 might know the numbers of his people, and make levies,
 and send, or rather sell them, to foreign service: he
 sent in December following a circular letter to all the

justices of England, which will be found in the Collec-
tion; in which, after he had set forth his good inten-
tions for the wealth and happiness of his people, he
added, "that he hoped that all the maintainers of the
" Bishop of Rome's authority should have been searched
" for, and brought to justice: and that all the inventors
" and spreaders of false reports, to put the people in fear,
" and so to stir them up to sedition, should have been
" apprehended and punished; and that vagabonds and
" beggars should have been corrected according to the
" letters he had formerly written to them. The King
" understood that sundry of them had done their duty
" so well, that there had been no disquiet till of late;
" that some malicious persons had by lies and false ru-
" mours studied to seduce the people; and that among
" these, some vicars and curates were the chief, who en-
" deavoured to bring the people again into darkness;
" and they did so confusedly read the word of God and
" the King's Injunctions, that none could understand
" the true meaning of them: they studied to wrest
" the King's intentions in them to a false sense. For
" whereas the King had ordered registers to be kept for
" showing lineal descents, and the rights of inheritance,
" and to distinguish legitimate issue from bastardy, or
" whether a person was born a subject or not; they
" went about saying that the King intended to make
" new examinations of christenings, weddings, and
" buryings, and to take away the liberties of the king-
" dom: for preserving which, they pretended Thomas
" Becket died. Whereas his opposition was only to the
" punishing of the offences of the clergy, that they
" should not be justified by the courts and laws of the
" land, but only at the Bishop's pleasure: and here the
" same account is given of Becket, that was in the for-
" mer proclamation. Becket contended with the Arch-
" bishop of York, and pretended, that, when he was out

BOOK
III.
1538.
Collect.
Numb. 68.

PART III. 1538. " of the realm, the King could not be crowned by any other bishop, but that it must be staid till he returned. These detestable liberties were all that he stood for, and not for the commonwealth of the realm. To these lies they added many other seditious devices, by which the people were stirred up to sedition and insurrection, to their utter ruin and destruction, if God had not both enabled him by force to subdue them, and afterwards move him mercifully to pardon them. The King therefore required them, in their several precincts, to find out such vicars and curates as did not truly declare the Injunctions, and did confusedly mumble the word of God, pretending that they were compelled to read them ; but telling their people to do as they did, and live as their fathers had done, for the old fashion was the best. They were also required to search out all the spreaders of seditious tales, and to apprehend and keep them in prison till the justices came about to try them ; or till the King's pleasure was known. The justices of the peace are very earnestly pressed to do their duty diligently, and to take care likewise that the injunctions and laws against the Anabaptists and Sacramentaries be duly executed." Dated from Hampton-Court in December, in the 30th year of his reign.

New significations put on the old rites.

Among the letters sent me from Zurick, I find one written to Bullinger on the 8th of March in the year 1539, by Butler, Elliot, Partridge, and Traheron, who had studied for some time under him, and were then entertained either by the King, or by Cromwell. They write, " that many of the popish ceremonies were still tolerated ; but that new significations were put on them : such as, that the *holy water* did put us in mind of the blood of Christ, that cleansed us from all defilement. The pax was carried about, to represent our reconciliation to God through Christ. Things

" that were visible were thought fit to be preserved to **BOOK**
 " prevent commotions. This correction quieted some ; **III.**
 " but though these rites were ordered to be kept up **1539.**
 " till the King should think fit to alter them, yet some
 " preached freely against them, even before the King.

" They write of the executions of the Marquis of Ex- **Many exe-**
 " eter, the Lord Montague, and Sir Edward Nevil, who **cutions in**
 " (they add) was a very brave, but a very vicious man. **England.**
 " Sir Nic. Cary, who had been before a zealous Papist,
 " when he came to suffer, exhorted all people to read
 " the Scriptures carefully. He acknowledged, that the
 " judgments of God came justly upon him, for the ha-
 " tred that he formerly bore to the Gospel. The King
 " was threatened with a war, in which the Emperor,
 " the French, and the Scots, would attack him on all
 " hands ; but he seemed to despise it, and said, He
 " should not sleep the less quietly for all these alarms.
 " The day after these tidings were brought him, he said
 " to his counsellors, that he found himself moved in his
 " conscience to promote the word of God more than
 " ever. Other news came at the same time, which
 " might perhaps raise his zeal, that three English mer-
 " chants were burnt in Spain ; and that an indulgence
 " was proclaimed to every man that should kill an
 " English heretic. Cranmer was then very busy, in-
 " structing the people, and preparing English prayers,
 " to be used instead of the Litany." I can go no fur-
 " ther on these subjects ; but must refer to my History
 " for the prosecution of these matters.

The foundation of the new bishopricks was now set- **Tom. xiv.**
 tled. Rymer has given us the charters, by which they **from p.**
 were founded and endowed. The new modelling of **717. to p.**
 some cathedrals was next taken care of. I have found **786 ; and**
 the project that Cromwell sent to Cranmer for the **from p.**
 church of Canterbury. It was to consist of a provost, **748. to p.**
 twelve prebendaries, six preachers ; three readers, one of **758.**
 The project
 of endow-
 ing the
 church of
 Canter-
 bury.

PART III. humanity and of Greek, another of divinity and of Hebrew, and another of humanity and divinity in Latin ; a reader of civil law, another of physic ; twenty students in divinity, ten to be kept at Oxford, and as many at Cambridge. Sixty scholars were to be taught grammar and logic, with Hebrew, Greek, and Latin : for these a schoolmaster and an usher were to have salaries. Besides these, there were eight petty-canons, twelve singing men, ten choristers, a master of the children, a gospeller, an epistler, and two sacristans ; two butlers, two cooks, a caterer, two porters ; twelve poor men, a steward, and an auditor : in all 162 persons, with the salaries for every one of these ; together with an allowance for an annual distribution of 100l. for the poor, and as much for reparations ; and 40l. for mending the highways : in all, amounting to about 1900 pound a year.

Disapproved by Cranmer. This I have put in the Collection, together with the letter that Cranmer wrote to Cromwell, after he had considered of it : though perhaps this will sharpen some men's spirits, that are of late much set to decry him, as much as any of his other opinions may have done : but a true historian, that intends to glean all that he could find relating to those transactions, must neither alter nor suppress things, but set them out as he finds them.

Collect. Numb. 64.
Collect. Numb. 63.

“ He proposes the altering the prebendaries to somewhat more useful : for, by all the experience that he had, the prebendaries had spent their time in much idleness, and their substance in superfluous living ; so he thought it was not a state to be maintained. Commonly they were neither learned, nor given to teach others, but only good vianders : they look to be the chief, and to bear the whole rule ; and by their ill example the younger sort grew idle and corrupt. The state of prebendaries had been so excessively abused, that, when learned men have been advanced to that

" post, they desisted from their studies, and from all BOOK
 " godly exercises of preaching and teaching: therefore III.
 " he wished the very name of a prebendary might be 1539.
 " struck out of the King's foundations. The first be-
 " ginning of them was good, so was that of religious
 " men; but both were gone off from their first estate:
 " so, since the one is put down, it were no great matter
 " if both should perish together. For, to say the truth,
 " it is an estate which St. Paul did not find in the
 " church of Christ; and he thought it would stand bet-
 " ter with the maintenance of the Christian religion,
 " that there were in their stead twenty divines, at 10l.
 " a-piece, and as many students of the tongues, and of
 " French, at ten marks a-piece. And indeed, if there
 " was not such a number there resident, he did not see
 " for what use there were so many lectures to be read:
 " for the prebendaries could not attend, for the making
 " of good cheer; and the children in grammar were to
 " be otherwise employed. He, in particular, recom-
 " mends Doctor Crome to be Dean."

But I leave this invidious subject, to turn now to a The design
of the six
Articles.
 very melancholy strain. The King had thrown off all
 commerce with the Lutherans in Germany, and seemed
 now to think himself secure in the Emperor's friendship:
 yet he did not break with France, though on many oc-
 casions he complained both of the ingratitude and in-
 constancy of that King. The dutchy of Milan seemed
 to be the object of all his designs; and he was always
 turned, as the prospect of that seemed to come in view,
 or to go out of sight. All the King's old ministers still
 kept up his zeal for his admired book of the Sacraments,
 most particularly for that article of transubstantiation;
 so that the popish party prevailed with him to resolve
 on setting up the six Articles, which, they said, would
 quiet all men's minds, when they saw him maintain
 that, and the other articles, with learning and zeal. It

PART is certain he had read a great deal, and heard and talked
III. a great deal more, of those subjects; so that he seems
 1539. to have made himself a master of the whole body of
 divinity. I have seen many chapters of the Necessary
 Erudition of a Christian much altered by him, and in
 many places so interlined with his hand, that it is not
 without some difficulty that they can be read; for he
 wrote very ill.

Collect.
 Numb. 66.

Upon the carrying the six Articles, the popish party
 were much exalted. This appears by the end of a let-
 ter, written to the ambassadors abroad; which will be
 found in the Collection. It sets forth, "how the King
 " had showed himself in that parliament so wise, learned,
 " and catholic, that no Prince ever did the like; so it
 " was no more doubted but the act would pass. The
 " Bishops of Canterbury, Ely, Salisbury, Worcester,
 " Rochester, and St. David's, defended the contrary
 " side; yet in the end the King confounded them.
 " The Bishops of York, Duresme, Winchester, London,
 " Chichester, Norwich, and Carlisle, showed themselves
 " honest and learned men. He writes as one of the
 " peers; for he adds, we of the temporality have been all
 " of one opinion. The Lord Chancellor and the Lord
 " Privy-Seal had been of their side. Cranmer and all
 " the Bishops came over; only he adds, that Shaxton
 " continued a lewd fool. For this victory, he writes
 " that all England had reason to bless God."

The King
 marries
 Anne of
 Cleve.

Cromwell, though he complied with the King's hu-
 mour, yet he studied to gain upon him, and to fix him
 in an alliance that should certainly separate him from
 the Emperor, and engage him again into a closer cor-
 respondence with France, on design to support the
 Princes of Germany against the Emperor, whose un-
 easiness under the laws and liberties of the empire be-
 gan to be suspected: and all the Popish party depended
 wholly on him. I did in my second volume publish a

commission to Cromwell, thinking it was that which BOOK
 constituted him the King's Vicegerent, which I, upon III.
 reading the beginning of it, took to be so ; but that was 1539.
 one of the effects of the haste in which I wrote that Vol. II.
 work : it does indeed in the preamble set forth, " that Coll. Rec.
 " the King was then in some sort to exercise that su- book ii. N.
 " preme authority he had over the Church of England, 29.
 " under Christ ; since they who pretended that that Commis-
 " authority ought to be lodged with them, did pursue sion to
 " their own private gains, more than the public good ; Cromwell
 " and had brought matters, by the negligence of their to consti-
 " officers, and their own ill example, to such a state, that tute some
 " it might be feared, that Christ would not now own his under him.
 " own spouse. Therefore, since the supreme authority
 " over all persons, without any difference, was given him
 " from Heaven, he was bound (as much as he could) to
 " cleanse the church from all briars, and to sow the seeds
 " of virtue in it. Those who before exercised this autho-
 " rity, thinking themselves above all censure, had (by
 " their own bad examples) laid stumbling-blocks before
 " the people. He therefore, designing a general refor-
 " mation of his kingdom and church, resolved to begin
 " with the fountains ; for they being cleansed, the
 " streams would run clear : but since he could not be
 " personally present every where, he had deputed Tho-
 " mas Cromwell, his principal Secretary, and Master of
 " the Rolls, to be in all ecclesiastical causes his Vice-
 " gerent and Vicar-General ; with a power to name
 " others, to be authorized under the Great Seal. But
 " he being so employed in the public affairs of the
 " kingdom, that he could not personally discharge that
 " trust ; therefore he deputed A, B, C, D, to execute
 " that trust. The King being pleased with this depu-
 " tation, did likewise empower them to visit all churches,
 " both metropolitical, cathedral, and collegiate churches,
 " hospitals and monasteries, and all other places, ex-

PART "empt or not exempt, to correct and punish what was
III. "amiss in them, by censures of suspension and de-
1539. "privation, to give them statutes and injunctions in
 "the King's name, and to hold synods, chapters, or
 "convocations, summoning all persons concerned to ap-
 "pear before them, and presiding in them, giving them
 "such rules as they shall judge convenient: calling
 "such causes as they shall think fit from the ecclesi-
 "astical courts, to be judged by them; and to force
 "obedience, both by ecclesiastical censures and fines,
 "and other temporal punishments;" with several other
 clauses of a very extended and comprehensive na-
 ture. How far this was put in practice, does not
 fully appear to me. It certainly struck so deep into
 the whole ecclesiastical constitution, that it could not
 be easily borne. But the clergy had lost their reputation
 and credit, so that every invasion that was made on
 them, and on their courts, seemed to be at this time ac-
 ceptable to the nation; one extreme very naturally pro-
 ducing another: for all did acquiesce tamely, in sub-
 mitting to a power that was now in high exaltation, and
 that treated those that stood in its way, not only with
 the utmost indignation, but with the most rigorous se-
 verity.

He is in
 love with
 Katherine
 Howard.

But to return to Cromwell. He, in concurrence with
 the court of France, carried matters so, that the mar-
 riage with Anne of Cleve was made up. This occasioned
 one of the most unjustifiable steps in all that reign.
 Among the papers that were sent me from Zurick, there
 is a long and particular account of many passages in
 this matter, with some other important transactions of
 this year, writ by one Richard Hill, who writes very
 sensibly, and very piously; and he being zealous for a
 further reformation, went out of England as a man con-
 cerned in trade, which he pursued only as a just excuse
 to get out of the way: but before he went over, he

wrote a long account to Bullinger of the affairs in England. He tells him, "that before Whit-Sunday three persons were burnt in Southwark because they had not received the sacrament at Easter, and had denied transubstantiation. There was after that one Collins, a crazed man, likewise burnt, alſ by Gardiner's procurement." A little before Midsummer it began to be whispered about, that the King intended a divorce with Anne, who had been married to him above five months. It was observed that the King was much taken with a young person, a niece of the Duke of Norfolk's, (whom he afterwards married;) Gardiner took care to bring them together to his palace, where they dined once, and had some meetings and entertainments there. This went on some time before there was any talk of the divorce: it was indeed believed that there was an ill commerce between them. Cromwell was newly made Earl of Essex: Bouchier, in whom that line was extinct, who had been a severe persecutor, falling from his horse, and breaking his neck, died without being able to speak one word. The King gave Cromwell not only his title, but all that fell to the crown by his dying without heirs: yet he enjoyed not this long; for in the beginning of June he was sent to the Tower. He did not know the secret cause of his fall; it was generally believed it was because he did not flatter the King enough, and that he was against the divorce, as thinking it would neither be for the King's honour, nor the good of the kingdom. Some suspected that his late advancement, and great grants the King had given him, was an artifice to make people conclude, when they saw him disgraced after such high favour, that certainly some very black thing was discovered: and it was also thought, that the King restored to his son (who was so weak, that he was thought almost a fool) much of his father's estate and goods, (as he made him a baron in December, after his

BOOK
III.
1539.

Cromwell's
fall.

were then prisoners, and were examined. The witnesses, with the council, were ordered to be sent to Berkshire and Somersetshire. Mention is made of their complices, who were to be tried, and to suffer with them. To this I must add, that in one of the Zurick letters it is written to Bullinger, that three of the richest abbots in England had suffered for a conspiracy, into which they had entered, for restoring the Pope's authority in England.

The learned Dr. Tanner has sent me the copy of a letter, that three visitors wrote to Cromwell from Glasenbury, concerning that Abbot, on the 22d of September; but they do not add the year. It will be found in the Collection, signed by Richard Pollard, Thomas Moyle, and Richard Layton. "They give him an account of their examining the Abbot upon certain articles. He did not seem to answer them clearly; so they desired him to call to his memory the things which he then seemed to have forgot. They searched his study, and found in it a written book against the King's divorce. They found also pardons, copies of bulls, and a printed life of Thomas Becket; but found no letter that was material. They examined him a second time upon the articles that Cromwell had given them; and sent up his answer, signed by him, to court: in which they write, that his cankered and traitorous heart against the King and his succession did appear; so with very fair words they sent him to the Tower. They found he was but a weak man, and sickly. Having sent him away, they examined the state of that monastery. They found in it above 300l. in cash, but had not the certainty of the rest of their plate; only they found a fair gold chalice, with other plate, hid by the Abbot, that had not been seen by the former visitors; of which, they think, the Abbot intended to have made his own advantage.

BOOK
III.
1539.

Collect.
Numb. 67.

PART "They write, that the house was the noblest they had

III. "ever seen of that sort: they thought it fit for the

1559. "King, and for none else." This I set down the more particularly, to demonstrate the falsity of the extravagant account that Sanders gives of that matter, as if it had been without notice given, that the Abbot was seized on, tried and executed, all of a sudden. But to return to Cromwell.

In another note, he mentions the determinations made by Day, Heath, and Thirleby, of the Ten Commandments, of justification, and of purgatory. Another is about Fisher and More. The judge's opinion was asked, concerning More and the Nun. Another is, Whether the Bishop of Rochester, and the monk, who wrote the letter as from heaven, should be sent for? In another, that Bocking printed the Nun's book, and took away 500 copies, but left 200 with the printer. In another, he proposed to send Barnes for Melancthon. In another, he asks who shall be Prolocutor in the convocation. In another, he proposes the making Lady Mary a considerable match for some foreign Prince, the Duke of Orleans, or some other. This is all that I could gather out of a vast number of those notes, which he took of matters to move the King in.

The matters at first charged on him, from which he clears himself.

Collect.
Numb. 68.

Upon Cromwell's imprisonment, the Comptroller was sent to him, and he ordered him to write to the King what he thought meet to be written concerning his present condition: and, it seems, with some intimations of hope. Upon that, Cromwell wrote a long letter to the King, which will be found in the Collection. "He begins it with great thanks to the King for what the Comptroller had said to him. He was accused of treason; but he protests, he never once thought to do that which should displease him, much less to commit so high an offence. The King knew his accusers; he prayed God to forgive them. He had ever loved

" the King, and all his proceedings : he prays God to
 " confound him, if he had ever a thought to the con- BOOK
 " trary. He had laboured much to make the King a III.
 " great and a happy Prince ; and acknowledges his 1539.
 " great obligations to the King. So he writes, that if
 " he had been capable to be a traitor, the greatest pu-
 " nishment was too little for him. He never spoke with
 " the Chancellor of the Augmentations (Baker) and
 " Throckmorton together, but once : but he is sure, he
 " never spoke of any such matter," (as, it seems, was
 informed against him.) " The King knew what a man
 " Throckmorton was, with relation to all his proceed-
 " ings ; and what an enemy Baker was to him, God
 " and he knew. The King knew what he had been to-
 " wards him. It seems the King had advertised him of
 " them ; but God, who had delivered Susan when falsely
 " accused, could deliver him. He trusted only in God,
 " and in the King. In all his service, he had only con-
 " sidered the King ; but did not know that he had done
 " injustice to any person : yet he had not done his duty
 " in all things ; therefore he asked mercy. If he had
 " heard of conventicles, or other offences, he had for the
 " most part revealed them, and made them to be pu-
 " nished, but not out of malice. He had meddled in so
 " many things, that he could not answer them all ; but
 " of this he was sure, that he had never willingly of-
 " fended : and whercin he had offended, he humbly
 " begged pardon. The Comptroller told him, that four-
 " teen days ago the King had committed a great secret
 " to him, which he had revealed : he remembered well
 " the matter, but he had never revealed it. For, after
 " the King had told him what it was that he disliked
 " in the Queen ; he told the King, that she often desired
 " to speak with him, but he durst not : yet the King
 " bade him go to her, and be plain with her in declaring
 " his mind. Upon which, he spake privately with her

PART " Lord Chamberlain, desiring him, not naming the
 III. " King, to deal with the Queen to behave herself more
 1539. " pleasantly towards the King ; hoping thereby to have
 " had some faults amended. And when some of her
 " council came to him for license to the stranger maids
 " to depart ; he did then require them to advise the
 " Queen to use all pleasantness with the King. Both
 " these words were spoken before the King had trusted
 " the secret to him, on design that she might render
 " herself more agreeable to the King : but after the
 " King had trusted that secret to him" (which it seems
 " was his design to have the marriage dissolved) " he never
 " spoke of it but to the Lord Admiral, and that was
 " by the King's order on Sunday last ; who was very
 " willing to seek remedy for the King's comfort. He
 " protests he was ready to die to procure the King
 " comfort. He wishes he were in hell if it was not
 " true. This was all he had done ;" (it seems the King
 " thought the change in the Queen's deportment towards
 " him was the effect of his discovering the secret of the
 " King's purpose, and in order to prevent it;) " but for
 " this he humbly begs pardon. He understood that it
 " was charged upon him, that he had more retainers
 " about him than the laws allowed. He never retained
 " any, except his household servants, but against his
 " will. He had been pressed by many, who said they
 " were his friends ; he had retained their children and
 " friends, not as retainers, for their fathers and friends
 " promised to maintain them. In this, God knows,
 " he had no ill intent, but begs pardon if he had of-
 " fended," (for that was represented as the gathering a
 " force about him to defend himself.) " He concludes,
 " he had not behaved himself towards God and the
 " King as he ought to have done : and as he was con-
 " tinually calling on God for mercy, for offences com-
 " mitted against him, so he begs the King's pardon for

“ his offences against him, which were never wilful ; BOOK
 “ and he assures him, he had never a thought of treason III.
 “ against him, either in word or deed : and he conti- 1539.
 “ nued to pray for him and the Prince, ending, indeed,
 “ with too abject a meanness.”

These were all the particulars that were charged on him upon his first imprisonment : other matters were afterwards added to throw the more load on him ; but it seems they were not so much as thought on or mentioned at first. But now I return to the letter writ to Zurick. Hill adds, that they heard they once designed to burn Cromwell as a heretic, and that these considerations made him confess that he had offended the King. What he said that way at his execution was pronounced coldly by him : upon that the writer runs out very copiously, and acknowledges that their sins had provoked God to bring upon them that great change that they saw in affairs. They had wholly trusted to the learning of some, and to the conduct of others : but God, by the taking these away, was calling on them to turn sincerely to him, to trust entirely in him, and to repent with their whole heart. There was at that time a great want of sincere labourers, so that from east to west, and from south to north, there was scarce one faithful and sincere preacher of the Gospel to be found.

The act of dissolving the King's marriage did set forth, that some doubts were raised concerning the King's marriage, which, as he writes, was manifestly false, for no body thought of any doubtfulness in it : nor did they pray, as is in the act, that it might be inquired into : for no body spake of it till the King was resolved to part with the Queen, that he might be married to Mrs. Howard, whom in his bad Latin he calls, *parvissima puella*, a very little girl. The Archbishop of Canterbury, and the rest of the bishops, judged she

Reflections
on the
state of af-
fairs at that
time.

Of the
King's di-
vorce with
Anne of
Cleve.

PART was yet a virgin, which none that knew the man could
III. believe. Here again I must leave my letter.

1539.

What passed
 in con-
 vocation.

There had been no convocation for two years; for The Institution of a Christian Man was prepared by a commission, given to some bishops of both provinces, and to some archdeacons, but no deans were summoned with them. A convocation sate in both provinces in May, in the year 1539, to which abbots and priors were summoned; but though there were eight abbots and nine priors in Exeter diocese, yet the return from thence says, there were none in the diocese. I do not know how to reconcile that with the Abbot of Tavestoke's sitting in the House of Lords, as appears by the Journals of that parliament.

Upon this occasion there was a particular summons for both provinces to meet in a national synod, to judge of the King's marriage. When I wrote of this in my History, I did not at all reflect on the doctrine of the church of Rome, that makes marriage a sacrament, in which the two parties are the ministers, who transfer their persons to one another: and according to the doctrine of the necessity of the intention in him that ministers the sacrament, how vile soever this decision in the matter of the King's marriage may seem to be, yet it was a just consequence from that doctrine; for without a true, free, and inward intention, which the King affirmed he had not, the marriage could be no sacrament: so that the heaviest part of the shame of that decision falls indeed on that doctrine. When the news came to France of the King's dissolving his marriage with Anne of Cleve, King Francis himself asked the ambassadors upon what grounds it went. The Cardinal of Ferrara did also send one to ask what was alleged for it by divines and lawyers. Wallop and others were then the ambassadors from England at the court. They

Paper
 Office.

sent to the Council an account of this ; and Wallop BOOK III.
 wrote over to know what he should say upon the sub- 1539.
 ject. The answer which the Council wrote to him was,
 that the Queen herself affirmed, her person had not
 been touched by King Henry ; that a learned convo-
 cation had judged the matter ; that the Bishops of
 Duresme, Winchester, and Bath, were known to be
 great and learned clerks, who would do nothing but
 upon just and good grounds ; so that all persons ought
 to be satisfied with these proceedings, as she herself
 was : and here this matter ended, to the great reproach
 of that body, that went so hastily and so unanimously
 into that scandalous decision.

But to return to my Zurick letter. After he had re- Exceptions in the act of grace.
 lated the manner of that judgment of those called spi-
 ritual, who indeed were very carnal ; he mentions the
 exceptions in the act of pardon : for besides particular
 exceptions, all Anabaptists and Sacramentaries were ex-
 cepted, and all those that affirmed there was a fate upon
 men, by which the day of their death was unalterably
 determined.

There was at this time a great design against Dr. A design a-
gainst Crome.
 Crome, whom Cranmer had recommended to be Dean
 of Canterbury, in these words : “ I know no man more
 “ meet for the Dean’s room in England than Dr. Crome,
 “ who by his sincere learning, godly conversation, and
 “ good example of living, with his great soberness, hath
 “ done unto the King’s Majesty as good service, I dare
 “ say, as any priest in England : and yet his Grace daily
 “ remembereth all others that doth him service, this
 “ man only excepted, who never had yet, besides his
 “ gracious favour, any promotion at his hands. Where-
 “ fore, if it please his Majesty to put him in the Dean’s
 “ room, I do not doubt but that he should be a light to
 “ all the deans and ministers of colleges in this realm :
 “ for I know that when he was but a President of a col-

PART "lege in Cambridge, his house was better ordered than
III. "all the houses in Cambridge besides." Certainly this

1539. good opinion that Cranmer had of him, made him, in the state in which things were at this time, to be the worse thought of, and the more watched: so when he heard that he was to be searched for, he went to the King, and on his knees begged he would put a stop to the severities then on foot, and that he would set many then in prison, on the account of religion, at liberty. The King had such a regard for him, that upon this he ordered a stop to be put to further prosecutions: and he set those at liberty who were then in prison, they giving bail to appear when they should be called for. The King seemed to think that by this small favour, after some severities, people would be more quiet, and more obedient. But after the parliament was dissolved, six persons suffered. Three of these were popish priests, who suffered as traitors for denying the King's supremacy: and Barnes, Gerrard, and Jerom, were the other three. They were tied to one stake, and suffered without crying out, but were quiet and patient, as if they had felt no pain. He could never hear any reason given for this their suffering, unless it was to please the clergy. They were not condemned by any form of law. They had been so cautious ever since the act of the six Articles passed, that they had not opened their mouths in opposition to them in public: and by the act all offences done before it had passed were pardoned. Barnes himself said at the place of execution, that he did not know for what cause he was brought thither to be burnt; for they were attainted by act of parliament, without being brought to make their answers.

The Bishop of Chichester, Sampson, though a man compliant in all things, and Dr. Wilson, were exempted out of the general pardon, for no other crime, as he heard, but that Abel, who suffered for denying the

King's supremacy, being in the greatest extremity of want and misery in prison, where it was said he was almost eat up by vermin, they had sent him some alms. From this Hill goes on to give an account of Crome, whose constant way had been, when he saw a storm rising, to preach with more zeal than ordinary against the prevailing corruption: so on Christmas-day his enemies, that were watching to find matter to accuse him, framed some articles, which they carried to the King against him. He had condemned in his sermon all masses for the dead; and said, "if they were profitable to the dead, the King and parliament had done wrong in destroying the monasteries endowed for that end: he also said, that to pray to the saints only to pray for us, was a practice neither necessary nor useful. He added, you call us the seditious preachers of a new doctrine; but 'tis you are the seditious persons, who maintain the superstitious traditions of men, and will not hear the word of God himself. The church of Christ will ever suffer persecution, as it has done of late among us."

These and some other complaints being carried to the King, Crome was commanded to answer them: he in his answer explained, and justified all he had said. The King had no mind to carry matters further against so eminent a man; so he passed a sentence, in which he set forth, that Crome had confessed the articles objected to him; but the King out of his clemency intending to quiet his people, appointed Crome to preach at Saint Paul's, and there to repeat all the articles objected to him, and then to read the judgment that the King gave in the matter: and it concluded, that, if ever he fell into the like offence again, he was to suffer according to law. The King's judgment was, "that private masses were sacrifices profitable both to the living and to the dead, but yet that the King's Majesty,

PART "with his parliament, had justly abolished monaste-
III. "ries." Upon this Crome preached; and at the end of
 1539. his sermon he told the people he had received an order from the King to be read to them; which he read, but said not one word upon it; and with a short prayer dismissed the congregation: whereas the King expected that he should have applauded his judgment, and extolled his favour to himself, as Dr. Barnes and his two companions were unhappily prevailed on to do, and yet were burnt afterwards. Hill was therefore afraid that Crome might be brought into further trouble. There was an order sent to him from the King to preach no more, as he had before forbidden both Latimer and Shaxton to preach any more. They were not excluded from the general pardon; but were still prohibited to preach: and when they were set at liberty, they were required not to come within ten miles of either of the universities, or the city of London, or the dioceses in which they had been bishops. Thus, says he, faithful shepherds were driven from their flocks, and ravenous wolves were sent in their stead. He concludes, hoping that God would not suffer them to be long oppressed by such tyranny. Thus I have given a very particular account of that long letter, writ with much good sense and piety, but in very bad Latin; therefore I do not put it in the Collection.

Sampson, though he fell into this disgrace for an act of Christian pity, yet hitherto had showed a very entire compliance with all that had been done. He had published an explanation on the first fifty Psalms, which he dedicated to the King: in which, as he extolled his proceedings, so he run out into a severe invective against the Bishop of Rome, and the usurpations and corruptions favoured by that see; and he reflected severely on Pool. Pool's old friend Tonstall did also in a sermon at Saint Paul's, on Palm-Sunday, in his grave way set

forth his unnatural ingratitude. But now the popish party, upon Cromwell's fall, and the exaltation of the Duke of Norfolk, by the King's marrying his niece, broke out into their usual violence; and they were, as we may reasonably believe, set on to it by Bonner, who upon Stokesly's death, a year before, had been brought to London, and immediately upon Cromwell's disgrace changed sides; and, from having acted a forced part with heat enough, now came to act that which was natural to him.

There were so many informations brought in the city of London, that a jury sitting in Mercers'-Chapel presented 500 persons to be tried upon the statute of the six Articles; which, as may be easily imagined, put the city under great apprehensions: but Audley, the Lord Chancellor, represented to the King, that this was done out of malice; so they were all dismissed, some say, pardoned. Informations came against Papists, on the other side: a letter was sent from the Council to Cranmer, to send Dr. Benger to the Tower. Two of Bonner's chaplains were, by order of Council, sent to the Archbishop, to be examined by him. A vicar was brought out of Wiltshire, out of whose offices Thomas Becket's name was not yet razed: but he was dismissed; for it was believed to be the effect only of negligence, and not of any ill principles. There was a letter of Melancthon's, against the King's proceedings, printed in English; (perhaps it was that which I published in the Addenda to my first volume.) Goodrick Bishop of Ely's chaplain and servant were examined, and his house was searched for it. Many were brought into trouble for words concerning the King and his proceedings. Poor Marbeck of Windsor was imprisoned in the Marshalsea. Many printers were prosecuted for bringing English books into the kingdom against the King's proceedings. In one council-day (for all

BOOK
III.
1539.

Prosecu-
tions upon
the six Ar-
ticles.

PART these particulars are taken out of the Council-books)

III. five and twenty booksellers were examined as to all

1539. books, more particularly English books, that they had sold these last three years. Hains, the Dean of Exeter, was oft before the Council; but particulars are not mentioned. Articles were brought against him, and they were referred to the King's learned council. The Bishops of Ely, Sarum, Rochester, and Westminster were appointed to examine him, and to proceed with all diligence. He was also sent to the Fleet, for *lewd and seditious preaching*, (the words in the Council-book,) and sowing many erroneous opinions; but, after a good lesson and exhortation, with a declaration of the King's mercy and goodness towards him, he was dismissed, under a recognizance of 500 marks, to appear (if called for) any time within five months, to answer to such things as should be laid against him.

On the 4th of May 1542, an entry is made, Cranmer being present, that it was thought good, if the King's Highness shall be so content, that a general commission shall be sent to Kent, with certain special articles; and generally, that all abuses and enormities of religion were to be examined. This was laid on design to ruin Cranmer; but there is no other entry made in the Council-book relating to this matter, unless this was a consequence of it, that on the 27th of June, Hards of Canterbury, a prisoner for a seditious libel, was, after a good exhortation, dismissed. And this is all the light that the only Council-book of that reign, for two years, affords as to those matters. Mr. Strype has helped us to more light.

Mem.
Cranm.
chap. xxv.

A conspi-
racy against
Cranmer.

While Cranmer was visiting his diocese, there were many presentments made of a very different nature. Some were presented for adhering still to the old superstitions condemned by the King, and for insinuations in favour of the Pope's authority. Others again were,

on the other hand, presented for doctrines, either contrary to the six Articles, or to the rites still practised. This created a great confusion through that whole country ; and the blame of all was cast on Cranmer by his enemies, as if he favoured and encouraged that, which was called the *new learning*, too much.

BOOK
III.
1539.

A plot was contrived, chiefly by Gardiner's means, with the assistance of Dr. London, and of Thornden, (Suffragan of Dover, and Prebendary of Canterbury,) who had lived in Cranmer's house, and had all his preferment by his favour. Several others engaged in it, who had all been raised by him, and had pretended zeal for the Gospel ; but, upon Cromwell's fall, they reckoned, that, if they could send Cranmer after him, they would effectually crush all designs of a further reformation.

They resolved to begin with some of the prebendaries and preachers. Many articles were gathered out of their sermons and private discourses, all terminating in the Archbishop ; who, as was said, showed so partial a favour to the men of the *new learning*, and dealt so harshly and severely with the others, that he was represented to be the principal cause of all the heat and divisions that were in Canterbury, and in the other parts of Kent. These articles went through many hands ; but it was not easy to prevail with a proper person to present them. The steps made in the matter are copiously set forth by Mr. Strype. At last they came into the King's hands ; and he upon that passing by Lambeth, where the Archbishop stood, in respect to him, as he passed by, called him into his barge ; and told him, he had now discovered who was the greatest heretic in Kent. With that, he showed him the articles against himself, and his chaplains. The Archbishop knew the falsehood of many particulars ; so he prayed the King to send a commission to examine the matter. The King said, he

PART would give him a commission, but to none else. He
III. answered, it would not seem decent to appoint him to
1539. examine articles exhibited against himself. The King
 said, he knew his integrity, and would trust it to no
 other person: nor would he name above one (though
 pressed to it) that should be joined in commission with
 him. And he even then seemed persuaded it was a
 contrivance of Gardiner's to ruin him.

His great
 mildness.

The Archbishop went down himself into Kent; and
 then the conspirators, seeing the King's favour to him,
 were struck with fear. Some of them wept, and begged
 pardon, and were put in prison; but the rest of the
 commission, in whose hands the Archbishop left the
 matter, being secretly favourers of that party, proceeded
 faintly: so it was writ to court, that unless Dr. Legh
 were sent down, who was well practised in examina-
 tions, the conspiracy would never be found out. He
 was upon that sent down; and he ordered a search to
 be made, at one and the same time, of all suspected
 places; and so he discovered the whole train. Some of
 the Archbishop's domestics, Thornden in particular,
 were among the chief of the informers. He charged
 them with it. They on their knees confessed their
 faults, with many tears. He, who was gentle even to
 excess, said, he did forgive them, and prayed God to
 forgive them, and to make them better men. After
 that, he was never observed to change his countenance,
 or alter his behaviour towards them. He expressed the
 like readiness to pardon all the rest. Many were im-
 prisoned upon these examinations, but the parliament
 granting a subsidy, a general pardon set them all at li-
 berty; which otherwise the Archbishop was resolved to
 have procured to them. This relation differs in several
 particulars from the account that I gave of it in my
 History: but this seems to be the exacter and the better
 vouched, and therefore I acquiesce in it. Another in-

stance is given by the same writer of the King's zeal for Cranmer. Sir John Gostwick, Knight for Bedfordshire, did in the House of Commons charge him for preaching heresy against the sacrament of the altar, both at Feversham and Canterbury. The King hearing of this, did in his rough way threaten Gostwick, calling him *varlet*, and charged him to go and ask Cranmer pardon, otherwise he should feel the effects of his displeasure. The King said, if he had been a Kentish man, he might have had some more shadow for accusing him; but being of Bedfordshire, he could have none. Gostwick, terrified with this message, made his submission to Cranmer, who mildly forgave him, and went to the King, and moved him for his favour; which he did not obtain without some difficulty.

It appears plainly that the King acted as if he had a mind to be thought infallible; and that his subjects were bound to believe as much as he thought fit to open to them, and neither more nor less. He went on this year, before he took his progress, in finishing the Necessary Doctrine and Erudition of any Christian Man: a great part of it was corrected by his own hand, particularly in that article of the Creed, *the Catholic church*, where there are severe reflections added on the Bishops of Rome. Here I found likewise some more of the answers made to the seventeen queries upon the matter of the sacraments that I published in my first volume. I set them out again in my Collection, that by these the reader may better understand the two following papers, that I print separately, and not intermixed with one another, as I did before; which I thought to be an ease to the reader: but since that was made a great offence, I will do it no more. One of these is only an answer to the queries; the writer of the first is not named, it is probably Tonstall's; he is plainly of the same side with the Archbishop of York. It will be found in the

BOOK
III.
1539.

Cott. Libr.
Cleop. E. 5.
Some steps
made in
setting out
true reli-
gion.

Collect.
Numb. 32.
Vol. I.
Reform.

Collect.
Numb. 69.

PART Collection, as also another paper, with several marginal
III. notes in the King's hand, by which it appears that the

1539. King was much shaken from his former notions: he
 Collect. asked for Scripture in several particulars that could not
 Numb. 70. easily be brought. On the margin Cranmer and Barlow
 Collect. are often named, but I do not understand with what
 Numb. 71. view it was that they and no other (except Cox once)
 are named. Over against the 15th Article their names
 are set down in this order; York, Duresme, Carlisle,
 Corren, Simon, Oglethorp, Edgworth, Day, Redman,
 Robinson, Winchester; and a little below, Canterbury,
 Hereford, Rochester, Davys, (I suppose St. David's),
 Westminster, Layton, Tresham, Cox, Crayford; these
 are writ in a hand that I do not know, but not in the
 same hand. It seems those lists were made with rela-
 tion to the different parties in which they stood. The
 book, thus carefully examined, was finished and pub-
 lished.

Katherine
 Howard's
 disgrace.

The King went in progress with his Queen, who be-
 gan to have a great influence on him; and, on what rea-
 son I do not know, she withdrew from her uncle, and
 became his enemy: but, before the King's return, her
 ill life came to be discovered, which ended fatally to
 her. It is scarce worth the reader's while to say any
 more of a matter that is so universally acknowledged;
 but having found an original account subscribed by her-
 self of one of her examinations, I have put it in the
 Collection. It appears there was a particular view in
 the Archbishop of Canterbury's examining her, to draw
 from her all the discoveries they could make to fasten
 a precontract with Dereham on her. Many trifling
 stories relating to that being suggested, she was ex-
 amined to them all: but though she confesses a lewd
 commerce with Dereham, she positively denied every
 thing that could infer a precontract; nor did she con-
 fess any thing of that sort done after the King married

Collect.
 Numb. 72.

her, which she still denied very positively, even to the **BOOK**
last. On the 15th of December letters were written to **III.**
the King's ambassadors abroad, that contain a severe **1542.**
account of the lewd and naughty behaviour and light-
ness of her lately reputed for Queen, (I give the words
of the letter,) at which the King was much troubled.

Upon her disgrace, there was a new negotiation pro-
posed with the Protestant Princes of Germany. Mount
was again sent over to excuse, as well as he could, the
divorce with Anne of Cleves. He said she was treated
nobly and kindly in all respects by the King. He re-
newed the proposition for a league, with relation to
their common interests: but they still stood upon this,
that they could enter into no alliance with him, unless
they agreed in religion, insisting particularly on private
masses, the denying the chalice, and the celibate of the
clergy. Upon which a conference was proposed in
Gelderland, or at Hambourg or Breme. The King in
answer to this wrote, that he would carefully examine
all that they laid before him. He expressed great
regard to the Elector, but complained that some of his
learned men had written virulently against him, and
misrepresented his proceedings. Cranmer likewise wrote
to the Elector, and set forth the great things the King
had already done in abolishing the Pope's authority, the
monastic state, and the idolatrous worship of images:
he desired they would not be uneasy, though the King
in some things differed still from them. He was very
learned himself, and had learned men about him: he
was quick of apprehension, had a sound judgment, and
was firm in what he once resolved on: and he hoped
the propositions they had sent over would be well con-
sidered.

Lord William Howard, the late Queen's uncle, was
then ambassador in France: he tells in one of his let-
ters, that the Admiral was restored to favour, chiefly by

Paper-
Office.
Secken. lib.
iii. p. 78.
A negotia-
tion with
the German
Princes.

PART the means of Madam D'Estampes, whose credit with
III. that King is well known. There were reports that the

1542. Emperor and the French King were in a treaty, and that in conclusion they would join to make war on the King: this was charged on the French, but solemnly disowned by that King. It appears the proposition for marrying the Lady Mary to the Duke of Orleans was then begun: great exceptions were taken to her being declared a bastard; but it was promised, that, when all other things were agreed to, she should be declared legitimate. Upon Queen Katherine Howard's disgrace, Lord William was recalled, and Paget was sent over in his room.

There is in the Paper-Office an original letter of Paget's to the King, that gives an account of his conversation with the Admiral, who was then in high favour, Montmorency being in disgrace. It is very long; but it contains so many important passages, that I have put it in the Collection, and shall here give an abstract of it. It is dated from Chablais the 22d of April, in the year 1542.

Collect.
Numb. 79.

Paget's negotiation with the court of France.

“ He gave the Admiral an account of his instructions,
 “ and of what both the King and his Council had ordered him to say: he perceived the Admiral sighed
 “ and crossed himself often; and said, in his answer to
 “ him, that he saw the King of France resolved to enter into some confederacy; he desired it might be
 “ with the King, and would think of no other Prince
 “ till the King refused him. He thought both the
 “ Kings were by their interests obliged to stick to one
 “ another, though the marriage had never been spoke
 “ of: it is true, that would fix and strengthen it. But
 “ he thought 200,000 crowns was a very mean offer for
 “ such a King's daughter to such a Prince; four or five
 “ hundred thousand crowns was nothing to the King.
 “ The Duke of Orleans was a Prince of great courage, and

“ did aspire to great things. So mean an offer would
 “ quite discourage them. The daughter of Portugal was BOOK
 “ offered with 400,000 ducats, together with the interest III.
 “ of it since her father's death, which was almost as 1542.
 “ much more. At the first motion of the matter, it
 “ was answered, the man must desire the woman ; now
 “ he does desire her, and you offer nothing : with this
 “ he sighed. Paget answered, and fully set out the
 “ personal love that he knew his master had for the
 “ French King : that none of the occasions of suspicion
 “ that had been given could alienate him from it. And
 “ he reckoned up many of these. He acknowledged
 “ there was great hopes of the Duke of Orleans ; but he
 “ studied to show that the offer was not unreasonable,
 “ all things considered. Lewis the Twelfth had but
 “ 300,000 crowns with the King's sister, and the King
 “ of Scots had with the other but 100,000 crowns : but
 “ he said, besides the 200,000 crowns which he offered
 “ to give, they will also forgive 800,000 crowns that
 “ France owed the King, and discharge the 100,000
 “ crowns yearly pension. To this the Admiral replied,
 “ he counted the forgiving the 800,000 crowns for no-
 “ thing : and for the annual pension, they would be at
 “ as much charge to maintain her and her court. Pa-
 “ get said, the 800,000 crowns was a just debt, lent in
 “ an extreme necessity ; and because it had been long
 “ owing, and often respited, must that pass for nothing ?
 “ So he bade him ask reasonably, or offer what was
 “ proper reciprocally for it. The Admiral said, the
 “ King was rich ; and what was 800,000 crowns to him,
 “ which they were not able to pay ? So the Admiral
 “ said, he wished the thing had never been spoke of.
 “ He fell next to turn the motion to the Lady Eliza-
 “ beth, and he proposed a league offensive and defensive
 “ against the Emperor : and that whatever should be
 “ got from the Emperor, should be the King's, in lieu

PART
III.

1542.

“ of the pension during life. He knew the Emperor
 “ was practising with the King, as he was at the same
 “ time with them. Bonner was then sent ambassador
 “ to Spain, and had carried over from the King to the
 “ Emperor three horses of value. The Emperor might
 “ say what he will in the way of practice : but he knew
 “ he would never unite with the King, except he would
 “ return to the Pope ; for so the Nuncio told the Chan-
 “ cellor, and the Chancellor told it to the Queen of Na-
 “ varre, who fell out with him upon that occasion.
 “ She told him he was ill enough before ; but now,
 “ since he had *the mark of the beast*, (for he was lately
 “ made a priest,) he grew worse and worse : the Empe-
 “ ror’s design was only to divide them. He offered to
 “ them that the Duke of Orleans should be King of
 “ Naples, and to give Flanders to the crown of France :
 “ but in lieu of that, he asked the renunciation of Mi-
 “ lan and Navarre, and the restoring of Piedmont and
 “ Savoy : but by this, the father and son being so far
 “ separate, the Emperor would soon drive the Duke of
 “ Orleans out of Naples. He was also studying to gain
 “ the Duke of Cleves, and to restore him Guelder quietly,
 “ provided that he and his wife would renounce Na-
 “ varre : but he concluded, that they knew the Emperor
 “ did nothing but practise. They knew he offered to
 “ the King to reconcile him to the Pope, without any
 “ breach of his honour, for it should be at the Pope’s
 “ suit. Paget said he knew nothing of all that, but be-
 “ lieved it would be hard to reconcile him to the Bi-
 “ shop of Rome, for virtue and vice cannot stand to-
 “ gether in one predicament. Call ye him *vice* ? said
 “ the Admiral ; he is the very *devil*, and I trust to see
 “ his confusion : every thing must have a time, and a
 “ beginning. But when begin you ? said Paget. The
 “ Admiral answered, Before it be long, the King will
 “ give all the abbeyes to his lay-gentlemen, and so by

" little and little overthrow him altogether: why may not
 " we have a patriarch in France? This the Pope's legate BOOK
 " began to perceive; and though they talked of a ge- III.
 " neral council, he believed the Pope would as soon be 1542.
 " hanged as call one. Paget said he would be glad to
 " see them once begin to do somewhat. Ah, said the
 " Admiral, I'm ill matched. He wished the entire
 " union of the two Kings, and if an interview might be
 " between them, it would be the happiest thing could
 " befall Christendom: but he believed some of the
 " King's council leaned too much to the Emperor, and
 " proposed several advantages from it. He said the
 " Emperor cared not if father, friend, and all the
 " world should sink, so his insatiable desires might be
 " satisfied. He suffered two of his brothers-in-law to
 " perish for want of 50,000 crowns: first the King of
 " Hungary; and then the King of Denmark, whom he
 " might have restored, if he would have given him
 " 10,000 crowns. He was then low enough, and they
 " would do well to fall on him, now that he was so low,
 " before he took breath. So he pressed Paget to put
 " matters on heartily with the King: he thought it an
 " unreasonable thing for the Emperor and his brother
 " to ask aid against the Turk, to defend their own do-
 " minions, when they kept the King's dominions from
 " him. Paget gave the King an account of all this
 " conversation very particularly, with an humble sub-
 " mission to him, if in any thing he had gone too far.
 " The court of France believed the Emperor was treat-
 " ing with the King for the marriage of the Lady
 " Mary; and that for that end Bonner was sent to
 " Spain, who was looked on as a man thoroughly im-
 " perial. After Paget had ended his letter, written on
 " the 19th of April, he adds a long postscript on the
 " 22d, for the Admiral had entered into farther dis-
 " course with him the next day. He told him how

PART " sorry he was to see all his hopes blasted: he could
 III. " not sleep all night for it. They had letters from their
 1542. " ambassadors in England, and were amazed to find
 " that a King who was so rich stood for so small a
 " matter. The Pope had offered the Duke of Guise's
 " son 200,000 crowns with his niece: he said he was
 " much troubled at all this; all that were about the
 " King his master were not of one mind, and he had
 " been reproached for beginning this matter. They
 " knew the falsehood and the lies of the Pope and the
 " Emperor well enough: he wished they would consi-
 " der well what the effects of an entire friendship with
 " the King of France might be: the French could do
 " no more than they could do; within two years they
 " would owe the King 100,000 crowns, besides the
 " 100,000 crowns during the King's life, and 50,000
 " crowns for ever after that: but, he said, in those
 " treaties many things ought to be done for their own
 " defence. At this he was called away by the King,
 " but came afterwards to Paget: he said, it was not
 " 100,000, nor 200,000 crowns could enrich the one,
 " nor impoverish the other King: so, he added,
 " we ask your daughter, and you shall have our son:
 " but desired that they might carry the matter further
 " into a league, to make war on the Emperor, defensive,
 " for all their territories.

" He proposed that the King should send 10,000
 " foot and 2,000 horse into Flanders, and to pay 5,000
 " Germans: and the French King should furnish the
 " same number of foot and of Germans, and 3,000
 " horse, and an equal number of ships on both sides;
 " and the King of France should in some other places
 " fall into the Emperor's dominions, at an expence of
 " 200,000 crowns a month. What a thing, said he,
 " would it be to the King to have Gravelin, Dunkirk,
 " and all those quarters joining to Calais! Paget an-

"swered, they might spend all their money, and catch
 "nothing ; and he did not see what ground of quarrel
 "his master had with the Emperor : upon which the
 "Admiral replied, Does not he owe you money ? Hath
 "not he broken his leagues with you in many particu-
 "lars ? Did not he provoke us to join with the Pope
 "and him, to drive your master out of his kingdom ?
 "And hath he not now put the Pope on offering a
 "council to sit at Mantua, Verona, Cambray, or Mets,
 "(this last place was lately named,) all on design to
 "ruin you ? A pestilence take him, said he, false dis-
 "sembler that he is ! if he had you at such an advan-
 "tage as you now have him, you should feel it. And
 "he run out largely, both against the Bishop of Rome
 "and the Emperor : he desired the war might begin
 "that year, the Emperor being so low, that, for all his
 "millions, he had not a penny."

BOOK
 III.
 1542.

On all this the Admiral seemed wonderfully set. Pa-
 get excused himself from entering further into these
 matters, and desired that they might be proposed to
 the King by the French ambassador, then in London ;
 yet being pressed by the Admiral, he promised to lay
 all before the King ; and he did it very fully, but with
 many excuses, and much submission. The King's
 Council writ a short answer to this long letter : they
 expressed their confidence in the Admiral, with great
 acknowledgments for his affection to the King ; but
 they seemed to suspect the King of France, that all his
 professions were only to get money from the King.
 200,000 crowns seemed nothing when they were willing
 to forgive him a million : but by this letter it seems the
 French ambassadors did still insist on 600,000 crowns
 to be paid down. So this matter was let fall But to
 say all that relates to the Duke of Orleans at once :

Mr. Le Vassor has published instructions, of which a
 collated copy was found among Cardinal Granvill's pa-

The Duke
 of Orleans
 promised to

PART

III.

1542.
declare
himself a
Protestant.

pers : it is a question that cannot be answered how he came by it ; whether the original was taken with the Landgrave of Hesse, or by what other way, is not certain. It bears date at Rhemes the 8th of September 1543. " It expresses the great desire that he had that " the holy Gospel might be preached in the whole " kingdom of France ; but the respect that he owed to " the King his father, and to the Dauphin his brother, " made that he did not order it to be preached freely " in his dutchy of Orleans, that being under their obedience. But he sent to the Duke of Saxony, to the " Landgrave of Hesse, and the other Protestant princes, " to assure them that he was resolved, and promised it " expressly to them, that he would order that the " Gospel should be preached in the dutchy of Luxemburgh, and in all other places that should belong to him by the right of war. He desired to be received into " their alliance, and to a league offensive and defensive " with them. He desired earnestly that they would " grant this request, not to be aided by them against " any prince, but only on the account of the Christian " religion, of which he desired the increase above all " things: that by these means light may be spread into " other dominions, and into the kingdom of France, " when the King his father should see him so allied to " those princes ; which will be the cause of making " him declare the good zeal he has to that matter, and " will be able always to excuse it to him, and to defend " it against all his enemies. He desires therefore, that " as soon as he shall give order that the Gospel shall " be preached in the dutchy of Luxemburgh, this league " and alliance may begin. He hopes this will not be " delayed, from the opinion that they may have that " he cannot quickly show what power he has to support the love he bears to this cause ; he hopes in a " little time to show, if it pleases God, some good effect

“ of it : and he offers at present, not only all his own BOOK
 “ force, but the whole force of the King his father, who III.
 “ has given him authority to employ it in every thing 1543.
 “ that he shall judge to be good for them, and in every
 “ thing that may concern their welfare, their profit, and
 “ freedom.”

It is impossible to read this, and to doubt either of his being sincerely a Protestant, or at least that he was willing to profess it openly : and it can as little be doubted, that in this he had his father's leave to do what he did. The retaking of Luxemburgh put an end to this proposition : but it seems the Emperor apprehended that the heat of this young Prince might grow uneasy to him ; therefore he took all methods to satisfy his ambition. For on the 18th of December 1544, the ambassadors at the Emperor's court write over, that he was treating a match between his own eldest daughter and the Duke of Orleans ; and that he offered to give with her the ancient inheritance of the house of Burgundy, the two Burgundies, and the Netherlands : or, if he would marry his brother Ferdinand's second daughter, to give the dutchy of Milan with her. They also mention in April thereafter, that he came to the Emperor, and staid some days with him at Antwerp, and then went back. On this they all concluded that the treaty was like to go on, but do not mention which of the two ladies he liked best ; for there could be no comparison made between what was offered with them. But all the negociation, and all the hopes of that Prince, vanished on the 11th of September 1545 ; for Practices on him end with his life. Karn, the King's ambassador in Flanders, writ over, that on that day he died of the plague.

I come next to put together all that I find in the minutes of convocation during this reign. The Necessary Proceedings in convocation. Erudition was never brought in convocation ; but it was treated by some bishops and divines of both pro-

PART vinces, and published by the King's authority. It
III. seems, when the doctrine was thus settled, there was a
 1543. design to carry on the Reformation further. There was a convocation held in January 1541 ; in the second session of which, the Archbishop delivered them a message from the King, that it was his pleasure that they should consult concerning the reforming our errors : and he delivered some books to them, to be examined by them. It does not appear what sort of books or errors those were, whether of Papists, Sacramentaries, or of Anabaptists ; for of this last sort some had crept into England. The business of Munster had made that name so odious, that three years before this, in October 1538, there was a commission sent to Cranmer, Stokesly, Sampson, and some others, to inquire after Anabaptists, to proceed against them, to restore the penitent, to burn their books, and to deliver the obstinate to the secular arm : but I have not seen what proceedings there were upon this.

A new
translation
of the Bible
designed.

In October 1545, there was an order of Council published to take away shrines and images : several commissions were granted for executing this ; in some, they add bones to images. The Archbishop did likewise move the convocation, in the King's name, to make laws against simony, and to prepare a book of Homilies ; and also a new translation of the Bible : for, it seems, complaints were made of the translation then printed and set up in churches. The several books of the Bible were parcelled out, and assigned to several bishops to translate them. This came to nothing during this reign ; but this same method was followed in Queen Elizabeth's time. In the fifth session the persons were named for this translation. Cranmer had, some few years before this, parcelled out an old translation of the New Testament to several bishops and divines, to be revised and corrected by them : but it was then much

opposed. The Acts of the Apostles was assigned to **BOOK**
Stokesly; but he sent in no return upon it: so the **III.**

Archbishop sent to him for it. His answer was sullen: 1543.

"He wondered what the Archbishop meant, thus to Memor. of Cranmer, Strype, chap. viii.

"abuse the people, by giving them liberty to read the

"Scripture, which did nothing but infect them with

"heresy. He had not looked on his portion; and

"never would: so he sent back the book, saying, He

"would never be guilty of bringing the simple people

"into error." Notwithstanding this, Cranmer had

published a more correct New Testament in English,

which is referred to in the Injunctions that were for-

merly mentioned: but now he designed a new trans-

lation of the whole Bible. In the sixth session, which

was on the 17th of February, a statute against simony

was treated of: there was also some discourse about

the translating the Lord's Prayer, the Creed, and the

Ten Commandments, in the vulgar tongue; and it was

considered, how some words in them ought to be trans-

lated; but what these were, is not mentioned: only it

seems there was a design to find faults in every thing

that Cranmer had done.

On the 24th of February several matters were treated of; that in particular is named, that none should let leases beyond the term of twenty-one years. They treated about many of the rituals, and of Thomas Becket, and of the adorning of images, and about reforming some scandalous comedies. On the third of March the Archbishop told them from the King, that it was his pleasure that the translation of the Bible should be revised by the two Universities. But all the bishops, except Ely and St. David's, protested against this: and it seems they insisted much upon trifles; for they treated of this, Whether, in the translation of the Bible, *the Lord*, or *our Lord*, should be the constant form. On the same day the Lord Chancellor exhibited

PART to them an act, allowing that the bishops' chancellors
III. might marry: to this the bishops dissented. Some
 1544. other matters were proposed; but all was referred to
 the King. Upon the Convocation's being assembled on
 the 16th of February 1542, some homilies were offered
 on different subjects; but nothing is marked concerning
 them. The Archbishop also told them, that the King
 would have the books of the several offices used in
 churches to be examined and corrected; in particular,
 that both at matins and vespers one chapter of the
 New Testament should be read in every parish. Some
 petitions were offered by the clergy: the first was, for
 making a body of the ecclesiastical laws. Of this we
 hear no more in this reign; but we are assured, that
 there was a digested body of them prepared: probably
 it was very near the same that was also prepared in
 King Edward's time. Cranmer, in a letter that he
 wrote to the King out of Kent, on the 24th of January
 154½, which I did put in my second volume, tells him,
 "That, according to his commands, he had sent for the
 "Bishop of Worcester, (Heath,) to let him know, that
 "the King's pleasure was, to have the names of such
 "persons sent him as he had formerly appointed to
 "make ecclesiastical laws for the realm." The Bishop
 promised with all speed to inquire out their names,
 and the book which they made, and to bring both the
 names and the book to the King; which, he writes, he
 had done before that time. By this it appears, that
 persons had been named for that; and that a commis-
 sion was granted, pursuant to which the work had been
 prepared: for things of this kind were never neglected
 by Cranmer. It seems it had been done some years
 before, so that it was almost forgotten; but now, in one
 of King Henry's lucid intervals, it was prepared, as Mr.
 Strype has published. But how it came to pass, that
 no further progress was made, during this reign, in so

Collec-
 tion of
 Records,
 vol. ii.
 Numb. 61.

A reforma-
 tion of the
 ecclesiasti-
 cal laws
 was far
 advanced.

important and so necessary a work, is not easily to be accounted for; since it must have contributed much to the exaltation of the King's supremacy, to have all the ecclesiastical courts governed by a code authorized by him. In the convocation in the year 1543, we have only this short word, That on the 29th of April the Archbishop treated of the sacraments, and on the next day on the article of free will. This is all that I could gather from the copy of the minutes of the convocations; which was communicated to me by my most learned and worthy brother, the Lord Bishop of Lincoln, who assured me it was collated exactly with the only ancient copy that remains, to give us light into the proceedings in the convocations of those times.

It does not appear to me what moved Bell, Bishop of Worcester, to resign his bishoprick. Rymer has printed his resignation; in which it is said, that he did it simply of his own accord. He lived till the year 1556, as his tomb-stone in Clerkenwell Church informs us. Whether he inclined to a further reformation, and so withdrew at this time; or whether the old leaven yet remaining with him made it uneasy for him to comply, does not appear: if his motives had been of the former sort, it may be supposed he would have been thought of in King Edward's time; and if of the latter, then in Queen Mary's reign he might again have appeared: so I must leave it in the dark what his true motive was.

Audley, who had been Lord Chancellor from the time that Sir Thomas More left that post, fell sick in the year 1544, and sent the Great Seal to the King by Sir Edward North and Sir Thomas Bland. The King delivered it to the Lord Wriothesly, and made him Lord Keeper during the Lord Audley's infirmity, with authority to do every thing that the Lord Chancellor might do; and the Duke of Norfolk tendered him the

BOOK
III.
1544.

Bell, Bi-
shop of
Worcester,
resigned
his bi-
shoprick.
Rymer,
tom. xv.

Audley,
Lord Chan-
cellor, died.

Rymer,
ibid.

PART oaths. It seems there was such a regard had to the
III. Lord Audley, that as long as he lived the title of Lord

1544. Chancellor was not given with the seals ; but upon his death Wriothesly was made Lord Chancellor. This seems to be the first instance of a Lord Keeper with the full authority of a Lord Chancellor.

Practices
on some
lords of
Scotland.

I have not now before me such a thread of matters as to carry me regularly through the remaining years of this reign ; and therefore hereafter I only give such passages as I have gathered, without knitting them together in an exact series. The breach between England and France was driven on by the Emperor's means, and promoted by all the Popish party : so the King, to prevent all mischief from Scotland during this war with France, entered into an agreement with the Earls of Lenox and Glencairne, and the elect Bishop of Caithnes, brother to the Earl of Lenox, in May 1544.

Rymer.

The articles are published : they promised, " That they " should cause the word of God to be truly taught in " their countries. 2dly, They should continue the " King's faithful friends. 3dly, They should take care " that the Queen be not secretly carried away. 4thly, " They should assist the King to seize on some castles " on the borders." And they delivered the elect Bishop of Caithnes to the King, as an hostage for their observing these things. On the other hand, " the King engaged to send armies to Scotland both by sea and " land ; and to make the Earl of Lenox, (written in " this, Levinax,) as soon as he could, Governor of Scotland ; and that he should bestow his niece, Lady " Margaret Dowglas, on him." There was a fuller agreement made with them, with more particulars in it, on the 26th of June ; and a pension of 250l. was assigned to the Earl of Glencairne, and 125l. to his son, both during life. Those in the castle of St. Andrew's were also taken into the King's protection : and they

promised to promote the marriage, and the King's interests; and to deliver up the castle when demanded. BOOK
III.

There were also private agreements made with Norman Lesley, Kircaldy of the Grange, and some others; all to be found in Rymer. 1544.
Tom. xv.

The often-cited Seckendorf tells us, that at this time they in Germany began to have greater hopes of the King than ever. Mount was again sent to offer an alliance with them. He excused all the late proceedings: he said, Cromwell had rashly said, "That he hoped to see the time, that he should strike a dagger into the heart of him that should oppose the Reformation;" which his judges thought was meant of the King. He said, Barnes had indiscreetly provoked the Bishop of Winchester: he also blamed their ambassadors for entering into disputes in writing with the King; he believed Melancthon and Bucer would have managed that matter with more success. Bucer seconded Mount's motions, and magnified what the King had already done; though there was no complete reformation yet effected. Seck. l. iii.
p. 121.
Mount sent
to Ger-
many.

This did not move the Elector: he looked on the King as an enemy to their doctrine. His whole design in what he had done was, to make himself the Head of the Church, to which he was not called of God. His government was tyrannical, and his life flagitious; so he looked for no good from him. The King of France moved him to undertake a mediation between him and the King; but the Elector referred that to a general meeting of those who were engaged in the common Smalcaldic League. The princes in Germany having their chief dependance on the Kings of France and England, saw how much they were weakened, and exposed to the Emperor, by the war which was going on between those two Kings; so they sent some empowered by them, to try if it was possible to prevent

PART that war, and to mediate a reconciliation between them.

III. To these, when they delivered their message to the

1544. King, he complained of the injustice and wilfulness of the French King: he thought their interposition could have no effect, and he used these words in an answer to their memorial; *We give them well to understand, that we do both repose an ampler and a fuller confidence in them than the French King either doth or will do.*

A war with
France.

P. 1094.

P. 1115.

De Bellay, who, being oft employed, understood those matters well, tells us, that the Emperor and King Henry had agreed to join their armies, and to march directly into France. He tells in another place, that if King Henry had followed the opinion of his Council, which was for his landing in Normandy with 30,000 men, he would have carried that whole dutchy: and he ascribes his error in that matter to the providence of God, that protected France from so great a danger. The Emperor had proposed to the King, that upon the junction of their two armies they should march straight to Paris: for they reckoned that both their armies would have amounted to 90,000 foot, and 20,000 horse. But after the Emperor had drawn the King into his measures, he went on taking some towns, pursuing his own ends; and then made his own peace with France, and left the King engaged in the war: so the King finding the Emperor's main army was not like to join him, some bodies out of the Netherlands only coming to act in conjunction with him; upon that he sent the Duke of Norfolk to besiege Montrevel, and he himself sate down before Bulloigne. Marshal Bies, Governor of Bulloigne, apprehending the importance of Montrevel, carried a considerable part of the garrison of Bulloigne with him, and threw himself into Montrevel: by this means he left Bulloigne weak, and in ill hands. In the mean time the Emperor took Luxembourg, and some other places: so all the project, with

Bulloigne
taken.

which he had amused the King, vanished, and a peace was struck up between him and the King of France.

BOOK
III.
1544.

The French sent an army to raise the siege of Montrevel, and they were moving so as to get between the Duke of Norfolk and the King's army; upon which the Duke of Norfolk raised the siege: but Bulloigne was taken; and that small conquest was out of measure magnified by those who saw their own advantage in flattering their master, though at a vast charge he had gained a place scarce worth keeping.

The Emperor had that address, and he had so strong a party about the King, that even all this was excused, and the intercourse between the two courts was not discontinued.

The King
is forsaken
by the
Emperor.

In one point the Emperor was necessary to the King, and he kept his word to him. It is certain the King had great apprehensions of the council that was now sitting at Trent; and the more, because Pole was one of the legates sent to preside in it: who, as he had reason to apprehend, would study to engage the council to confirm the Pope's censure thundered out against the King; and it was believed he was named legate for that end. The King of France had offered to Gardiner, that, if the King would join with him, he would suffer no council to meet, but as the King should consent to it: but his fluctuating temper was so well known, that the King trusted in this particular more to the Emperor, whose interest in that council he knew must be great; and the Emperor had promised that the council should not at all intermeddle in the matter between the Pope and the King. The effect showed he was true in this particular.

The King, finding himself so disappointed, and indeed abandoned by the Emperor, sent the Earl of Hartford, with Gardiner, to him, to expostulate with him. A letter of the King's was sent by them to the

PART III. Emperor, written in a very severe strain, charging him with perfidy. The Emperor either had the gout, or pretended to have it; so that he could not be spoke with. His chief ministers at that time, who were Grandville, and his son the Bishop of Arras, delayed them from day to day, and discovered much chicane, as they wrote: upon which they grew so uneasy, that at last they demanded a positive answer; and then these ministers told them, that the Emperor could not carry on the war longer against France: but he offered to mediate a peace between England and France. After that they complain, that they saw the pretence of mediation was managed deceitfully; for the Emperor's design upon Germany being now ready, he apprehended those two Kings, if not engaged in war one with another, would support the princes of the empire, and not suffer the Emperor, under the pretence of a religious war, to make himself master of Germany: therefore he studied to keep up the war between France and England. I find Maurice of Saxony was this year, during the Emperor's war with France, in his court: whether he was then mediating or treating about his perfidious abandoning the Elector, and the other princes of the Smalcaldic League, I know not.

Paper-Office.

A Litany set out in English, with other devotions.

Before the King went out of England, a great step was made towards the reforming the public offices. A form of procession in the English tongue was set out by the King's authority, and a mandate was sent to Bonner to publish it. The title of it was, *An Exhortation to Prayer, thought meet by His Majesty and his Clergy to be read to the People: also a Litany, with Suffrages to be said, or sung, in the time of the Processions.* In the Litany they did still invoke the blessed Virgin, the angels and archangels, and all holy orders of blessed spirits, all holy patriarchs and prophets, apostles, martyrs, confessors, and virgins, and all the

blessed company of heaven, to pray for them. After the word *conspiracy* this is added, *from the tyranny of the Bishop of Rome, and all his detestable enormities*: the rest of the Litany is the same that we still use, only some more collects are put at the end, and the whole is called a *Prayer of Procession*. To this are added some exercises of devotion, called *Psalms*, which are collected out of several parts of Scripture, but chiefly the Psalms: they are well collected; and the whole composition, as there is nothing that approaches to Popery in it, so it is a serious and well-digested course of devotion. There follows a paraphrase on the Lord's Prayer: on the fourth petition there are expressions that seem to come near a true sense of the presence of Christ in the sacrament; for by *daily bread*, as some of the ancients thought, the sacrament of the eucharist is understood, which is thus expressed: *The lively bread of the blessed body of our Saviour Jesu Christ, and the sacred cup of the precious and blessed blood which was shed for us on the cross*. This agrees with our present sense, that Christ is present, not as he is now in heaven, but as he was on the cross: and that, being a thing past, he can only be present in a type and a memorial. The preface is an exhortation to prayer, in which these remarkable words will be found: "It is very convenient, and much acceptable to God, that you should use your private prayer in your mother-tongue; that you, understanding what you ask of God, may more earnestly and fervently desire the same, your hearts and minds agreeing to your mouth and words." This is indeed all over of a pious and noble strain; and, except the invocation of the saints and angels, it is an unexceptionable composition. At the same time Katherine Parre, whom the King had lately married, collected some prayers and meditations, "wherein the mind is stirred patiently to suffer all

BOOK
III.
1545.

PART "affliction here, to set at nought the vain pros-
 III. "perity of this world, and always to long for the
 1545. "everlasting felicity:" which were printed in the year
 1545.

But so apt was the King, whether from some old and inherent opinions that still stuck with him, or from the practices of those who knew how to flatter him suitably to his notions, to go backward and forward in matters of religion, that though on the 15th of October 1545, he ordered a mandate to be sent to Bonner, to publish the English Procession ordained by him, which was executed the day following; yet on the 24th of that month there was a letter written to Cranmer, declaring the King's pleasure for the setting up an image, that had been taken down by his injunctions; ordering him at the same time to abolish the use of holy water about St. John's tide, and to take down an image called our *Lady of Pity in the Pew*, for the idolatry that was committed about it. At this time it was discovered, that great indulgences, with all such like favours, were sent from Rome to Ireland; so that generally in that kingdom the King's supremacy was rejected, and yet at the same time it appears that many were put in prison for denying the presence in the sacrament; and a proclamation was set out, both against Tindall's New Testament, and Coverdale's.

The King
 neglects the
 German
 Princes.

Thirleby, Bishop of Westminster, was sent ambassador to the Emperor; and afterwards Secretary Petre was sent to the same court. Mount continued likewise to be employed, but without a character: he seems to have been both honest and zealous; and in many letters, writ both in the year 1545 and 1546, he warned the King of the Emperor's designs to extirpate Lutheranism, and to force the whole empire to submit to the Pope and the council, then sitting at Trent. The German Princes sent over a vehement application to

the King, to consider the case of Herman, Bishop of Colen, praying him to protect him, and to intercede for him. They gave a great character of the man, of which Mount makes mention in his letters: but I do not find that the King interposed in that matter. The Emperor seemed to enter into great confidences with Thirleby, and either imposed on him, or found him easily wrought on: he told him that the King of France was making great levies in Switzerland, and he was well assured that they were not designed against himself; so he warned the King to be on his guard. This being inquired into, was not only denied by the court of France, but was found to be false, and was looked on as an artifice of the Emperor's to keep up a jealousy between those two courts. By such practices he prevailed on Thirleby to assure the King, that the Emperor did not design to enslave Germany, but only to repress the insolence of some princes, and to give justice a free course: all the news he wrote from thence did run in this strain; so that Germany was fatally abandoned by both Kings. Yet still the King sent over to the Emperor repeated complaints of the ill treatment his subjects met with in Spain from inquisitors; and that in many courts justice was refused to be done them, upon this pretence, that the King and all who adhered to him were declared heretics, and as such they were excommunicated by the Pope, and so were not to be admitted to sue in judicatories: these were sent over to Thirleby, but I do not see what was done upon all those representations.

The last message the King sent to the Germans was in the year 1546, by Mount, with whom one Butler was joined: the German Princes, in general terms, prayed the King to insist on rejecting the council of Trent, assuring him that the Pope would suffer no reformation to be made. This letter was agreed to by the greater

BOOK
III.
1546.

Paper-
Office.

The Elector
of Saxony's
ill opinion
of the King.

PART number of the princes of the union, only the Elector
III. of Saxony had conceived great prejudices against the
 1546. King. He said, "he was an impious man, with whom
 "he desired to have no commerce: he was no better
 "than the Pope, whose yoke he had thrown off only for
 "his own ends: and that he intended out of the two
 "religions to make a third, only for enriching himself;
 "having condemned the principal points of their doc-
 "trine in his parliament."

Ferdinand
 discontent-
 ed with the
 Emperor.

I find at this time a secret disgust the Emperor was
 in towards his brother Ferdinand: upon which, Ferdi-
 nand sent a message to the King, setting forth the just
 claim he had to his father's succession in Spain; since,
 by the agreement of the marriage between Ferdinand
 of Arragon and Isabel of Castile, a special provision was
 made, that, whensoever there was a second son issuing
 from that marriage, the kingdom of Arragon, and all
 that belonged to it, should be again separated from
 Castile. He also pretended, that he ought to have had
 a larger share in the succession of the house of Bur-
 gundy; and that, instead of those rich provinces, he was
 forced to accept of Austria, and the provinces about it,
 which lay exposed to the Turks, and were loaded with
 great debts, contracted by his grandfather Maximilian.
 To this the King sent an answer secretly, and ordered
 the person (who he was, does not appear; but I think
 it was Mount) that carried it, to insist on the discourse
 of his pretensions to the Netherlands, which were then
 vastly rich. He was particularly required to observe
 Ferdinand's behaviour, and all that he said on that
 subject. And it seems that our court, being then in a
 good understanding with the court of France, com-
 municated the matter to Francis: for he wrote, soon
 after that, a letter to Ferdinand, encouraging him to
 stand on his claim, and promising him his assistance to
 support his pretensions on the Emperor. But Ferdi

nand, not being inclined to trust the court of France **BOOK**
with this secret, sent the letter to the Emperor : so I **III.**
see no more of that matter. **1546.**

The last transaction of importance in this reign was ^{The Duke} the fall of the Duke of Norfolk, and of the Earl of ^{of Nor-} Surrey, his son. I find in the Council-Book, in the ^{folk's im-} year 1543, that the Earl was accused for eating flesh in ^{prisonment.} Lent without license; and for walking about the streets in the night, throwing stones against windows; for which he was sent to the Fleet: in another letter he is complained of for riotous living. Towards the end of the year 1546, both he and his father were put in prison; and it seems the Council wrote to all the King's ambassadors beyond sea an account of this, much aggravated, as the discovery of some very dangerous conspiracy, which they were to represent to those princes in very black characters. I put in the Collection an ^{Collect.} account given by Thirleby of what he did upon it. ^{Numb. 74.} The letter is long; but I only copy out that which relates to this pretended discovery: dated from Hailbron, on Christmas-day 1546.

“ He understood, by the Council's letters to him,
“ what ungracious and ingrateful persons they were
“ found to be. He professes, he ever loved the father,
“ for he thought him a true servant to the King. He
“ says, he was amazed at the matter, and did not know
“ what to say. God had not only on this occasion,
“ but on many others, put a stop to treasonable designs
“ against the King, who (next to God) was the chief
“ comfort of all good men: he enlarges much on the
“ subject, in the style of a true courtier. The messen-
“ ger brought him the Council's letters, written on the
“ 15th of December, on Christmas-eve; in which he
“ saw the malicious purpose of these two ungracious
“ men: so, according to his orders, he went immedi-
“ ately to demand audience of the Emperor; but the

PART
III.

1546.

“ Emperor intended to repose himself for three or four
 “ days, and so had refused audience to the Nuncio, and
 “ to all other ambassadors: but he said, he would send
 “ a secretary, to whom he might communicate his business. Joyce, his secretary, coming to him, he set
 “ forth the matter as pompously as the Council had
 “ represented it to him: in particular, he spoke of the
 “ haughtiness of the Earl of Surrey; of all which the
 “ Secretary promised to make report to the Emperor,
 “ and likewise to write an account of it to Grandville.
 “ Thirleby excuses himself, that he durst not write of
 “ this matter to the King; he thought it would renew
 “ in him the memory of the ingratitude of these persons, which must wound a noble heart.”

Collect.
 Numb. 75.
 His letter to
 the King.

After so black a representation, great matters might
 be expected: but I have met with an original letter of
 the Duke of Norfolk's to the lords of the Council,
 writ indeed in so bad a hand, that the reading it was
 almost as hard as deciphering; it gives a very different
 account of that matter, at least with relation to the father. He writes, “ that the Lord Great Chamberlain,
 “ and the Secretary of State, had examined him upon
 “ divers particulars. The first was, Whether he had a
 “ cipher with any man? He said, he had never a cipher with any man, but such as he had for the King's
 “ affairs, when he was in his service: and he does not
 “ remember that ever he wrote in cipher, except when
 “ he was in France with the Lord Great Master that
 “ now is, and the Lord Rochford; nor does he remember whether he wrote any letters then, or not; but
 “ these two lords signed whatsoever he wrote. He
 “ heard, that a letter of his was found among Bishop
 “ Fox's papers, which being showed to the Bishop of
 “ Duresme, he advised to throw it into the fire. He
 “ was examined upon this: he did remember the
 “ matter of it was, the setting forth the talk of the

" northern people, after the time of the commotions ; BOOK
 " but that it was against Cromwell, and not at all III.
 " against the King : (so far did they go back, to find 1546.
 " matter to be laid to his charge :) but whether that
 " was in cipher, or not, he did not remember. He
 " was next asked, if any person had said to him, that if
 " the King, the Emperor, and the French King came
 " to a good peace, whether the Bishop of Rome would
 " break that by his dispensation ; and whether he in-
 " clined that way. He did not remember he had ever
 " heard any man speak to that purpose : but, for his
 " own part, if he had twenty lives, he would rather
 " spend them all than that the Bishop of Rome should
 " have any power in this kingdom again. He had read
 " much history, and knew well how his usurpation be-
 " gan and increased ; and both to English, French,
 " and Scots, he has upon all occasions spoken vehe-
 " mently against it. He was also asked, if he knew
 " any thing of a letter from Gardiner and Knevet, the
 " King's ambassadors at the Emperor's court, of a mo-
 " tion made to them for a reconciliation with that Bi-
 " shop ; which was brought to the King at Dover, he
 " being then there.

" In answer to this he writes, he had never been
 " with the King at Dover since the Duke of Richmond
 " died : but for any such overture, he had never heard
 " any thing of it, nor did any person ever mention it
 " to him. It had been said in council, when Sir Fran-
 " cis Bryan was like to have died, as a thing reported
 " by him, that the Bishop of Winchester had said, he
 " could devise a way to set all things right between the
 " King and the Bishop of Rome : upon which, as he
 " remembers, Sir Ralph Sadler was sent to Sir Francis,
 " to ask the truth of that ; but Sir Francis denied it :
 " and this was all that ever he heard of any such over-
 " ture. It seems these were all the questions that were

VOL. III.

U

PART " put to him, to which those were his answers. He
 III. " therefore prayed the lords to intercede with the King,
 1546. " that his accusers might be brought face to face, to
 " say what they had against him; and he did not
 " doubt but it should appear he was falsely accused.
 " He desired to have no more favour than Cromwell
 " had, he himself being present when Cromwell was
 " examined. He adds, Cromwell was a false man; but
 " he was a true, poor gentleman: he did believe, some
 " false man had laid some great thing to his charge.
 " He desired, if he might not see his accusers, that he
 " might at least know what the matters were; and if
 " he did not answer truly to every point, he desired not
 " to live an hour longer.

" He had always been pursued by great enemies
 " about the King; so that his fidelity was tried like
 " gold. If he knew wherein he had offended, he would
 " freely confess it. On Tuesday in the last Whitsun-
 " week he moved the King, that a marriage might be
 " made between his daughter (the Dutchess of Rich-
 " mond) and Sir Thomas Seymour; and that his son
 " Surrey's children might, by cross-marriages, be allied
 " to my Lord Great Chamberlain's children, (the Earl
 " of Hertford.) He appealed to the King, whether his
 " intention in these motions did not appear to be ho-
 " nest. He next reckons up his enemies: Cardinal
 " Wolsey confessed to him at Asher, that he had stu-
 " died for fourteen years how to destroy him, set on to
 " it by the Duke of Suffolk, the Marquis of Exeter,
 " and the Lord Sandys, who often told him, that if he
 " did not put him out of the way, he would undo him.
 " When the Marquis of Exeter suffered, Cromwell
 " examined his wife more strictly concerning him than
 " all other men; of which she sent him word by her
 " brother, the Lord Mountjoy: and Cromwell had often
 " said to himself, that he was a happy man that his

“ wife knew nothing against him, otherwise she would
 “ undo him. The late Duke of Buckingham, at the
 “ bar, where his father sate Lord High Steward, said,
 “ that he himself was the person in the world whom
 “ he had hated most, thinking he had done him ill of-
 “ fices with the King: but, he said, he then saw the con-
 “ trary. Rice, that married his sister, often said, he
 “ wished he could find the means to thrust his dagger
 “ in him. It was well known to many ladies in the
 “ court how much both his two nieces, whom it pleased
 “ the King to marry, had hated him: he had discovered
 “ to the King that for which his mother-in-law was
 “ attainted of misprision of treason. He had always
 “ served the King faithfully, but had of late received
 “ greater favours of him than in times past: what
 “ could therefore move him to be now false to him? *A*
 “ *poor man as I am, yet I am his own near kinsman.*
 “ *Alas! alas! my lords, (writes he,) that ever it should*
 “ *be thought any untruth to be in me.* He prays them
 “ to lay this before the King, and jointly to beseech
 “ him to grant the desires contained in it. So he ends
 “ it with such submissions, as he hoped might mollify
 “ the King.”

BOOK
 III.
 1546.

Here I must add a small correction, because I promised it to the late Sir Robert Southwell, for whose great worth and virtues I had that esteem which he well deserved. Sir Richard Southwell was concerned in the evidence against the Duke of Norfolk. He gave me a memorandum, which I promised to remember when I reviewed my History. There were two brothers, Sir Richard and Sir Robert, who were often confounded, an *R* serving for both their christened names. Sir Richard was a privy-counsellor to Henry the Eighth, King Edward, and Queen Mary: the second brother, Sir Robert, was Master of the Rolls in the time of Henry the Eighth, and in the beginning of

PART Edward the Sixth. I had confounded these, and in
III. two several places called Sir Richard Master of the
 1546. Rolls.

I have now set forth all that I find concerning the Duke of Norfolk: by which it appears, that he was designed to be destroyed only upon suspicion; and his enemies were put on running far back to old stories, to find some colours to justify so black a prosecution. This was the last act of the King's reign; which, happily for the old Duke, was not finished, when the King's death prevented the execution.

A recapitulation of King Henry's reign.

Thus I have gone over all those passages in this reign that have fallen in my way since I wrote my History. I have so carefully avoided repeating any thing that was in my former work, that I have perhaps not made it clear enough, into what parts of it every thing here related ought to be taken in. Nor have I put in my Collection any of those papers, that either the Lord Herbert or Mr. Strype had published, one or two only excepted in each of them: but these I put in it, both because I copied them from the originals, when I did not reflect on their being published by those writers, and because they seemed of great importance to the parts of my History, to which they belonged. Some of these being very short, and the others not long, I thought the inserting them made my Collection more complete. I would not lessen the value of books, to which I have been too much beholden, to make so ill a return; to the last especially, from whose works I have taken that which seemed necessary to make the History as full as might be, but refer my reader to such vouchers as he will find in them.

His mind corrupted by a course of flattery.

And now having ended what I have to say of King Henry, I will add a few reflections on him and on his reign. He had certainly a greater measure of knowledge in learning, more particularly in divinity, than

most princes of that or of any age : that gave occasion to those excessive flatteries, which in a great measure corrupted his temper, and disfigured his whole government. It is deeply rooted in the nature of man to love to be flattered, because self-love makes men their own flatterers, and so they do too easily take down the flatteries that are offered them by others ; who, when they expect advantages by it, are too ready to give this incense to their vanity, according to the returns that they expect from it.

BOOK
III.
1546.

Few are so honest and disinterested in their friendship as to consider the real good of others, but choose rather to comply with their humour and vanity : and since princes have most to give, flattery (too common to all places) is the natural growth of courts ; in which, if there are some few so unfashioned to those places as to seek the real good and honour of the prince by the plain methods of blunt honesty, which may carry them to contradict a mistaken prince, to show him his errors, and with a true firmness of courage to try to work even against the grain ; while they pursue that, which, though it is the real advantage and honour of the prince, yet it is not agreeable to some weak or perverse humour in him ; these are soon overtopped by a multitude of flatterers, who will find it an easy work to undermine such faithful ministers, because their own candour and fidelity makes them use none of the arts of a countermine. Thus the flattered prince easily goes into the hands of those who humour and please him most, without regarding either the true honour of the master, or the good of the community.

If weak princes, of a small measure of knowledge and a low capacity, fall into such hands, the government will dwindle into an unactive languishing ; which will make them a prey to all about them, and expose them to universal contempt both at home and abroad : while

The course
of all courts.

PART the flatterers make their own advantages the chief measure of the government, and do so besiege the abused
III.
1546. and deluded prince, that he fancies he is the wonder and delight of all the world, when he is under the last degrees of the scorn of the worst, and of the pity of the best of his people.

But if these flatterers gain the ascendant over princes of genius and capacity, they put them on great designs, under the false representations of conquests and glory; they engage them either to make or break leagues at pleasure, to enter upon hostilities without any previous steps or declarations of war, to ruin their own people for supporting those wars that are carried on with all the methods both of barbarity and perfidy: while a studied luxury and vanity at home is kept up, to amuse and blind the ignorant beholders with a false show of lustre and magnificence.

Wolsey
 began it,
 but was
 a wise
 minister.

This had too deep a root in King Henry, and was too long flattered by Cardinal Wolsey, to be ever afterwards brought into due bounds and just measures; yet Wolsey pursued the true maxims of England, of maintaining the balance during his ministry. Our trade lay then so entirely in the Netherlands, without our seeming to think of carrying it further, that it was necessary to maintain a good correspondence with those provinces; and Charles's dominions were so widely scattered, that, till Francis was taken prisoner, it was visibly the interest of England to continue still jealous of France, and to favour Charles. But the taking of Francis the First changed the scene; France was then to be supported: it was also so exhausted, and Charles's revenue was so increased, that, without great sums both lent him and expended by England, all must have sunk under Charles's power, if England had not held the balance.

A great
 occasion of

It was also a master-piece in Wolsey to engage the

King to own that the book against Luther was written BOOK by him, in which the secret of those who, no doubt, III. had the greatest share in composing it was so closely 1546. laid, that it never broke out. Seckendorf tells us, that flattery given by his book. Luther believed it was writ by Lee, who was a zealous Thomist, and had been engaged in disputes with Erasmus, and was afterwards made Archbishop of York. If any of these who still adhered to the old doctrines had been concerned in writing it, probably, when they saw King Henry depart from so many points treated of in it, they would have gone beyond sea, and have robbed him of that false honour and those excessive praises which that book had procured him. It is plain More wrote it not: for the King having showed it him before it was published, he (as he mentions in one of his letters to Cromwell) told the King, that he had raised the papacy so high, that it might be objected to him, if he should happen to have any dispute with the Pope, as was often between princes and popes; and it will be found in the remarks on the former volumes, that he in another letter says, he was a *sorter* of that book. This seems to relate only to the digesting it into method and order.

How far King Henry was sincere in pretending scruples of conscience with relation to his first marriage, can only be known to God. His suit of divorce was managed at a vast expence, in a course of many years; in all which time, how strong soever his passion was for Anne Boleyn, yet her being with child so soon after their marriage is a clear evidence that till then they had no unlawful commerce. It does not appear that Wolsey deserved his disgrace, unless it was, that by the commission given to the two legates they were empowered to act conjunctly or severally; so that, though Campegio refused to concur, he might have given sentence legally; yet he being trusted by the

PART
III.

1546.

The cha-
racter of
More.

Pope, his acting according to instructions did not deserve so severe a correction : and had any material discovery been made to render Wolsey criminal, it may be reasonably supposed it would have been published.

The new flatterers falling in with the King's passion, outdid and ruined Wolsey. More was the glory of the age ; and his advancement was the King's honour more than his own, who was a true Christian philosopher. He thought the cause of the King's divorce was just, and as long as it was prosecuted at the court of Rome, so long he favoured it : but when he saw that a breach with that court was like to follow, he left the great post he was in with a superior greatness of mind. It was a fall great enough to retire from that into a private state of life : but the carrying matters so far against him as the King did, was one of the justest reproaches of that reign. More's superstition seems indeed contemptible ; but the constancy of his mind was truly wonderful.

Cromwell's
ministry.

Cromwell's ministry was in a constant course of flattery and submission ; but by that he did great things, that amaze one who has considered them well. The setting up the King's supremacy instead of the usurpations of the papacy, and the rooting out the monastic state in England, considering the wealth, the numbers, and the zeal of the monks and friars in all the parts of the kingdom, as it was a very bold undertaking, so it was executed with great method, and performed in so short a time, and with so few of the convulsions that might have been expected, that all this shows what a master he was, that could bring such a design to be finished in so few years, with so little trouble or danger.

But in conclusion, an unfortunate marriage, to which he advised the King, not proving acceptable, and he being unwilling to destroy what he himself had brought

about, was no doubt backward in the design of breaking it, when the King had told him of it: and then, upon no other visible ground but because Anne of Cleve grew more obliging to the King than she was formerly, the King suspected that Cromwell had betrayed his secret, and had engaged her to a softer deportment on design to prevent the divorce; and did upon that disgrace and destroy him.

BOOK
III.
1546.

The Duke of Norfolk was never till Cromwell's fall the first in favour; but he had still kept his post by perpetual submission and flattery. He was sacrificed at last to the King's jealousy, fearing that he might be too great in his son's infancy; and, being considered as the head of the popish party, might engage in an uneasy competition with the Seymours during the minority of his son: for the points he was at first examined on were of an old date, of no consequence, and supported by no proof.

When the King first threw off the Pope's yoke, the Reformers offered him in their turn all the flatteries they could decently give: and if they could have had the patience to go no further than as he was willing to parcel out a reformation to them, he had perhaps gone further in it. But he seemed to think, that as it was pretended in popery, that infallibility was to go along with the supremacy, therefore those who had yielded the one ought likewise to submit to the other; he turned against them when he saw that their complaisance did not go so far. And upon that, the adherers to the old opinions returned to their old flatteries, and for some time seemed to have brought him quite back to them: which probably might have wrought more powerfully, but that he found the old leaven of the papacy was still working in them. So that he was all the while fluctuating; sometimes making steps to a reformation, but then returning back to

The King's
inconstancy
in matters
of religion.

PART his old notions. One thing probably wrought much
III. on him. It has appeared, that he had great apprehen-
1546. sions of the council that was to meet at Trent, and that
 the Emperor's engagements to restrain the council from
 proceeding in his matter was the main article of the
 new friendship made up between them : and it may be
 very reasonably supposed, that the Emperor represented
 to him, that nothing could secure that matter so cer-
 tainly as his not proceeding to any further innovations
 in religion ; more particularly his adhering firmly to
 the received doctrine of Christ's presence in the sacra-
 ment, and the other articles set forth by him. This
 agreeing with his own opinion, had, as may be well
 imagined, no small share in the change of his conduct
 at that time.

The dexterous application of flattery had generally a
 powerful effect on him : but whatsoever he was, and
 how great soever his pride and vanity and his other
 faults were, he was a great instrument in the hand of
 Providence for many good ends : he first opened the
 door to let light in upon the nation ; he delivered it
 from the yoke of blind and implicit obedience ; he put
 the Scriptures in the hands of the people, and took
 away the terror they were formerly under by the cruelty
 of the ecclesiastical courts ; he declared this Church to
 be an entire and perfect body within itself, with full
 authority to decree and to regulate all things, without
 any dependance on any foreign power ; and he did so
 unite the supreme headship over this Church to the
 imperial crown of this realm, that it seemed a just con-
 sequence that was made by some in a popish reign, that
 he who would not own that this supremacy was in him,
 did by that renounce the crown, of which that title was
 made so essential a part, that they could no more be se-
 parated.

He attacked Popery in its strong holds the mona-

steries, and destroyed them all : and thus he opened **BOOK**
 the way to all that came after, even down to our days. **III.**

So that, while we see the folly and weakness of man in **1546.**
 all his personal failings, which were very many and very
 enormous ; we at the same time see both the justice,
 the wisdom, and the goodness of God, in making him,
 who was once the pride and glory of Popery, become its
 scourge and destruction ; and in directing his pride and
 passion so as to bring about, under the dread of his un-
 relenting temper, a change that a milder reign could
 not have compassed without great convulsions and
 much confusion : above all the rest, we ought to adore
 the goodness of God in rescuing us by his means from
 idolatry and superstition ; from the vain and pompous
 shows in which the worship of God was dressed up, so
 as to vie with heathenism itself, into a simplicity of be-
 lieving, and a purity of worship, conform to the nature
 and attributes of God, and the doctrine and example of
 the Son of God.

May we ever value this as we ought ; and may we in
 our tempers and lives so express the beauty of this holy
 religion, that it may ever shine among us, and may
 shine out from us, to all round about us : and then we
 may hope that God will preserve it to us, and to pos-
 terity after us, for ever !

BOOK IV.

Of what happened during the Reign of King Edward the Sixth, from the Year 1547, to the Year 1553.

I HAD such copious materials when I wrote of this BOOK King, partly from the original Council-book, for the IV. two first years of that reign, but chiefly from the Journal writ in that King's own hand, that I shall not be able to offer the reader so many new things in this as I did in the former, and as I may be able to do in the succeeding reign. Some gleanings I have, which I hope will not be unacceptable. 1547.

I begin with acknowledging a great error committed, in copying out a letter of Luther's, that I found among Bucer's collections. The noble Seckendorf was the first that admonished me of this; but with a modesty suitable to so great a man: without that rancour, in which some among ourselves have vented their ill nature against me. I took the sure method to confess my error, and to procure an exact collated copy of that paper, from that learned body, to whose Library it belongs; which will be found in the Collection. It is an original in Luther's own hand; but it could not have been easily read, if Bucer had not writ out a copy of it, which is bound up in the same volume with the original. It was an instruction that Luther gave to Melancthon, when he went into Hesse, in the year 1534, to meet and treat with Bucer, upon that fatal difference, concerning the manner of the presence in the sacrament. "In which it appears, that Luther was so far

A true account of a paper of Luther's, wrong published in my History.
Collect. Numb. 1.

PART "from departing from his opinion, that he plainly says,
III. "he could not communicate with those of the Zuinglian

1547. "persuasion; but he would willingly tolerate them, in
 "hope that in time they might come to communicate
 "together. And as for a political agreement, he does
 "not think the diversity of religion ought to hinder
 "that; no more than it was a bar to marriage or com-
 "merce, which may be among those of different reli-
 "gions." And now I have, I hope, delivered myself
 from all the censures, to which the wrong publishing of
 that paper had exposed me.

I should next enter into the historical passages of
 King Edward's reign; but a great discovery, made with
 relation to the most important foreign transaction that
 happened both in King Henry and King Edward's
 reign, (I mean the council of Trent; the first session
 of which was in the former reign, and the second in
 this,) has given me an opportunity of acquainting the
 world with many extraordinary passages relating to it.

Vargas's
 letters con-
 cerning the
 council of
 Trent.

There was a large parcel of original letters writ to
 Grandville, then Bishop of Arras, afterwards Cardinal,
 and the chief minister of Charles the Emperor, that,
 when he left the Netherlands, were in the hands of
 some of his secretaries; and were not carried away by
 him. About fifty years after that, Mr. William Trum-
 ball, then King James the First's Envoy at Brussels,
 grandfather to Sir William Trumball, (a person emi-
 nently distinguished by his learning and zeal for reli-
 gion, as well as by the embassies, and other great em-
 ployments, he has so worthily borne,) got these into his
 hands: no doubt, under the promise of absolute se-
 crecy, during the lives of those who had them: since if
 they had been then published, it might have been easily
 traced from whence they must have come; which
 would have been fatal to those who had parted with
 them, in a court so bigotted as was that of Albert and

Isabella. I have read over the whole series of that **BOOK** worthy gentleman's own letters to King James the **IV.** First, and saw so much honesty and zeal running **1547.** through them all, that, it seems, nothing under some sacred tie could have obliged both father and son to keep such a treasure so secret from all the world, especially Padro Paulo's History coming out at that time in London; to which these letters, as far as they went, which is from the 7th of October 1551, to the last of February 1551-2, would have given an authentic confirmation. I have been trusted by the noble owner with the perusal of them. It is impossible to doubt of their being originals: the subscriptions and seals of most of them are still entire.

These were by Sir William deposited in Bishop Stillingfleet's hands, when he was sent to his foreign employments, that such use might be made of them, when he found a person that was master of the Spanish tongue, as the importance of the discovery might deserve. Soon after that, my very worthy friend Dr. Geddes returned from Lisbon, after he had been above ten years preacher to the English factory there: and since he is lately dead, I hope I shall be forgiven, to take the liberty of saying somewhat concerning him. He was a learned and a wise man: he had a true notion of popery, as a political combination, managed by falsehood and cruelty, to establish a temporal empire in the person of the popes. All his thoughts and studies were chiefly employed in detecting this; of which he has given many useful and curious essays in the treatises he wrote, which are all highly valuable. When Bishop Stillingfleet understood that he was master of the Spanish tongue, he put all these papers in his hands. He translated them into English, intending to print the originals in Spanish with them: but none of our printers would undertake that; they reckoning,

Translated
into Eng-
lish by Dr.
Geddes.

PART that where the vent of the book might be looked for,
III. which must be in Spain and Italy, they were sure it
 1547. would not be suffered to be sold: he was therefore
 forced to print the translation in English, without print-
 ing the originals.

And into
 French by
 M. Le Vas-
 sor.

Since that time, that learned and judicious French-
 mau, Monsieur Le Vassor, has published a translation
 of them in French, with many curious reflections: but
 though he found that a complete edition of the letters
 in Spanish was a thing that the booksellers in Holland
 would not undertake, yet he has helped that all he
 could, by giving the parts of the letters that were the
 most critical, and the most important, in Spanish. Both
 these books are highly valuable. The chief writer of
 those letters, Vargas, was a man not only very learned,
 but of a superior genius to most of that age, as appears
 both by the letters themselves, and by the great posts
 he went through. He was specially employed by the
 Emperor, both in the session that was held in the for-
 mer reign, and in that which sate in this reign; to which
 only these letters do relate. He was the chief of the
 council that the Emperor's ambassadors had, in mat-
 ters in which either divinity or canon-law (the last
 being his particular profession) were necessary: and
 such a value was set on him, that the Emperor sent
 him ambassador to the republic of Venice. And when
 the last session was held by Pope Pius the Fourth, Phi-
 lip sent him ambassador to Rome, as the person that
 understood best how to manage that court, with relation
 to the session of the council.

The fraud
 and insol-
 ence of the
 Legate.

I think it may give the reader a just idea of that
 council, both of the fraud and insolence of the Legate,
 and of the method in which matters were carried there,
 to see some of the more signal passages in those letters;
 that it may both give him true impressions of what
 was transacted there, and may move him to have re-

course to the letters themselves. "He sets forth, how BOOK IV.
 "much the Pope and his ministers dreaded the coming 1547.
 "of the Protestants to the council. We can plainly Octob. 7.
 "perceive that they are not themselves, nor in a con-
 "dition to treat about any business, when they are
 "brought to touch on that point.—These may, to
 "their mortification, deliver their minds freely against
 "abuses, and some other things.—Whosoever of-
 "fers any thing that is not grateful to the Legate,
 "or that doth not suit exactly with some people's
 "prepossessions; he is reported to have spoke ill,
 "and to think worse; and to have taken what he
 "said out of I do not know whom.—There are
 "several matters, which the Legate ought to treat
 "with more deliberation than he hath hitherto hand-
 "led things: I pray God give him grace to understand
 "this."

"In the next letter, without date, mention is made The promise that the Emperor made the Pope.
 "of a letter that the Emperor wrote to the Pope; in
 "which he did assure him, that nothing should be done
 "in the council, but that which he had a mind should
 "be done in it: and that he would oblige the prelates
 "to hold their tongues, and to let things pass without
 "any opposition. The copy of this being showed the
 "ambassador, he was astonished at it: but Vargas said,
 "it was not to be understood literally; (in the original Judaice.
 "it is *judaically*;) it was only writ to bring the Pope to
 "grant the bull: but that it was not intended by it
 "that the Pope should be suffered to do such things as
 "would bring all to ruin; but only to do such things
 "as are reasonable. He adds in Latin, that the liberty
 "the Pope took was not only a disease and sickness of
 "mind, but was really grown to a fury and a mad-
 "ness." Here the *spirit* of the promise is set up
 "against the *letter*; and a strict adhering to words is
 "counted a part of the yoke of Judaism, from which

PART some most Christian princes have thought fit, on many
III. occasions, to emancipate themselves.

1547.
 Oct. 12. In another letter he sets forth the behaviour of the prelates. "The Legate never so much as acquaints them with the matter; all things appearing well to them at first sight; and who, knowing nothing of matters until they are just ready to be pronounced, pass them without any more ado.—I am willing to let you know how things are carried here, and what the Pope's aims are; who seeks to authorize all his own pretensions by the council.—There are several other things I am not at all satisfied with, which were carried here with the same sleight that Pope Paul made use of.—And is not this a blessed beginning of a council?—As to the canons of reformation,—they are of so trivial a nature, that several were ashamed to hear them; and had they not been wrapped up in good language together, they would have appeared to the world to be what they are."

The bishops
 knew not
 what they
 did.

Oct. 28. In another letter he writes; "I cannot see how either catholics or heretics can be satisfied with what is done here.—All that is done here is done by the way of Rome: for the Legate, though it were necessary to save the world from sinking, will not depart one tittle from the orders he receives from thence; nor indeed from any thing that he has once himself resolved on."

Nov. 12. In another he writes; "As for the Legate, he goes on still in his old way; consuming of time to the last hour in disputations and congregations concerning doctrines; and will at last produce something in a hurry, in false colours, that may look plausible: by which means they have no time to read, and much less to understand what they are about.—Words or persuasions do signify but very little in this place;

“and I suppose they are not of much greater force at **BOOK**
 “Rome.—By what I can perceive, both God and **IV.**
 “his Majesty are like to be very much dishonoured by **1547.**
 “what will be done here: and if things should go on
 “thus, and be brought to such an issue as the Pope
 “and his ministers aim at, and give out, the church
 “will be left in a much worse condition than she was
 “in before.—I pray God the Pope may be pre-
 “vaild on to alter his measures; though I shall reckon
 “it a miracle if he is, and shall thank God for it as
 “such.”

In another he writes; “There are not words to ex-
 “press the pride, the disrespect and shamefulness, Nov. 26.
The pride
and impu-
dence of
the Legate.
 “wherewith the Legate proceeds.—The success
 “and end of this synod, if God by a miracle does not
 “prevent it, will be such as I have foretold. I say, by
 “a miracle; because it is not to be done by any hu-
 “man means: so that his Majesty does but tire him-
 “self in vain, in negociating with the Pope and his
 “ministers.—The Legate has hammered out such
 “an infamous reformation (for it deserves no better
 “epithet) as must make us a jest to the world. The
 “prelates that are here resent it highly; many of them
 “reckoning that they wound their consciences by hold-
 “ing their tongues, and by suffering things to be car-
 “ried thus.”

Upon the point of collating to benefices, he writes;
 “We ought to put them to show what right the Pope
 “has to collate to any benefice whatsoever. I will un-
 “dertake to demonstrate, from the principles and foun-
 “dations of the law of God, and of nature, and of men;
 “and from the ancient usage of the church, and from
 “good policy; that he has no manner of right to it:
 “and all this without doing injury to his dignity, and
 “the plenitude of his power. He advises the leaving
 “those matters to a better time, in which God will

PART III. 1547. "purge the sons of Levi: which purgation must come, and that with a severe scourge; it being impossible that a thing so violent, and so fraught with abuses, should hold long: the whole nerve of ecclesiastical discipline being broke, and the goods of the church made a perfect trade and merchandise."

No good to be expected from a council.

Speaking of general councils, he writes; "This which is now sitting here will totally undeceive the world, so as to convince it, that, by reason of the opposition and industry of the popes, to engross all to themselves, nothing of reformation is ever to be expected from a general council. I would not have things, wherein the Pope and his court have such great interest and pretensions, to be decided or handled here; since it cannot be done but to our great prejudice, and to the great detriment of the whole church; which at present has neither strength nor courage to resist; and if God do not remedy it, I do not see when it will."

He complains of the exemption of chapters.

Speaking of exemptions, he writes; "The canonists have made strange work; having made many jests, as well as falsehoods, to pass for current truths. When I speak of the canonists, I speak as a thief of the family, being sensible of the abuses which have been authorized by them in the church. The exemption of chapters ought to have been quite taken away, that so there might be something of order and discipline, and that they who are the head should not be made the feet. It troubles me to see how those matters are managed and determined here; the Legate doing whatever he had a mind to, without either numbering or weighing the opinions of the divines and prelates; hurrying and reserving the substance of things, which ought to have been well weighed and digested, to the last minute: the major part not knowing what they are a doing. I mean before the fact; for believing that

“ Christ will not suffer them to err in their determina-
 “ tions, I shall bow down my head to them, and believe
 “ all the matters of faith that shall be decided by them:
 “ I pray God every body else may do the same. The
 “ taking no care to reform innumerable abuses has de-
 “ stroyed so many provinces and kingdoms; and it is
 “ justly to be feared, that what is done in this council
 “ may endanger the destroying of the rest. I must tell
 “ you further, that this council drawing so near an end,
 “ is what all people rejoice at here exceedingly; there
 “ being a great many who wish it never had met: and
 “ for my own part, I would to God it had never been
 “ called; for I am mistaken if it do not leave things
 “ worse than it found them.”

BOOK
 IV.
 1547.

In another of the same date, if there is no error in
 writing, “ he complains that the decree of the doctrine
 “ was not finished till the night before the session: so
 “ that many bishops gave their *placet* to what they
 “ neither did nor could understand. The divines of
 “ Louvain and Cologne, and some Spanish divines,
 “ being much dissatisfied with several of those matters,
 “ have publicly declared they were so. This is a very
 “ bad business: and should things of this nature come
 “ once to be so public, it must totally ruin the credit
 “ of all that has been done, or shall be done hereafter;
 “ and must hinder the council from being ever re-
 “ ceived, either in Flanders, or in Germany. The
 “ bishop of Verdun, speaking to the canons of reforma-
 “ tion, said, they would be unprofitable, and unworthy
 “ of the synod, calling it a *pretended reformation*; the
 “ Legate fell upon him with very rude language, call-
 “ ing him a boy, an impudent raw man, with many
 “ other hard names: nor would he suffer him to speak
 “ a word in his own defence, telling him with great
 “ heat, he knew how to have him chastised. It is
 “ really a matter of amazement to see how things ap-
 “

A decree
 secretly
 amended
 after it
 was passed.

PART III. "pertaining to God are handled here; and that there
 1547. "should not be one to contend for him, or any that
 "have the courage to speak in his behalf; but that we
 "should be all dumb dogs that cannot bark."

Nov. 28. In another he writes, "that the Legate himself
 "wished that the decrees were corrected as to some
 "particulars: and in another, without date, he tells
 "how the divines were employed in correcting them."
 This secret was never heard of before: father Paul
 knew nothing of it. A decree after it has passed in
 council was thus secretly corrected by divines; so the
 infallibility was removed from the council, and lodged
 with the divines.

Dec. 19. In another he writes; "It would have been a happy
 It had been "thing that this council had never met; which is no
 happy that "more than what I have often wished and declared:
 the council "by reason of the many mischiefs it has already done,
 had never met. "and is still doing. It is to little purpose, either in this,
 "or any following age, to hope for any thing of a re-
 "formation from a general council; or to see any better
 "order therein than is in this. He supposes the Em-
 "peror will still continue to solicit the Pope that things
 "may not be carried there at such a scandalous rate
 "as they have been hitherto: and that he will take
 "care that no occasion be given to the council for to
 "disperse itself upon the prelates speaking their mind
 "freely, or denying their consent to such matters as
 "are not convenient; which is a thing that may very
 "justly be feared."

Jan. 10. In another he writes; "This synod must end tumultuously and ingloriously." In another he writes,
Jan. 19. "that it was an astonishing thing that the Legate had
 "foisted in several passages into the doctrine of orders,
 "which must of necessity ruin all. By the brutal violence,
 "pretensions, and obstinacy of the Legate,
 "things are running into such a state, as must in the

“end, if I am not mistaken, make both himself and **BOOK**
 “the whole earth to tremble: or if it does not make **IV.**
 “him tremble, it must be because he is given over to **1547.**
 “a reprobate sense; as in truth he seems to be abun-
 “dantly, in every thing that he does.”

In another he writes; “All they drive at is to get the **Jan. 20.**
 “Pope’s pretensions established under the doctrine of
 “order; and so, instead of healing, to destroy and ruin
 “all: those being matters which were never so much
 “as proposed or disputed in the council: neither is
 “it fitting, as things stand here, that they, or any
 “thing else of the same nature, should be meddled
 “with in this synod.”

He enlarges on the authority of bishops being de-
 rived from Christ, “though subjected to the Pope;
 “and he writes, that upon this bottom only the hier-
 “archy of the church can be established: to settle it
 “on any other, is in effect to confound and destroy it.
 “Nevertheless, the Pope, if he could carry this point,
 “though all things else were ruined, and whatever was
 “done in the ancient church condemned, would find
 “his own account in it: for after that there would be
 “no possibility of ever having any thing redressed.”
 The decree of order, on which the Legate had set his
 heart, is set down at the end of this letter; the transla-
 tion of it into English runs thus:

“This may be called the new Jerusalem, that comes **The decree**
 “down from heaven; which was by the most exactly **concerning**
 “regulated policy of the old Jerusalem, shadowed only **the Pope’s**
 “as a pattern to represent the heavenly Jerusalem: for **authority**
 “as she had many different orders, under one chief **proposed,**
 “governor, so the visible church of Christ has his **but not**
 “chief vicar; for he is the *only* and *supreme head* in **passed.**
 “earth, by whose dispensation offices are distributed
 “so to all the other members, that, in the several
 “orders and stations in which they are placed, they

PART " may execute their functions to the good of the whole
III. " church with the greatest peace and union. A depu-
 1547. " tation of twenty was named to consider of this. The
 " Legate and the two Presidents making three of that
 " number; it was severely attacked by the Bishop of
 " Guadix."

The last of
 February.

In his last letter he writes, "That the legates would
 " one way or other bring about the dissolution of the
 " synod: which will be certainly done, if they can but
 " get the said clauses determined; because in them
 " they will have gained all that they desire: and after
 " that they will never stand in need of any more coun-
 " cils for to serve their pretensions. And in case they
 " should not be able to carry those points, they will
 " then, to rid themselves of this yoke that is upon their
 " neck, and of the fears they will be under, when they
 " shall find that they are not able to bring the synod
 " to do all the mischief to the church, and to the au-
 " thority of the present and all future general councils,
 " that the Pope and his ministers would have them do,
 " they will then perplex and confound all."

He expres-
 ses the
 same opi-
 nion of the
 former ses-
 sion under
 Pope Paul.

These are very clear discoveries of the zeal and in-
 dignation which possessed this great statesman during
 this whole session. He shows also the opinion he had
 of the former session under Pope Paul, (in which he
 had likewise assisted,) in the directions he gives con-
 cerning the government of a council, and of the office
 of an ambassador, which he drew up before the council
 was re-assembled, in this its second session, in which
 these words are:

" In the whole conduct of this council of Trent
 " there does not appear the least footsteps of any of the
 " forementioned essentials of a general council: on the
 " contrary, the most pernicious and effectual methods
 " that can be contrived have been taken to destroy li-
 " berty totally; and to rob councils of that authority,

“ which in case of great storms used to be the sheet-
 “ anchor of the church : by which means they have
 “ cut off all hope of ever having any abuses that infest
 “ the church redressed, to the great disparagement of
 “ all past as well as future councils ; from which no
 “ good is ever to be expected.

BOOK
 IV.
 1547.

“ The conduct of this council has been of pernicious
 “ consequence : in which, under the title of directing
 “ it, the Pope’s legates have so managed matters, that
 “ nothing but what they have a mind to can be pro-
 “ posed, discussed, or defined therein ; and that too
 “ after such a manner as they would have it : all the
 “ liberty that is here being only imaginary ; so that
 “ their naming it is nothing but cheat and banter :
 “ which is so notorious, that several of the prelates,
 “ even among the Pope’s pensioners, have not the face
 “ to deny it. The clause that they have inserted into
 “ the canons of reformation ; which is, *saving in all*
 “ *things the authority of the apostolical see* ; is telling
 “ the world, in plain terms, that what the Pope does
 “ not like shall signify nothing. He writes of certain
 “ methods that the legates have used in negotiating
 “ with people to change their minds : this they have
 “ done so often, that it is now taken notice of by every
 “ body : neither can there be any course more pernicious,
 “ or destructive of the liberty of the council.
 “ The legates many times, when they proposed a thing,
 “ declared their opinion of it first : nay, in the middle
 “ of voting, when they observed any prelate not to
 “ vote as they would have him, they have taken upon
 “ themselves to speak to it, before another was suffered
 “ to vote, doing it sometimes with soft words, and at
 “ other times with harsher ; letting others to under-
 “ stand thereby how they would have them vote ;
 “ many times railing at the prelates, and exposing
 “ them to scorn, and using such methods as would

No shadow
 of liberty
 in the
 council.

PART " make one's heart bleed to hear of, much more to
 III. " see.

1547. " The common method was, the legates assembled
 " the prelates in a general congregation the night be-
 " fore the session was to be held. Then they read the
 " decrees to them, as they and their friends had been
 " pleased to form them. By which means, and by
 " their not being understood by a great many prelates,
 " some not having the courage to speak their minds,
 " and others being quite tired out with the length of
 " the congregation, the decrees were passed. We, who
 " saw and observed all these doings, cannot but lament
 " both our own condition, and the lost authority of
 " councils.

The le-
 gates' way
 in correct-
 ing mani-
 fest abuses.

" He shows the legates' drift was to canonize all the
 " abuses of the court of Rome; so they never suffered
 " them to be treated of freely, but managed them like
 " the compounding of a law-suit: in all which courses,
 " it is certain the Holy Ghost did not assist; they
 " striving still to authorize abuses, and giving the
 " world to understand that the Pope is gracious in
 " granting them any thing, as if all were his own;
 " taking abuses, though never so pernicious, and split-
 " ting them as they thought good: by which artifice,
 " that part of the abuse which was approved of by the
 " synod becomes perpetual; and for the part that was
 " reprobated, they will, according to their custom, find
 " ways to defeat its condemnation.

" There is nothing that can be so much as put to
 " the vote without the consent of the legates: who,
 " notwithstanding that they are (by reason of the great
 " number of pensioners which the Pope has here) al-
 " ways sure of a majority, do nevertheless make use of
 " strange tricks in their conduct of the council. Be-
 " sides, by having made their own creatures the secre-
 " taries, notaries, and all the other officers of the coun-

“cil, they have made it thereby a body, without any **BOOK**
 “thing of soul or strength in it: whereas, all those **IV.**
 “officers ought to have been appointed by the council, **1547.**
 “and especially the notaries.

“This is the course that has been hitherto taken in
 “the council of Trent, which is employed rather in
 “struggling with the Pope and his legates, who seek to
 “engross all to themselves, than in reforming and re-
 “medying the evils under which the church groans. I
 “pray God it do not increase them by the course it
 “takes, by artifice and dissimulation, to reduce the
 “whole synod to the will of the Pope.—It may be
 “truly said, we are in a convention of bishops, but not
 “in a council.—It would have been much better not
 “to have celebrated a council at this time, but to have
 “waited till God had put the Christian commonwealth
 “in a better disposition;—rather than to have cele-
 “brated one after this manner, with so little fruit, to
 “the great sorrow of catholics, the scorn of heretics,
 “and the prejudice of the present and of all future
 “councils.” So much may serve to show the sense
 that Vargas had of the first as well as of the second ses-
 sion of the council of Trent.

Malvenda, one of the Emperor's divines, that was Malvenda and others made the same complaints. Octob. 12.
 there, complains in one letter, “that the decrees, but
 “especially the matters of doctrine, were communi-
 “cated to them very late. So that notwithstanding
 “the substance of these decrees may be sound, which
 “it is well if it is, nevertheless considering that they
 “are to correct them upon a bare hearing them read
 “on the eve of a session, that must in my opinion hin-
 “der them from having that authority and majesty
 “which such matters do use to have. I pray God give
 “them grace to mend this.—He confesses it was not
 “fit any thing should be done without the Pope's con-
 “sent: yet that ought to be managed with all possible

PART III. "secrecy, in order to prevent the Lutherans, if they
 1547. "should come to know it, from reflecting on the liberty
 "of the council, and the freedom that the prelates
 "ought to have; who might safely enjoy more, with-
 "out having any thing pass to the prejudice of his
 "Holiness."

Nov. 22. In another he writes; "As there will not want those
 "that write of this council, so, for my own part, I pray
 "God it may not do more harm than good, and espe-
 "cially to the Germans that are here; who, seeing how
 "little liberty it enjoys, and how much it is under the
 "dominion of the Legate, cannot possibly have that
 "respect and esteem for it as is convenient."

Octob. 12. There are some letters from the Bishop of Oren,
 written in the same strain. In one he writes, "that
 "for what concerns a reformation, the Emperor must
 "set himself about it in earnest, both with the Pope
 "and the fathers: for if he does it not, we shall have
 "our wounds only skinned over, but shall have the
 "rotten core left, to the corrupting of all quickly
 "again.—The prelates here are all very much trou-
 "bled to see with how ill a grace people that say any
 "thing of a reformation are heard." In another he

Nov. 28. writes, "they discover here little or no inclination for
 "to do any thing that deserves the name of a true re-
 "formation. Several things might be done that would
 "be of great advantage to the people, and would be no
 "prejudice to his Holiness, or to his court. May God
 "remedy things! under whom, unless his Majesty and
 "your Lordship labour very hard, there will be no re-
 "medy left for the church. In a postscript, he tells
 "the same story that Vargas had told, of the Legate's
 "treating the Bishop of Verdun so ill, for his calling
 "the reformation offered, a *pretended reformation*: and
 "he commanded him to be silent when he was about
 "to say somewhat in his own justification. The Bi-

“shop answered, that at this rate there was no li-
 “berty; and having obtained leave of the Emperor, BOOK
IV.
 “by whom he was sent thither, he would be gone. 1547.
 “The Legate told him he should not go, but should do
 “what he commanded him.—He writes, that it was
 “a great reproach to the bishops, from whom the
 “world expected canons of reformation; that in truth
 “they could give them nothing but what the Legate
 “pleases.—It were just with the people, if we do not
 “treat about their interest more in earnest than we
 “have done hitherto, for to stone us when we return
 “home.”

I have set all this out so copiously, that it may ap-
 pear, from what those, who were far from being in any
 sort favourers of the reformation, who were at Trent,
 and were let into the secret of affairs, wrote of the coun-
 cil to the Emperor's chief minister, how little, not only
 of liberty, but even of common decency, there appeared
 in the whole conduct of that council.

This digression is, I hope, an acceptable entertain-
 ment to the reader; and it must entirely free every
 considering person from a vulgar but weak prejudice,
 infused into many by practising missionaries, which was
 objected to myself by a great Prince, that no nation
 ought to have reformed itself, in a separation from the
 rest of the church: but that there ought to have been
 a general acquiescing in such things as were commonly
 received, till by a joint concurrence of other churches
 the Reformation might have been agreed and settled in
 a general council. These letters do so effectually dis-
 cover the vanity of this conceit, that at first sight it
 evidently appears, that even those abuses and corrup-
 tions that could not be justified, yet could not be ef-
 fectually reformed at Trent; and that every thing was
 carried there, partly by the artifices of the legates, and
 partly by the many poor Italian prelates, who were all

Reflections
upon those
proceed-
ings.

PART pensioners of the court of Rome : so that no abuse, how
III. gross or crying soever, could be amended, but as the
 1547. Popes for their own ends thought fit to give it up. This
 appears so evidently in the letters, out of which I have
 drawn this abstract, that I hope any prejudice formed
 upon the prospect of an universal reformation is by it
 entirely removed. I turn next to the affairs of Eng-
 land.

The Earl of Hertford, advanced to be Duke of Somers-
 erset, depended much on Paget's advices. He told
 him, on the day that King Henry died, that he desired
 his friendship; and promised to him, that he would
 have a great regard to his advice. But though Paget
 put him oft in mind of this, he forgot it too soon. His
 great success in his first expedition to Scotland was a
 particular happiness to him, and might have established
 him; but his quarrelling so soon with his brother was
 fatal to them both.

Thirlby
 writes of
 the *Interim*.

Thirlby was still ambassador at the Emperor's court :
 he studied to make his court to the Protector, and
 wrote him a very hearty congratulation upon his exal-
 tation; and added, that the Bishop of Arras seemed
 likewise to rejoice at it. At the same time he warned
 him of the designs of the French against England. He
 gave him a long account of the *Interim*, in which he
 writes, that Malvenda had secretly a great hand: he
 himself seems to approve of it; and says, that it was as
 high an act of supremacy as any in all King Henry's
 reign; for by it, not only many of the doctrines of Po-
 pery had mollifying senses put on them, different from
 what was commonly received, but the sacrament was
 allowed to be given in both kinds, and the married
 priests were suffered to officiate. It is true, all was
 softened by this, that it was only a prudent connivance
 in the *Interim*, till the council should be re-assembled,
 to bring all matters to a final settlement.

The Protector either mistrusted Thirlby, or he called him home to assist Cranmer in carrying on the Reformation. He sent Sir Philip Hobby in his stead. He was a man marked in King Henry's time as a favourer of the preachers of the *new learning*, as they were then called. There was one Parson, a clerk, known to have evil opinions (so it is entered in a part of the council-book for the year 1543) touching the *sacrament of the altar*; who was maintained by Weldon, one of the Masters of the Household, and by Hobby, then a Gentleman-Usher, for which they were both sent to the Fleet; but they were soon after discharged.

BOOK
IV.
1547.
Hobby sent
ambassador
to the Em-
peror.

Hobby was therefore sent over ambassador, as a person on whose advices the government here might depend, with relation to the affairs of Germany. I have seen a volume of the letters, writ to him by the Protector and Council, with copies of the answers that he wrote.

His first dispatch mentioned a particular dispute between the Emperor and his Confessor. The Confessor refused to give him absolution, unless he would recall the decree of the *Interim*, and, instead of favouring heresy, would with the sword extirpate heretics. The Emperor said, he was satisfied with what he had done in the matter of the *Interim*, and that he would do no more against the Lutherans: if the Friar would not give him absolution, others would be found who would do it. So the Friar left him.

The Em-
peror's Con-
fessor re-
fused him
absolution
for not
persecuting
heretics.

At that time a proposition of a marriage for the Lady Mary was made by the Emperor, who seemed to apprehend that she was not safe in England. It was with the brother of the King of Portugal. He was called at first the Prince of Portugal; and it was then hearkened to: but when the Council understood he was the King's brother, they did not think fit to entertain it. And in the same letter mention is made of

PART Geoffrey Poole, who was then beyond sea, and desired a
III. pardon : the Council wrote, that he was included in the
 1547. last act of pardon ; yet, since he desired it, they offer
 him a special pardon. This letter is signed, T. Cant.
 Wiltshire, Northampton, Wentworth, T. Ely, T. Cheyne,
 A. Wyngfield, Herbert, N. Walton, J. Gage.

The per-
 fidy of the
 French
 King.

The next dispatch to him has a particular account of
 two persons whom the King of France had corrupted
 to betray one of their forts to him. The King of
 France had said to their ambassador, *par la foy de*
gentilhomme, by the faith of a gentleman, he would
 make no war without giving warning first. This he
 promised on the 20th of July ; yet, hearing of the com-
 motions that were in England, he began hostilities
 against Bulloigne within three or four days after. This
 is signed, E. Somerset, T. Cant. R. Ryche Can. W. St.
 John's, W. Paget, W. Petre, J. Smith, E. Watton. So
 long ago did it appear that the *bona fide* of that court
 was not a thing to be much relied on. I would have
 printed these letters, if they were in my power : but hav-
 ing had the originals in my hands about thirty years
 ago, I did not then copy them out, but contented my-
 self with taking extracts out of them ; to which I shall
 upon other occasions have recourse.

The pro-
 gress of the
 Reforma-
 tion.

As for the progress in the reformation at home,
 Cranmer was delivered from too deep a subjection, in
 which he had lived to King Henry. The load of great
 obligations is a weight on a generous mind : the hope
 he had of gaining on the King to carry him to a fur-
 ther reformation, did no doubt carry him too far in
 his compliances to him. He did perhaps satisfy him-
 self, as I have reason to believe many in the Roman
 communion do to this day, that he did not in his mind,
 or with his thoughts, go along in those devotions that
 they cannot but think unlawful ; but what through a
 fearfulness of temper, or an ill-managed modesty, they

do not depart from established practices, even though they think them unlawful. The compliances that we find in the Apostles, particularly in St. Paul himself, the Apostle of the Gentiles, in order to the gaining the Jews, might all meet together to carry him too far in his submissions to King Henry. This can neither be denied nor justified; but the censures passed on it may be much softened when all these things are laid together. Now he was delivered from that servitude; so he resolved to set about a further reformation with much zeal, though perhaps still with too great caution. He studied if it was possible to gain upon Gardiner: he had reason to believe, from his forwardness in complying with King Henry, that he had no great scrupulosity in his own thoughts; so he tried to draw him to assist, at least not to oppose, the steps that were to be made; and, judging that it was necessary to give the people due instruction, to carry them to a further measure of knowledge, he set about the preparing a book of Homilies to be read in churches: and, to give some more light into the meaning of the New Testament, he chose Erasmus's Paraphrase, as the most unexceptionable book that could be thought on; since he had been so much favoured in England: and as he had written against Luther, so he lived and died in the Roman communion.

Cranmer communicated his designs, with the draught of the Homilies, to Gardiner: but he was resolved to set himself at the head of the popish party. He had, no doubt, great resentments, because he was left out of the Council, which he imputed to the Seymours. Cranmer tried if the offer of bringing him to sit at that board could overcome these; yet all was in vain. He insisted at first on this, that, during the King's minority, it was fit to keep all things quiet, and not to endanger the public peace by venturing on new changes. He

Gardiner at
the head of
the oppo-
sition to it.

PART
III.

1547.

pressed the Archbishop with the only thing that he could not well answer; which was, that he had concurred in setting forth the late King's book of a *necessary Doctrine*: Gardiner wrote, that he was confident Cranmer was a better man than to do any such thing against his conscience upon any King's account; and if his conscience agreed to that book, which he himself had so recommended, he wished things might be left to rest there. Cranmer pressed him again and again in this matter, but he was intractable. In particular he excepted to the Homily of Justification, which was thought to be of Cranmer's own composing: because *justification* was ascribed to *faith* only, in which he thought *charity* had likewise its influence; and that without it *faith* was dead, and a dead thing could not be the cause of *justification*. But the Archbishop showed him his design in that was only to set forth the freedom of God's mercy, which we relying on, had by that the application of it to ourselves; not meaning that *justifying faith* was ever without charity; for even faith did not justify as a meritorious condition, but only as it was an instrument applying God's mercy to sinners. Upon this there was perhaps too much of subtilty on both sides. As for Erasmus's Paraphrase, Gardiner excepted to it as being in many things contrary to the Homilies; so he thought, since they agreed so little together, they ought not to be joined and recommended by the same injunctions: to this it was said, that the Paraphrase was a good and useful book, though in some particulars the Homilies differed from it.

But as they had the perverseness of the popish party to deal with, so it was not easy to restrain their own side. Those whose heat could not be well managed, were apt to break out into great disorders; some insulting the priests as they were officiating, others talking irreverently of the sacrament; some defining the man-

ner of the presence, and others asserting the impossibility of it, as it was explained. These disorders gave occasion to two proclamations this year: the first was on the 12th of November, against insolence towards priests, such as the reviling them, tossing them, and taking their caps and tippets violently from them; the other was on the 27th of December, against irreverent talkers of the sacrament, and against those who in their sermons went to define the manner, the nature and fashion, and the possibility or impossibility of the presence. The visitors went about with their injunctions. They are registered in the books of the Dean and Chapter of York; where the visitation was held in September. It came not to Winchester till October, for the monition concerning it was made on the 7th of October. Whether the slowness of the visitors coming thither was occasioned by any secret practice with Gardiner, and upon the hopes of gaining him or not, I cannot tell. He it seems had before that refused to receive or obey the injunctions; for which he was put in the Fleet: and when he wrote his letter to the Protector, complaining of the proceedings against him, he had been then seven weeks there.

I can say nothing new of the parliament that sate this year. When the convocation was opened on the 5th of November, the Archbishop told them, that it was with the King and the Lords' consent that the prelates and clergy should consult together about settling the Christian religion right, and delivering it to the people. He sent them to choose their Prolocutor, and to present him the Friday following. It is set down in the minutes, that the lower house consulted how they might be joined to the lower house of parliament; and about the reformation of the ecclesiastical laws. On the 9th of December some were appointed to know if the Archbishop had obtained license (in the minutes called

BOOK
IV.
1547.

Proceedings
in convoca-
tion.

PART indemnity, or immunity) for them to treat of matters
III. of religion: In the fifth session, on the last of Novem-

1547. ber, the Prolocutor exhibited an order given him by the Archbishop for receiving the communion in both kinds, to which in the next session they agreed, no man speaking against it: sixty-four agreed to this; Polydore Virgil and Weston being two of them. And in the eighth session, on the 17th of December, a propo-

They af-
firm that it
was free for
the clergy
to marry.

sition was offered to them in these words: "That all
" such canons, laws, statutes, decrees, usages, and cus-
" toms, heretofore made or used, that forbid any person
" to contract matrimony, or condemn matrimony al-
" ready contracted, by any person, for any vow or pro-
" mise of priesthood, chastity, or widowhood, shall from
" henceforth cease, be utterly void, and of none effect."

Here it was that Redman's opinion was read, which I had in my History put as read the following year. This proposition went to all monastic vows, as well as to the marriage of priests. The proposition was subscribed by fifty-three, who were for the affirmative; only twenty-two were for the negative: after which a committee was named to draw the form of an act for the marriage of priests. But all that is in the often-cited minutes as to this matter is, *Item* propounded for the marriage of priests; and to it is added, and that the ecclesiastical laws should be promulgated: there is no more in the minutes of the convocations during this reign.

Strype adds to this a particular remark out of the Defence of the Priests' Marriage, that divers of those who were for the affirmative did never marry; and that some of those who were for the negative yet did afterwards marry. Cranmer went on gathering authorities out of Scripture and the Fathers against unwritten traditions. He wrote a book on this subject in Latin; but in Queen Mary's time it was translated into English, and published by an English exile be-

yond sea. He took a special care to furnish Canterbury with good preachers; but though their labours were not quite without success, yet superstition had too deep a root there to be easily subdued: and in the Universities the old doctrines were so obstinately persisted in, that, when some in Cambridge offered to examine the mass by the Scriptures and the Fathers, and to have a disputation upon it, the Vice-Chancellor did forbid it. The Archbishop had procured a confirmation of their privileges, of Cambridge at least; for Strype only mentions that. The mildness he expressed towards all who opposed him, even with insolence, was remarkable: when one, who thought he carried this too far, told him that if ever it came to the turn of his enemies, they would shew him no such favour; he answered, *Well, if God so provide, we must abide it.*

I did in the account of the arguments against transubstantiation mention a letter of St. Chrysostom's to Cesarius, of which Peter Martyr brought over a copy in Latin to England. Since that time the popish clergy were sensible that by that letter it appeared plainly that St. Chrysostom did believe that the substance of bread and wine remained still in the sacrament, as the human nature remained in the person of Christ; so that by this, all the other high figures used by that father must be understood so as to reconcile them to this letter: therefore they have used all possible endeavours to suppress it. When the learned Bigot had brought a copy of it from Florence to France, and printed it with other things relating to that father, they ordered it to be cut out in such a manner, that in the printed book it appeared that some leaves were cut out; yet one copy of it was brought to the present learned and pious Bishop of Lincoln, then chaplain to our ambassador at Paris, who first printed it here in England;

BOOK
IV.1547.
Cranmer's
labours and
zeal.St. Chryso-
stom's let-
ter to Ce-
sarius
brought to
England.

PART as the learned Le Moyne, having another copy sent to
III. him, printed it about the same time in Holland.

1547. I have nothing to add concerning the tumults of the
 Troubles at Frank- year 1549, but that the popish clergy were generally at
 fort, p. 187. the head of the rebels. Many of these were priests
 that had complied and subscribed the new book; some
 of them were killed in every skirmish, and very few of
 the clergy showed much zeal against them: so that the
 Earl of Bedford could have none but Miles Coverdale
 to go along with the force that he carried into Devon-
 shire to subdue them.

The Lady
 Mary de-
 nies that
 she or her
 servants
 were con-
 cerned in
 the risings.
 Collect.
 Numb. 2.

Upon some information that the Lady Mary's ser-
 vants were active in assisting those commotions, the
 Protector and Council wrote to her on the 17th: that
 letter being delivered to her on the 20th of July, she
 presently wrote an answer, which I had from Sir Wil-
 liam Cook, and it will be found in the Collection. In
 it "she expresses her dislike of those revolts. A chap-
 "lain of hers in Devonshire had been named, but she
 "writes she had not one chaplain in those parts. An-
 "other, that was named, lived constantly in her house:
 "she justifies all her servants that had been named;
 "and assured them, that all of her household were true
 "subjects to the King. The Council had likewise
 "charged her, that her proceedings in matters of reli-
 "gion had given the rebels great courage: which, she
 "wrote, appeared to be untrue; since the rebels in her
 "neighbourhood touched upon no point of religion.
 "She prayed God, that their new alterations and un-
 "lawful liberties might not rather be the occasion of
 "such assemblies. As for Devonshire, she had neither
 "lands nor acquaintance in those parts."

In the suppressing these tumults, the Protector did
 visibly espouse the people's interest, and blamed the
 lords for their inclosures, and the other oppressions
 that had, as he said, occasioned all those disorders. By

this he came to be universally beloved by the people ; **BOOK**
 but, trusting to that, he began to take too much upon **IV.**
 him ; and was so wedded to his own thoughts, that he **1547.**
 often opposed the whole Council. Upon which Paget
 wrote him a long letter, in which, as a faithful friend,
 he set before him his errors ; chiefly his wilfulness, and
 his affecting popularity too much. He desired to be dis-
 missed the Council ; for while he was there he was re-
 solved to deliver his opinion according to his reason, and
 not seek to please another : he had offered him faithful
 advices, and warned him of the cloud that he saw ga-
 thering against him. This he wrote on the 6th of July,
 some months before it broke out. It seems the Pro-
 tector took this freedom well from him, for he con-
 tinued firm to him to the last. His brother the Lord
 Seimour's fall lay heavy on him ; though that lord
 had almost compassed another design, of marrying the
 Lady Elizabeth : so I find it in the Council's letters to
 Hobby of the 18th of January 1547.

Cotton Lib.
 Titus, D. 8.

As for the other matter with which he was loaded, **The enter-**
 the entertaining some German troops, I find among **taining fo-**
 Sir Philip Hobby's letters a great many orders and let- **reign troops**
 ters, signed by the whole Council, as well as by the **in England.**
 Protector, which show that they all concurred in that
 matter. The true secret of it on both sides was this :
 the bulk of the people of England was still possessed
 with the old superstition to such a degree, that it was
 visible they could not be depended on in any matter
 that related to the alterations that were made, or were
 designed to be made : whereas the Germans were full
 of zeal on the other side ; so that they might well be
 trusted to : and the Princes of Germany, who were then
 kept under by the Emperor, so that they neither durst
 nor could keep their troops at home, but hoped they
 might at some better time have an occasion to use
 them, were willing to put them in the hands of the

PART present government of England. Howsoever, this had
III. an odious name put on it, and was called a ruling by
 1547. strangers: so that it very much shook the Duke of Somerset's popularity; for though it could not be denied that all the Council had concurred with him in it, yet the load and blame of all was laid on him.

The popish party was very active in procuring the change of measures that followed. The Council wrote over to the Emperor, to let him know that the necessity of their affairs was like to force them to treat for the delivering up of Bulloigne to the French; though this was a secret, not yet communicated to the whole privy council.

Bonner's being removed was not much resented, neither at home nor abroad. He was a brutal man, few either loved or esteemed him: and Ridley, who came to succeed him, was the most generally esteemed man of all the reformers. One thing that made it more acceptable to those who favoured the Reformation was, the suppressing the bishoprick of Westminster, and the removing Thirleby to Norwich, where it was thought he could do less mischief than where he was: for though he complied as soon as any change was made, yet he secretly opposed every thing, while it was safe to do it. He had a soft and an insinuating way with him; which, as was thought, prevailed too much even on Cranmer himself. But Gardiner was a dexterous man, and much more esteemed, though as little beloved as Bonner was: so the falling on him gave a greater alarm to the whole party. He, who was so well known both in the Emperor's court, and in the French court, sent over tragical accounts of the usage he met with. This was writ over hither by our ambassador at the court of France: upon which a very severe character of him is given in a letter, signed, E. Somerset, T. Cant. R. Rich, C. W. Wiltshire, J. Warwick, J. Bedford,

W. Northampton, G. Clinton, W. Petre, W. Cecyl. In **BOOK**
 it they gave an account of the proceedings against him; **IV.**
 and add, "he had showed not only a wilful pride, but **1547.**
 "a cankered heart, guilty of open and shameful lies;
 "by which impudent falsehood he showed himself most
 "unworthy to be a bishop, whatsoever strangers may
 "think of him. For religion, he is as far from any
 "piety or fashion of a good bishop, as a player of a
 "bishop in a comedy is from a good bishop indeed."

Whether the Protector designed any thing against the constitution of the church, or at least to swallow up the great endowments that were not yet devoured, I cannot tell. But there is an advice in one of Hobby's letters, dexterously enough proposed, that gives reason to suspect this might be on design to broach a business that was to be so cunningly proposed: and Hobby being a confidant of the Protector's, he may be supposed to have written as he was directed by him. He wrote it in September 1548. He tells the Council, "that the Protestants of Germany hoped that the King, "seeing that the late wars in Germany happened chiefly "by the bishops continuing in their princely and lordly "estate, would, for preventing the like, appoint the "godly bishops an honest and competent living, sufficient for their maintenance, taking from them the "rest of those worldly possessions and dignities, and "thereby avoid the vainglory that letteth them truly "and sincerely to do their office, and preach the Gospel "and word of Christ. On the other side he wrote, the "Papists say they doubt not but my lords the bishops, "being a great number of stout and well learned men, "will well enough weigh against their adversaries, and "maintain still their whole estate; which coming to "pass, they have good hope that in time these princely "pillars will well enough resist this fury, and bring "all things again into the old order."

PART
III.

1547.

The popish party
deceived in
their hopes
on the Protector's fall.

Council-
Book.

I have no particulars to add concerning the Protector's fall, and the new scene ; but that soon after, when it appeared that the Papists were not like to be more favourably dealt with than they were under the Duke of Somerset, the Bishop of Arras did expostulate upon it with Hobby. He said, they had been assisting to the pulling down of the Duke of Somerset, and that hopes of better usage had been given them ; yet things went worse with them than before : upon that he fell to rail at Bucer, and said, he believed he inflamed matters in England as much as he had done in the Empire. For at this time many were forced to come to England for shelter, the chief of whom were Bucer, Fagius, Peter Martyr, and Bernardin Ochinus : all these were entertained by Cranmer, till he got good provisions to be made for them in the universities ; which were now most violently set against every step that was made towards a reformation. Hobby came over to England, and tried what service he could do to his friend the Duke of Somerset : but the faction was grown too strong to be withstood. Upon his submission, the matter went for some time very high against him and his friends. On the 13th of October, Sir Thomas Smith, Sir Michael Stanhope, Sir John Thynne, and Edward Wolfe, called adherents to the Duke of Somerset, and the principal instruments of his ill government, were sent to the Tower ; and on the 14th he himself was sent thither. No more mention is made of them till the 6th of February, that the Duke of Somerset was set at liberty ; but bound in a recognizance of 10,000*l.* not to go above four mile from Sheen, or Sion, nor to come into the King's presence, unless he was called for by the King and his Council. And when he knew that the King was to come within four miles of these houses, he was to withdraw from them. Yet, it seems, his enemies were still in some apprehen-

sion of him ; and probably some messages went between him and his friends in the Tower : for, on the 18th of February, they were all made close prisoners, and their servants were not suffered to attend upon them. But it seems, upon examination, this was found not to be of a criminal nature ; so, on the 22d, they were dismissed upon their recognizances. And, upon the 10th of April, the Duke of Somerset was again brought to the council-board, being that day sworn of the privy council.

BOOK
IV.
1549.

On the 20th of April, Hobby being sent back to the Emperor's court, had orders to try if the proposition for a marriage of the Lady Mary to the Prince of Portugal might be again set on foot ; and, in excuse for its being rejected before, he had orders to say, that few of the Council had been made acquainted with it : he was desired therefore to inquire what that Prince's estate was. Whether this flowed from the Earl of Warwick's ambitious designs, which might make him wish to have her sent away far out of England ; or, if it flowed from the uneasiness the Council was in, by reason of her persisting in the old way of religion, I cannot determine. Hobby had also orders to represent to the Emperor, that they had hitherto connived at her mass, in hopes that she would by that connivance be moved to conform herself to the laws : diversity of rites in matters of religion ought not to be suffered. The laws were so strict, that no licence could be granted in opposition to them : yet they were resolved to connive a little longer, though she abused the King's favour ; for she kept as it were an open church, not only for her servants, but for all her neighbours : they therefore wished that the Emperor would give her good advice in this matter. The letter was signed by Cranmer, by the Earls of Wiltshire and Warwick, the Marquis of Northampton, the Lord Wentworth, and Paget, Petre,

PART III. Herbert, Darcy, and Mason. To all this it seems the Emperor had little regard: for not long after that the ambassador wrote over, that, by the Emperor's command, an order was served on him, not to have the English service in his house. The Council looked on this as contrary to the privileges of ambassadors, by the law of nations. So they ordered, that the Emperor's ambassador should not have mass in his house, and gave him notice of it. When the Emperor knew this, he complained of it, as a high violation of the dignity of that character: but the Council-books show that they stood firm, and would not recal their order till the Emperor recalled his order against the new service in the English ambassador's house. What further proceedings were of either side in this matter, does not appear to me. I find by the Council-books, that the carrying on the Reformation was cordially espoused and pursued at that board.

Proceed-
ings against
Gardiner.

Gardiner had been long a prisoner; and his being detained in the Tower, no proceedings being had against him, occasioned a great outcry: so, on the 8th of June 1550, it was resolved to send some to him, to see if he repented of his former obstinacy, and would apply himself to advance the King's proceedings; upon which the King would receive him into favour, and all past errors should be forgiven. So the Duke of Somerset, and others, were sent to him. They made report, on the 10th of June, that he desired to see the book of the King's proceedings, and then he would make a full answer. He seemed to them in all things willing to conform himself to it, promising that if he found any thing in it against his conscience, he would open it to none but to the Council. So the book was sent him; and he was allowed the liberty of the gallery and gardens in the Tower, when the Duke of Norfolk was not in them. On the 13th of June, the Lieutenant of the

Tower reported, that he had given him back the King's book ; and that he said, he would make no answer to it till he was set at liberty ; and that then he would speak his conscience : so the lords, who had been with him, were appointed to go to him again. The matter rested till the 8th of July.

BOOK
IV.

1550.

In an imperfect book of the minutes of the Council, that I have by me, it is set down, that Gardiner did at last subscribe six articles. The two first appear not. The third is, " that the Book of Common Prayer was a " godly and christian book, to be allowed and observed " by all the King's true subjects. 4th, That the King, " in his young and tender age, was a full and entire " King : and that the subjects were bound to obey the " statutes, proclamations, and commands set forth in " this age, as well as if he were thirty or forty years old. " 5th, That the statute of the six Articles was, for just " causes, repealed by the authority of parliament. 6th, " That the King, and his successors, had full authority " in the churches of England and Ireland, to reform " and correct errors and abuses, and to alter rites, and " ceremonies ecclesiastical, as shall seem most conveni- " ent for the edification of his people ; so that the al- " teration is not contrary to the Scriptures, and the " laws of God." To all this he subscribed his name : but no date is added in those minutes ; but it is entered, that he did it in the presence of the Council, who also subscribed as witnesses to it. Their names are, E. Somerset, W. Wiltshire, J. Warwick, J. Bedford, W. Northampton, E. Clinton, G. Cobham, W. Paget, W. Herbert, W. Petre, E. North. It was resolved to carry his submissions further ; so twenty new articles were drawn up : in which, " the obligation to cal- " bacy, and all the vows made by the monks, all " images, relics, and pilgrimages, are condemned. It " is affirmed, that the Scriptures ought to be read by

PART " all : that the mass was full of abuse and superstition,
 III. " and was justly taken away : that the eucharist ought
 1550. " to be received in both kinds : that private masses
 " were not agreeable to Scripture : that the sacrament
 " ought not to be adored : that the book of Homilies
 " was godly and wholesome : that the book of ordain-
 " ing bishops, priests, and deacons ought to be re-
 " ceived and approved by all ; and that the lesser
 " orders were not necessary : that the Scriptures con-
 " tained all things necessary to salvation ; and that
 " Erasmus' Paraphrase was, upon good and godly con-
 " siderations, ordered by the King to be put in all
 " churches."

But to this a preface was added, setting forth, " that
 " whereas he had been suspected as favouring the Bi-
 " shop of Rome's authority, and that he did not ap-
 " prove of the King's proceedings in altering some
 " rites in religion : upon which he had been brought
 " before the Council and admonished ; and was or-
 " dered to preach, declaring himself in those things.
 " But though he promised to do it, he had not done
 " this as he ought to have done : by which, he had not
 " only incurred the King's displeasure, but divers of
 " the King's subjects were encouraged by his example
 " (as the King's Council was certainly informed) to re-
 " pine at his Majesty's proceedings ; for which he was
 " very sorry, and confessed that he had been condignly
 " punished. And he thanked the King for his cle-
 " mency, treating him not with rigour, but mercy.
 " And, that it might appear how little he did repine at
 " his Highness' doings, which in religion were most
 " godly, and to the commonwealth most prudent ; he
 " did therefore of his own will, and without any com-
 " pulsion, subscribe the following articles." But on the
 margin of the minutes the Bishop's answer to this is
 thus set down : " I cannot in my conscience confess

" the preface : knowing myself to be of that sort I am **BOOK**
 " indeed, and ever have been—— ." The rest is torn out. **IV.**

On the 15th of July it is entered, that report was made, **1550.**
 by those who were sent to him, that he said he had
 never offended the King : so he prayed that he might
 be brought to his trial, in which he asked no mercy, but
 only justice. When he had passed his trial, and was
 released, it should then appear what he would do with
 relation to the articles : but it was not reasonable that
 he should subscribe them while he was yet in prison.

Some of the privy-counsellors were sent again to
 him, and they were ordered to carry with them a divine
 and a temporal lawyer ; so they took with them Ridley
 Bishop of London, and Mr. Goodrick. His answer was
 to the same purpose, and was next council-day re-
 ported. Upon which he was brought before the Coun-
 cil, and required to subscribe the paper ; but he still re-
 fusing to do it, the sentence of sequestration was read,
 with a denunciation of deprivation, if he did not con-
 form within three months : nevertheless, (it is added in
 the Council-book,) upon divers good considerations, and
 especially upon hope that within that time he might be
 yet reconciled, it was agreed, that the said Bishop's
 house and servants should be maintained in their pre-
 sent estate, until the time that this intimation should
 expire : and the matter in the mean time was to be
 kept private. These are all the additional passages
 taken from the Council-book relating to Gardiner.

Those steps, in which the Reformation was advancing
 but slowly, occasioned great distractions over most parts
 of the kingdom ; while those who adhered to the old
 practices and doctrines preached severely against all in-
 novations, and others as severely against all corruptions
 and abuses. The ill effects of these contradictory ser-
 mons had given occasion to a proclamation on the 24th
 of April 1550, prohibiting all preaching, except by per-

PART sons licensed by the King or the Archbishop of Can-
III. terbury : and the disorders occasioned by men's divorc-

1550. ing their wives, or marrying more wives than one, were likewise ordered to be proceeded against by the same proclamation. On the 9th of August there came out another proclamation, prohibiting all plays till Allhol-lontide : what the reason of this last was, does not ap-pear. That against all preaching was much censured.

All preach-
 ing is for-
 bidden, ex-
 cept by per-
 sons espe-
 cially li-
 censed.

It was represented, that, by reason of the proclamation against preaching, the people were running into great ignorance and dissoluteness. So letters were ordered to be written to the Bishops of Duresme and Ely ; and eight days after to the Bishop of Lincoln, and other bi-shops, to appoint their chaplains, and others by their discretion, to preach in their dioceses, notwithstanding the proclamation against preaching. There was also an order made in Council, that some bishops, and other learned men, should devise an order for the creation of bishops and priests. I use the words in the Council-book. Twelve were appointed to prepare it. Heath, Bishop of Worcester, was one of them. It seems there was a digested form already prepared, probably by Cranmer, for that service : for the order was made on the 2d of February, and on the 28th it was brought to the Council, signed by eleven of the number, Heath only refusing to sign it. He said, as it is entered in the Council-book, that all that is contained in the book was good and godly ; he also said he would obey it ; but added, that he would not sign it. The matter was respited for some days, and great pains was taken by Cranmer and others to persuade him to sign it ; but he still refusing it (as the Council-book has it) obstinately, he was on the 4th of March sent to the Fleet. He was in September called again before the Council, and re-quired to subscribe the book ; and divers learned men argued to persuade him that the book was expedient

Heath re-
 fuses to
 subscribe
 the book
 of Ordina-
 tions.

and allowable: his obstinacy was charged on him, for **BOOK** which they said he had deserved a longer imprisonment; but he might still recover the King's favour, if **IV.** he would subscribe it. He acknowledged he had been **1530.** very gently used, rather like a son than a subject. He insisted on what he had formerly said, that he would not disobey the order set forth in the book. Every one in the Council took pains on him; for it seemed a contradiction to say he would obey it, and yet not subscribe it. He was offered more time for conferences. He said, he knew he could never be of another mind; adding, that there were other things to which he would not consent, as to take down altars, and to set up instead of them tables. The matter ended with a charge given him to subscribe under the pain of deprivation. At this time two entries made in the Council-books show the good effects of Latimer's zealous preaching. On the 10th of March he brought in 104*l.* recovered of one who had concealed it from the King: and a little after 363*l.* of the King's money: of which, for his attendance in Lent, 50*l.* was allowed to him. I find there was in this reign, as in the former, a peculiar seal for ecclesiastical matters, which was in Secretary Petre's keeping. Many took out licences under this seal for eating meat in Lent; some only for a man and his wife; and some for four, six, or ten, that did eat with them; and some for as many as should come to their house. Licences of another nature I find were often taken out, for keeping a number of retainers, above what was allowed by the statute.

All endeavours were too weak to overcome the aversion that the people had to the steps that were made towards a reformation. Dr. Cox, the King's Almoner and Preceptor, was sent to Sussex, to preach and instruct the people there, who were much disturbed (as the Council-book has it) by the seditious preaching of Day

Day Bishop
of Chiches-
ter in trou-
ble for not
removing
altars.

PART Bishop of Chichester, and others. Day denied this:
III. so an order was made in Council, that he should bring
 1550. in writing that which he had preached. The Duke of Somerset reported to the Council, that Day had been with him, and owned that he had received the order that the Council had made for the taking down of altars, and setting tables in their stead; but answered, that he could not in conscience obey it: this seemed indeed unaccountable; but he insisted that he could not in conscience obey it, and prayed to be excused. Upon that he was summoned to appear before the Council, and there he said, he could not conform himself to their order: for he thought he followed in that both the Scriptures, and the doctors and fathers of the Church; and that he did not perceive any strength in the six reasons, given by the Bishop of London, to justify the change. He quoted a passage in Isaiah, which the Archbishop, with the Bishop of London, and the rest of the Council, thought not at all to the purpose: so he was ordered to confer with the Archbishop, and the Bishops of Ely and London, and to appear before them on the 4th of December. When he was again before the Council, he entered into a dispute with the Archbishop and the Bishop of Ely. They pressed him to give his reasons for being so positive; he insisted on those words in the Epistle to the Hebrews, *We have an altar*: and though they thought it was clear, that by the altar Christ himself was meant, yet that did not satisfy him. They also showed him from Origen, that the Christians in those days had no altars: he might call the table an altar if he pleased; so the ancient writers did: but all this had no effect on him. A few more days were given him to consider of the matter: he positively answered, he could not obey their order with a good conscience; and rather than do it, he was resolved to suffer the loss of all he had. Two days more

were given him ; but he was still firm. So, on the 11th of December 1550, he was sent to the Fleet. Further proceedings against him were stopped for many months ; in which time it is said that the King himself wrote to him : but all was in vain. So, in September 1551, a commission was given to judge him ; and, on the 14th of October, it seems both Heath and he were deprived : for then an order passed in Council for seizing the temporalities of both their bishopricks. Letters were written, in June 1552, concerning them to the Bishops of Ely and London ; the former was to receive Day, and the latter Heath, and to use them as in Christian charity should be most seemly. It seems that both Heath and Day saw the change of doctrine that was preparing, with relation to the sacrament : so they were willing to lay hold on the first colour to break off from any further compliances ; for the points they stood upon did not seem of such importance as to suffer deprivation and imprisonment for them.

There was at that time a very scandalous venality of all offices and employments, which was so much talked of at the court of France, that the ambassador whom the King had there wrote over an account of it ; and it was said, that whereas King Henry had by his endowments made some restitution, yet, for all the wealth they had seized on in chantries and collegiate churches, no schools nor hospitals were yet endowed. Here a very memorable passage in Ridley's life deserves to be remembered. He wrote to Cheek, that he being to give Grindal a prebend in St. Paul's, had received a letter from the Council to stop collation : for the King was to keep that prebend for the furniture of his stable. " Alas, Sir, (he writes,) this is a heavy hearing. Is this the fruit of the Gospel ? Speak, Mr. Cheek, speak for God's sake, in God's cause, unto whomsoever you think you may do any good withal : and if you will

PART "not speak, then I beseech you let this my letter
 III. "speak." There was nothing that opened all men's
 1550. mouths more than a complaint entered in the Council-book, made by one Norman against the Archbishop of York, that he took his wife, and kept her from him. The Council gave such credit to this, that as a letter was written to that Archbishop not to come to parliament, so they ordered a letter to be written to Sir Thomas Gargrave and Mr. Chaloner to examine the matter. What they did, or what report they made, does not appear to me. Holgate, during all the time he was Archbishop of York, was more set on enriching himself than on any thing else. He seemed heartily to concur in the Reformation, but he was looked on as a reproach to it, rather than a promoter of it. This might have a share in the censure, that, as was reported, King Edward passed on the bishops in that time; *Some for sloth, some for ignorance, some for luxury, and some for popery, are unfit for discipline and government.* At this time the Anabaptists were again inquired after, and a commission was granted to Cranmer, Thirleby, Cox, and Sir Thomas Smith, to inquire after them, and to judge them.

Gardiner is
 deprived.

Now Gardiner's business was brought to a conclusion. On the 23d of November a committee of the Council was appointed to consider how to proceed further against him. On the 14th of December an order was sent to the Lieutenant of the Tower to carry him to Lambeth on the 16th, and after that as often as they required him. The commission to try him was directed to Cranmer, and others. He desired counsel: it was granted; and his lawyers had free access to him. On the 19th of January his servants moved in Council, that some of that board might be sworn as his witnesses: they said they would answer upon their honour, but would not be sworn. And on the 15th of Fe-

bruary, the last mention made of him in the Council-
 book is in these words: "For as much as the Bishop
 " had at all times, before the judges of his cause, used
 " himself unreverently to the King's Majesty, and very
 " slanderously towards his Council; and especially yes-
 " terday, being the day of the judgment given against
 " him, he called the judges heretics and sacramentaries;
 " these being there as the King's commissioners, and of
 " his Highness's Council, it was ordered that he should
 " be removed from his present lodging into a meaner
 " one in the Tower, and have but one servant to wait
 " on him: that his books and papers should be taken
 " from him, and that from henceforth he should have
 " neither pen, ink, nor paper given him, but be seques-
 " tered from all conference, and from all means that
 " may serve him to practise any ways." Here was se-
 " verity upon severity; which, as it raised him to be de-
 " pended on as the head of the popish party, so it must
 have recommended him to the compassions of all equi-
 table people.

Whether these hard orders were rigorously executed, or not, does not appear to me. I find in a letter of Hooper's to Bullinger, one circumstance relating to Gardiner. It is without date. In it, as he tells him that Crome did with zeal oppose their doctrine concerning the sacrament; but commends him, as a person of great learning, and a man of a most holy life; he tells him also, that Gardiner had a month before sent him a challenge to a public disputation upon that head; promising, that if he did not clearly carry away the victory, he would submit himself to the laws, and would willingly suffer the cruellest hardships. Hooper accepted the challenge, and a day was set for them to dispute; but when the day came near, Gardiner said, he must be first set at liberty: so all this show of a readiness to maintain the old doctrine vanished to nothing. Con-

PART cerning the King, Hooper writes in that same letter,
III. that these thousand years there had not been any
 1550. person of his age, who had such a mixture both of piety
 and learning, with so true a judgment as appeared in
 him. If he lived and went on suitably to these begin-
 nings, he would be the wonder and the terror of the
 world. He took notes of all the sermons he heard;
 and after dinner he asked the young persons that were
 bred up with him an account of what they remem-
 bered of the sermon, and went over the whole matter
 with them. He wrote further in this letter, that then
 they were every day expecting that the Duke of Somer-
 set should be again called to sit in the Council.

Poinet, Bishop of Rochester, was translated to Win-
 chester, being nominated to it the 8th of March; and
 on the 5th of April he took his oath of homage. While
 he was Bishop of Rochester, he had no house to live in,
 so he kept his benefice in London. But it is entered in
 the Council-book, that no bishop after him was to have
 any benefice besides his bishoprick.

An account
 of Bishop
 Hooper.

A new scene of contention was at this time very un-
 happily opened. Hooper, a zealous, a pious, and a
 learned man, had gone out of England in the latter
 years of King Henry's reign; and had lived at Zurick,
 at a time when all Germany was in a flame on the ac-
 count of the *Interim*. Upon that a great question arose
 among the Germans, concerning the use of things in
 themselves indifferent. For a great part of the design
 of the *Interim* was, to keep up the exterior face of
 things, as it had been in popery, with the softenings of
 some other senses put on them. It was said, "If things
 "were indifferent in themselves, it was lawful, and that
 "it became the subjects' duty to obey them when com-
 "manded." Many thought that Melancthon himself
 went in that matter too far. It was visible the design in
 it was to make the people think the difference was not

great between that and popery ; so the rites were ordered to be kept up on purpose to make it easy to draw the people over to popery. Out of this another question arose ; Whether it was lawful to obey in indifferent things, when it was certain they were enjoined with an ill design ? Some said, the designs of legislators were not to be inquired into nor judged : and whatever they were, the subjects were still bound to obey. This created a vast distraction in Germany ; while some obeyed the *Interim*, but many more were firm to their principles, and were turned out of all for their disobedience. Those who submitted were for the most part Lutherans, and carried the name of Adiaphorists, from the Greek word that signifies things indifferent. The reformed were generally firmer. Those of Switzerland, particularly at Zurick, had at this time great apprehensions of a design of introducing popery, by keeping up an exterior that resembled it. Of this I find a very late instance, the year before this, in a letter that Mont wrote from Strasburg, on the 18th of February 1548, to Musculus, which will be found in the Collection.

BOOK
IV.
1550.

Collect.
Numb. 2.

“ When he left Augsburg, there were no changes then begun there ; but they expected every day, when the new superstitious practices were to be set up. One of the ministers told him, that the magistrates had desired the ministers not to forsake them in that time of distress. They promised that they would give them timely notice when those rites were to be brought in among them. They prayed them likewise to recommend the *Interim* in the softest manner, and with the best colours they could. This was refused by the greater number of them, who said, they could never approve that which was by an unanimous consent condemned. He did not doubt but they had heard what was done in Saxony. He wishes the German courage and firmness might

PART " now appear: that if they could not act with their
 III. " usual courage, they might at least show their cou-
 1550. " rage in suffering. The Duke of Deux-Ponts had left
 " Augsburg; and said, the publishing the *Interim* did
 " not belong to him, but to the bishops. Those of
 " Breme had such a heavy composition laid on them
 " by the Emperor, that they said it was not in their
 " power to comply with it, though they had a mind to
 " it. So it was thought this was done on design to
 " take their town, as a convenient post for a garrisoned
 " place, to keep that country in order. He concludes,
 " desiring to know what agreement there was, as to
 " these matters, in the Helvetick churches." They
 were indeed much inflamed on this occasion; and very
 zealous against any compliance with the *Interim*, or the
 use of the rites prescribed by it: so Hooper came from
 Zurick in the heat of this debate, and with this tincture
 upon his mind.

Collect.
 Numb. 4.

When he came to Brussels, on the 20th of April
 1549, he wrote a letter to Bullinger, that is in the Col-
 lection. " He sets forth in it, very tragically, the mi-
 " sery of the Netherlands, under the violent oppres-
 " sions of the Spaniards. Complaints were heard in all
 " places of rapes, adulteries, robberies, and other inso-
 " lences, every day committed by them: so that an
 " hostess of a public house said to him, If she could
 " but carry her children in her arms with her, she
 " would choose to go and beg from door to door, rather
 " than suffer their brutalities every day, as they were
 " forced to do. He hoped this would be a warning to
 " put others on their guard.

" The Emperor came seldom out of his chamber.
 " Hooper had been at the Duke of Saxony's house,
 " who had about thirty of his servants still attending
 " on him. He designed to have talked with Hooper,
 " but the Spaniards hindered it. He had no hope of

"obtaining his liberty, though his health was much
 "broken : but he continued firm in his religion, and
 "did not despair of things, but hoped religion would
 "be again revived. The Landgrave was kept at Oude-
 "nard. He was both uneasy and inconstant. Some-
 "times he was ready to submit to the Emperor, and to
 "go to mass : at other times he railed at the Emperor;
 "and at the *Interim* ; (Hooper was entertained by
 "Hobby, the English ambassador, from whom proba-
 "bly he heard these things ;) he prayed God to pity
 "him, for he suffered justly for his treachery. The
 "Pope's legate was there, and preached all that Lent
 "in his own court.

BOOK
 IV.
 1550.

"The Pope and the Emperor were then in very ill
 "terms. The Pope pressed the Emperor to own the
 "council at Bologna ; for he was afraid to let it sit
 "again in Trent : but the Emperor was as positive for
 "their coming back to Trent ; and said roundly, he
 "would break with the Pope, if that were not done.
 "The ambassador told him, that if the Emperor's Con-
 "fessor were to any degree right set, there might be
 "good hope of the Emperor : but both he and all his
 "ministers were strangely governed, and in a manner
 "driven by the Confessor. About seven months be-
 "fore this, he had left the Emperor because he would
 "not be more severe, and would not restore popery en-
 "tirely in Germany. The Emperor had offered him a
 "bishoprick in Spain, worth 20,000 crowns : but he re-
 "fused it, and said, he would be tied to the church,
 "but not to him, unless he would serve the church
 "with more zeal. The Emperor seemed to design to
 "break the peace of Switzerland, and Hooper under-
 "stood that some of Lucerne were then hanging on at
 "court, probably with no good design. He wishes
 "they would fear God, lead holy lives, and fight
 "bravely ; and so they might expect to be protected

PART "by God: yet he understood that the Emperor was

III.

1550.

"troubled that he had meddled so much as he had
 "done in matters of religion in Germany: he found
 "that was like to cross his other designs, which might
 "have succeeded better, if he had left that matter more
 "at liberty. His army lay then near Bremen, but was
 "undertaking nothing. The cities there had furnished
 "themselves with stores and provisions for five years;
 "and were making no submissions." This account I
 thought no digression from my chief design in writing,
 since this intelligence came no doubt from the ambas-
 sador. Upon Hooper's coming to England, he applied
 himself much to preaching, and to the explaining the
 Scriptures. He was much followed, and all churches
 were crowded where he preached. He went through
 the Epistle to Titus, and ten chapters of the Gospel of
 St. John. His fame came to court. Poinet and he
 were ordered to preach all the Lent at court; Hooper
 on Wednesdays, and Poinet on Fridays: he was also
 sent to preach both in Kent and in Essex. At this
 time Bullinger wrote to the King, and sent with it
 a book that he dedicated to him, which was pre-
 sented to the King by the Marquis of Northampton;
 for an order was made, that none but privy counsellors
 might bring books or papers to the King. The King
 said to Hooper, that he had read the letter, and would
 read Bullinger's book; and spoke to the Marquis of a
 present to be sent him: but Hooper told him, he never
 took any; besides, that it was forbidden by the laws of
 Zurick. Hooper, in his letters to Bullinger, on the
 8th of February 1550, says, the Archbishop of Canter-
 bury, the Bishops of Rochester, Ely, St. David's, Lin-
 coln, and Bath, were sincerely set on advancing the
 purity of doctrine, agreeing in all things with the Hel-
 vetick churches. He commends particularly the Mar-
 quis of Dorchester, afterwards Duke of Suffolk, and the

Earl of Warwick, afterwards Duke of Northumberland, **BOOK**
 who at that time put on such a show of zeal, that **IV.**
 Hooper calls him a most holy instrument, and the best **1550.**
 affected to the word of God. He writes of Cranmer,
 that he wishes he were not too feeble. He was at Lon-
 don when the Council divided from the Duke of Somers-
 set, but had not meddled in that matter : and he says
 not a word of it, but that he blesses God the Duke of
 Somerset was to be set at liberty. In June, he was
 named to be Bishop of Gloucester ; for he gives an
 account of it in a letter to Bullinger, on the 29th of
 June. He declined it, as he writes, both for the oath,
 which he says was *foul* and *impious*, and by reason of *Fedum et*
 the Aaronical habits. The King asked, what his rea- *impium.*
 sons were ? He told them very freely to him. He says
 of him, that the world never saw such a Prince as he
 was for his age. He likewise says, the Lady Elizabeth,
 his sister, was wonderfully zealous, and very knowing :
 she read both Greek and Latin ; and few could main-
 tain an argument against her, particularly in matters of
 religion.

Among the letters sent me from Zurick, I find some
 written upon the occasion of the difficulty that was
 made in Hooper's business to Bullinger and Gualter,
 pressing them very earnestly to write to the King to
 let fall all the ceremonies : they tell them, that Ridley,
 though he stood upon the forms of the law, yet was
 very earnest to have Hooper made a bishop. They seem
 also to reflect on the bishops for their earnestness in
 that matter, as if they were ashamed to have that to be
 blamed, to which they themselves had submitted : and
 they reflect on Bucer for supporting the matter too
 much. Those of Zurick were more discreet and modest
 than to interpose in such a manner. It would have
 been too great a presumption in them to have made any
 such application ; but it seems Bullinger wrote about it

PART to the King's Preceptor, Cox. I have not found his
III. letter: but I find, by Cox's letter to him, that he him-
 1550. self was for proceeding easily in this matter. He wrote
 to him in May, in these words: "I think all things in
 " the church ought to be pure and simple, removed at
 " the greatest distance from the pomps and elements of
 " this world. But, in this our church, what can I do in
 " so low a station? I can only endeavour to persuade our
 " bishops to be of the same mind with myself. This I
 " wish truly, and I commit to God the care and conduct
 " of his own work. Of the King he writes, "Believe
 " me, there appears in him an incredible beginning of
 " learning, with a zeal for religion, and a judgment in af-
 " fairs almost already ripe." Traheron, at the same time,
 writes of him, "We are training up a Prince that gives
 " the greatest hopes of being a most glorious defender
 " of the faith, even to a miracle: for, if God is not so
 " provoked by our sins as to take him too early from
 " us, we do not doubt but that England shall again give
 " the world another Constantine, or rather one much
 " better than he was."

This matter took up much time, and was managed
 with more heat than might have been expected, con-
 sidering the circumstances of that reign. He being named
 to be Bishop of Gloucester, was recommended by Dud-
 ley to Cranmer, that he would not charge him with
 an oath that was (as is expressed) burdenous to his
 conscience. This was the oath of supremacy. He
 next desired to be excused from accepting the bishop-
 rick, or from the ceremonies used in the consecration;
 upon which the King writ to Cranmer in August, free-
 ing him from all dangers and penalties that he might
 incur by omitting those rites, but left the matter to the
 Archbishop's discretion, without any persuasion or com-
 mand to omit them. The Archbishop did not think fit
 upon that letter to act against the laws. There were

several conferences between Ridley and Hooper, not without heat : Hooper maintaining, that if it was not unlawful, yet it was highly inexpedient to use those ceremonies. The Council, apprehending the ill effects of controversies between men of the same profession, sent for Hooper, and wished him to let this opposition of his fall. He desired leave to put his reasons in writing ; that was granted him : and when he offered his reasons, they were communicated to Ridley. I gave an account in my former work how honestly and modestly both Bucer and Peter Martyr behaved themselves on this occasion. Peter Martyr mentions Hooper's unseasonable and bitter sermons, which it seems his heat carried him to ; and probably that was the reason that moved the Council to command him to keep his house, unless it were to go to the Archbishop of Canterbury ; or to the Bishops of Ely, London, or Lincoln, for the satisfaction of his conscience ; and not to preach or read till he had further license. But he did not obey this order : he writ a book on the subject, and printed it. This gave more distaste. He also went about and complained of the Council ; for which, being called before the board, he was committed to the Archbishop's custody, to be reformed by him, or to be further punished. The Archbishop represented, that he could in no sort work upon him, but that he declared himself for another way of ordination : upon that, he was on the 27th of January committed to the Fleet.

Micronius, a minister of the German church at London, in a letter to Bullinger, on the 28th of August 1550, tells him, that the exception that Hooper had to the oath of supremacy was, because the form was *by God, by the saints, and by the holy Gospels*. This he thought impious ; and when he was before the Council, the King being present, he argued, that God only ought to be appealed to in an oath, for he only knew

BOOK
IV.
1550.

PART the thoughts of men. The King was so fully convinced, by this, that with his own pen he struck these words out of the oath, saying, that no creature was to be appealed to in an oath. This being cleared, no scruple remained but with relation to the habits. The King and Council were inclined to order him to be dispensed with as to these. But Ridley prevailed with the King not to dispense in that matter. The thing was indifferent, and therefore the law ought to be obeyed. This had such an effect, that all Hooper's exceptions were after that heard with great prejudice. Micronius was on Hooper's side as well as Alasco. Ridley had opposed the settling the German church in a different way from the rites of the Church of England: but Alasco had prevailed to obtain an entire liberty for them to continue in the same forms of worship and government, in which they had been constituted beyond sea, in which he had been assisted by Cranmer. It is added in that letter, that it was believed that the Emperor had sent one over to carry away the Lady Mary secretly, but the design was discovered and defeated. To explain this matter of the oath, I shall insert in the Collections the oaths of the bishops, as it was practised in King Henry's reign, and continued to be used to that time, which is on record, and is among Mr. Rymer's manuscripts. Hooper's matter hung in suspense nine whole months; in which time he seemed positively resolved not to yield, not without severe and indecent reflections on those who used the habits. Cranmer expressed a willingness to have yielded to him, but Ridley and Goodrick stood firm to the law; while many reflected on them, as insisting too much on a thing practised by themselves, as if vain-glory and self-love had been their chief motives: they said they wished that distinction of habits was abolished, but they thought the breaking through laws

Collect.
Numb. 3.

was so bad a precedent, and might have such ill consequences, that they could not consent to it. Bucer and Peter Martyr expressed their dislike of the habits, but thought the thing was of itself indifferent; so they blamed him for insisting so much on it. Alasco, on the other hand, encouraged him to continue in his refusal to submit to the laws in that matter: in conclusion, he was prevailed on to submit, and was consecrated. This was written to Bullinger by one of the ministers of the German church. His standing out so long, and yielding in the end, lost him much of the popularity, that, to speak freely, he seemed to be too fond of; yet his great labours in his diocese, and his patience and constancy during his imprisonment, and in his last most extreme sufferings, made all good people willing to forget what was amiss, and to return to a just esteem of what was so truly valuable in him.

BOOK
IV.
1550.

In conclusion, he submitted, and was consecrated according to the established form, and went into his diocese, which he found overrun with ignorance and superstition: he applied himself to his duty with great and indefatigable industry; preaching often twice, sometimes thrice in a day, to instruct the people, and to reform the clergy: he did earnestly wish that the Articles of Religion, which he knew were under consideration, might be quickly published. He found the greatest opposition in his diocese rose from the prebendaries of his church. Of this he made great complaints; as indeed all the bishops that were well affected to the reformation found the greatest opposition in their cathedrals; though none of them expressed it so severely as Ferrar, Bishop of St. David's, who wrote to a lord, desiring that he might have leave to defend himself against those *high-minded, arrogant, stubborn, ambitious, covetous canons*, who for private revenge were set against him: yet on the other hand there were

PART great complaints made of his behaviour in his diocese,
III. as both indiscreet and contentious. A petition was
 1550. sent up to the Council in the name of the inhabitants
 of his diocese against him, complaining of his insatiable
 covetousness, and his daily vexing his poor tenants
 and clergy without cause; and indeed his firmness and
 sufferings afterwards raised his character more than his
 conduct in his diocese had done.

The last and the most eminent of all the popish
 clergy that fell in trouble during this reign, was Ton-
 stall, Bishop of Duresme. He was a generous and
 well-tempered man, learned far above the common rate.
 He retained his old opinion concerning the presence in
 the sacrament; but he had hitherto submitted, and
 gone along in all that was done: he had no heat, nor a
 spirit of opposition in his temper, yet his opinion was
 known. The true account of his matter has been taken
 out of the Council-book, which has come to light since
 I wrote my history. One Ninian Mainvil charged him
 as consenting to a conspiracy in the north, for raising a
 rebellion there: to this the Bishop answered, and Main-
 vil made replication: the Council-book only refers to
 these, and gives no account of the Bishop's answer.
 Mainvil had a letter of the Bishop's, which was his
 main evidence, upon which the issue of the trial de-
 pended: but that was then wanted; and, as appeared
 afterwards, the letter was put in the Duke of Somers-
 set's hands, and he still kept it: but whether he did it
 out of kindness to him, or to have this as a check to
 overawe Tonstall, does not appear.

This letter was found among the Duke of Somerset's
 papers after his last apprehension: upon which Ton-
 stall was sent for, and his letter was produced against
 him. He could not deny it to be of his own hand;
 and, not being able to make any further answer, he was
 on the 20th of December sent to the Tower. White-

head, Dean of Duresme, and Handmarsh, Tonstall's Chancellor, were accused of the same crime by Mainvill. The Dean's death put an end to his trouble, but Tonstall lay in the Tower till Queen Mary set him at liberty: and there, in the 77th year of his age, he wrote his book, asserting the corporal presence of Christ in the sacrament. It seems the evidence against Tonstall did not at all amount to a consent to a conspiracy, for he was only charged with misprision of treason; whereas the consenting to it would have been carried further, to high treason itself: but even that must have been by a stretch of his words; since, if his letter had imported that, Cranmer could not have opposed, much less have protested against the bill attainting him for misprision, if the evidence had been clear. This is confirmed by the opposition made in the House of Commons, where the bill fell. So, since the parliament would not attain him, a commission was issued out some months after; and, on the 22d of September 1552, a letter was written to the Lord Chief Justice, signifying to him, that there was a commission addressed to him, and to some others, for determining the Bishop of Duresme's case, with eight letters, and other writings touching the same, which he is required to consider and to hear, and to give order in the matter as soon as the rest of his colleagues were brought together. He was brought before these commissioners: he desired counsel, and time convenient to make his answer; both were denied him, as is set forth in the sentence that reversed this. He was charged as a conspirator against the King and the realm: the commission empowered them to proceed against him for all offences, both according to the ecclesiastical and the temporal laws: he made divers protestations against the several steps of their proceedings; and at last he appealed from them to the King. The commissioners on the 11th of Octo-

BOOK
IV.
1550.

PART ber deprived him of his bishoprick, but did not attain
III. him of misprision of treason; for the judgment in that
1550. case must have been, the forfeiture of his goods, and imprisonment for life: but he was by order of Council on the 31st of October to receive money for his necessities, remaining prisoner in the Tower till further order should be given touching the money and goods appertaining to him.

This was one of the violent effects of the Duke of Northumberland's ambition, who was all this while a concealed Papist, as himself declared at his execution. I have laid all these things relating to the deprivation of the bishops that opposed the Reformation together, to give a full view of that matter. But now I must look back to some matters that happened while these proceedings went on. There was an information brought to the Council of some at Bocking, who were irregular in the worship of God; who thought that to stand or to kneel at prayer, or to be covered or bare-headed, was not material, and that the heart only was necessary. When they were brought before the Council, they confessed that they met together; sometimes to confer about the Scriptures, and that they had refused to receive the communion above two years, as was judged upon very superstitious and erroneous principles; (so it is entered in the Council-book;) with divers other evil opinions, worthy of great punishment: five of them were sent to prison, and seven gave bonds to appear when called for: they were required to resort to their ordinaries, if they had any doubt in religion, for resolution from them. These were probably some of the Anabaptists, though that is not objected to them.

The great point that was then most canvassed in the Universities was the presence in the sacrament. Concerning this, I have, among the papers sent me from Zurick, a letter of Peter Martyr's to his friend

Bullinger, dated from Oxford the 1st of June 1550, **BOOK**
 which will be found in the Collection. "He excuses **IV.**
 "himself for his slowness in answering his letters by **1550.**
 "reason of the constant labours he was engaged in. **Collect.**
Numb. 6.
 "For, besides his daily exposition of St. Paul, which
 "might claim his whole time, there was a new load
 "brought on him. He was commanded, by an order
 "from the King, to be present at the public disputa-
 "tions upon theological matters; which were held once
 "a fortnight. And in the college, in which he was
 "placed, there was a disputation, where he was ap-
 "pointed to be present, and to moderate. He was in a
 "perpetual struggle with most obstinate adversaries.
 "The business of religion did not go on with the zeal
 "and success to be wished for: yet it made a better
 "progress than he had expected four months before.
 "The number of their adversaries was great: they had
 "few preachers on their side; and many of those who
 "professed the Gospel were guilty of gross vices. Some,
 "by a human policy, were for purging religion, but for
 "altering outward things as little as might be. They,
 "being secular men, apprehended, that, upon a more
 "visible change, such disorders would follow as might
 "prove fatal: whereas it was evident, that the innu-
 "merable corruptions, abuses, and superstitions, that
 "had overrun the church, were such, that it was impos-
 "sible to reform it without bringing matters back to
 "those pure fountains, and to the first sound principles
 "of religion. The devil studied to undermine those
 "good designs by keeping up still many relics of
 "popery, that by these the memory of the old abuses
 "might be preserved, and the return to them rendered
 "easier. On the other hand, they had this great com-
 "fort, that they had a holy King, full of fervent zeal
 "for true religion. He writes, that he speaks, in all
 "this tender age, with that learning, that prudence,

PART III. " and that gravity, that it amazes all people who hear
" it. Therefore they were all bound to pray God ear-

1550. " nestly to preserve him long for the good of the
" church. There were several of the nobility well in-
" clined, and some bishops not of the worst sort, among
" whom the Archbishop of Canterbury was the stand-
" ard-bearer. Hooper was lately made a Bishop, to
" the joy of all good men ; who was to pass through
" Oxford in his way to his diocese. He believed that
" he himself had given Bullinger an account of his
" being made a bishop, otherwise he would have wrote
" it. He also commends Coverdale's labours in Devon-
" shire : and adds, that if they could find many such
" men, it were a great happiness. Alasco, being forced
" to leave Friezeland by reason of the *Interim*, was then
" about the settling his congregation in London. He
" was at that time in the Archbishop's house. The peace
" with France gave them some hopes. All were under
" great apprehensions from the Pope's designs of bring-
" ing his council again together : but they must still
" trust in God. And, after somewhat of their private
" concerns, he desires his prayers for the progress of
" God's word in this kingdom.

1551. " He also, in a letter written on the 6th of August
" 1551, laments the death of the young Duke of Suffolk,
" looking on him as the most promising of all the youth
" in the nation, next to the King himself." After some
" more on that subject, he adds this sad word, "*There is*
" *no end put to our sins, nor any measure in sinning.*
" He commends Hooper's labours in his diocese migh-
" tily, and wishes that there were many more such
" bishops as he was."

*Peccatis ne-
que finis
neque mo-
dus imponi-
tur.*

Upon the death of the two young Dukes of Suffolk, Gray, Marquis of Dorchester, was made Duke of Suffolk. He had married their sister, but had no sons by her. He had three daughters, of whom the eldest, Lady

Jane, was esteemed the wonder of the age. She had a **BOOK** sweetness in her temper, as well as a strength of mind, **IV.** that charmed all who saw her. She had a great apt- **1551.** ness to learn languages, and an earnest desire to acquire knowledge. Her father found out a very extraordinary person to give her the first impressions; Ailmer, who was afterwards, in Queen Elizabeth's time, advanced to be Bishop of London. Under his care she made an amazing progress. He found, it seems, some difficulty in bringing her to throw off the vanities of dress, and to use a greater simplicity in it. So, on the 23d of December 1552, he wrote to Bullinger, "That the "Lady Elizabeth was a pattern to all in the modesty "of her dress; and yet nobody was prevailed on by "such an illustrious example to follow it, and, in all "this light of the Gospel, to abstain from wearing "gold, or gems, or platting of hair." He was particularly charged with the education of Lady Jane Gray, whom he calls his scholar: but it seems he could not prevail in this particular; so he desires Bullinger to write his thoughts to her on that head.

There was nothing done for almost two whole years, pursuant to the act passed in November 1549, for making a new body of ecclesiastical laws: concerning which, it is not easy to guess what was the clause in it that gave the bishops so much offence, that the greatest part of the bench protested against it. For both the Archbishops, and the Bishops of Ely, Duresme, Worcester, Westminster, Chichester, Lincoln, Rochester, and St. David's, joined in the protestation. There were only two clauses that I can imagine could give them this disgust. One is, that only four bishops, and four common lawyers, were made necessary to be of the number of the thirty-two persons. The other might be, the limitation of the time to three years; though that seems designed to make the act have its effect in a little time.

PART Two years were almost ended before any steps were
III. made towards the execution of it. On the 6th of Oc-

1551. tober 1551, the Council wrote to the Lord Chancellor, to make out a commission for thirty-two persons, to reform the ecclesiastical laws. These were, the Archbishop, the Bishops of London, Winchester, Ely, Exeter, Gloucester, Bath, and Rochester. The eight divines were, Taylor, Cox, Parker, Latimer, Cook, Peter Martyr, Cheek, John Alasco. The eight civilians were, Petre, Cecyl, Smith, Taylor of Hadley, May, Trahern, Lyell, Skinner. The eight common lawyers were, Hales, Bromley, Goodrick, Gosnald, Stamford, Caryl, Lucas, Brook.

1552. This it seems brought Peter Martyr from Oxford to London in March 1552. And on the 8th of that month he wrote to Bullinger from Lambeth, being lodged with the Archbishop. He tells him, "That the King did earnestly press the bishops, that, since the Papal authority was cast out of this church, the ecclesiastical laws might be so reformed, that none of the Papal decrees might continue to be of any authority in the bishops' courts; and that another body of laws ought to be compiled for them. He had therefore appointed two and thirty persons to set about it, of which number he himself was one. He says, the greater number of them were persons both eminently learned, and truly pious: in this he desires both their advices and their prayers. This work must be so prepared as to receive a confirmation in parliament; in which he foresaw some difficulties." It seems that this number was thought too great to bring any thing to a good conclusion, or these persons had not all the same views; for soon after, on the 9th of November after this, a new commission was ordered to be made out to eight persons, for preparing the same work. These were, the Archbishop, the Bishop of Ely, Doctor Cox, Peter Mar-

tyr, Taylor, May, Lucas, Goodrick. Strype tells us, he **BOOK**
 saw the digest of the ecclesiastical laws written out by **IV.**
 the Archbishop's secretary; the title being prefixed to **1552.**
 each chapter, with an index of the chapters, in the Arch- **Life of**
 bishop's own hand. In many places there are corrections **Cranmer,**
 and additions in his hand, and some lines are scored out; **b. i. c. 30.**
 some of them were also revised by Peter Martyr: the
 seventh chapter in the title *de Præscriptionibus* is all
 written by Peter Martyr. Several chapters are added
 to the first draught, which is probably that which was
 prepared in King Henry's time. There was a later and
 more perfect draught of this work prepared for King
 Edward, which coming into Fox's hands, he printed it
 in the year 1571: the differences between the two
 draughts, as Mr. Strype assures us, are not very mate-
 rial. But all this was brought to no conclusion.

I find somewhat to be added concerning the Duke **The Duke**
 of Somerset's tragical death, in a letter that one John **of Somers-**
 ab Ulmis, a Switzer, then in England, wrote from Ox- **set's last**
 ford the 4th of December, 1552, to Bullinger; that the **fall.**
 Duke of Somerset was censured, as having been too
 gentle to the Lady Mary, in conniving at her mass:
 but, when he proposed the doing that in Council, the
 Earl of Warwick answered, "The mass is either of
 "God or of the devil: if it is of God, we ought all to go
 "to it; if it is of the devil, why should it be connived
 "at in any person?" Yet still the gentleness of the
 Duke of Somerset made him suffer it to go on. But
 now he adds, since the Earl of Warwick had the great-
 est share in the government, he had put her priests in
 prison, and had given strict orders to suffer no mass to
 be said in her house.

He tells one remarkable particular in the Duke of
 Somerset's trial: "That after he was found guilty of
 "the conspiracy against the Earl of Warwick, (upon
 "which the people expressed a great concern,) the Earl

PART “ of Warwick addressed himself to the Duke, and told
 III. “ him, that now, since by the law he was adjudged to
 1552. “ die, he, as he had saved him formerly, so he would
 “ not now be wanting to serve him, how little soever
 “ he expected it from him. He desired him therefore
 “ to fly to the King’s mercy, in which he promised he
 “ would faithfully serve him. Upon this, the Duke did
 “ petition the King; and it was hoped that he would
 “ reconcile those two great men, and that by this
 “ means the Duke of Somerset should be preserved.”

It seems there was some treaty about his pardon :
 for though he was condemned on the 1st of December,
 he was not executed till the 22d of January. What
 made it to be respited so long, and yet executed at last,
 does not appear. It is probable it was from a manage-
 ment of the Duke of Northumberland’s, who, by the
 delay, did seem to act in his favour, that so he might
 be covered from the popular *odium*, which he saw his
 death was like to bring upon him; and at the same
 time, by the means of some who had credit with the
 King, he possessed him with so bad an opinion of the
 Duke of Somerset, that he, looking on him as an im-
 placable man, capable of black designs, resolved to let
 the sentence be executed upon him.

Hooper’s
 impartial
 zeal.

In the same letter he gives an instance of Hooper’s
 impartial zeal in the discharge of his function in his
 diocese: that, while he was censuring some inferior
 people for their scandalous life, one said to him, “ We
 “ poor people must do penance for these things; while
 “ great and rich men, as guilty as we, are overlooked.
 “ Upon that he said, Name any person, how great so-
 “ ever, that was guilty of adultery, so that it could be
 “ proved against him, and he would leave himself in their
 “ hands, to be used by them as they pleased, if he did
 “ not proceed equally against all. So, in a few days,
 “ Sir Anthony Kingston, a great man in those parts,

“being accused of adultery, he cited him into his **BOOK**
 “court. He for some time refused to appear. At last **IV.**
 “he came; and, when the Bishop was charging his sin **1552.**
 “severely upon him, he gave him very foul language,
 “and at last fell to beat him. This was presently fol-
 “lowed so severely, that he was fined in 500l. and
 “forced to submit to do penance.”

This raised the Bishop's character, as it contributed not a little to establish his authority in his diocese. He set himself to do his duty there with so much zeal, that his wife, who was a German, wrote to Bullinger, praying him to write to her husband to take a little more care of himself: for he preached commonly thrice, sometimes four times in one day. The crowds of those who came constantly to hear him made him look on them as persons that were hungering for the word of life. So she, apprehending that his zeal made him labour beyond his strength, studied to get others to put some stop to that, which, it seems, she could not prevail with him so far as to restrain.

About this time, the bishops and divines were employed in the review of the Common Prayer; but I have met with nothing new with relation to that matter, save that on the 6th of May, 1551, there was an order of Council for preserving peace sent to all the cathedrals, at least to that of Exeter, for it is in that **Reg. Exon.** register. And on the 18th of January there was a commission issued out for the repressing of heresy, and for observing the Common Prayer. And on the 27th of October, 1552, the Council-book mentions also a letter, written to the Lord Chancellor, to add in the edition of the new Common Prayer Book a declaration touching kneeling at the receiving the communion.

It remains that I give the best account I can of the **The Articles of Religion.** It seemed to be a great want that **the Articles of Religion prepared.** this was so long delayed, since the old doctrine had

PART still the legal authority of its side. One reason of
III. delaying the publishing them probably was, that the
1552. King, in whose name and by whose authority they were to be published, might be so far advanced in years, and out of the time of pupillage, that they might have the more credit, and be of the more weight: for though it was a point settled in law, that the King's authority was at all ages the same, yet the world would still make a difference in their regard to things passed while he was a child, and those things authorized by him when he was in the 16th year of his age.

Not passed
in convo-
cation.

The first impression of these Articles appeared with a title apt to make one think they had been agreed on in the Convocation. It runs thus in English; *Articles which were agreed to in the synod of London, in the year 1552, by the bishops and other godly and learned men, to root out the discord of opinions, and establish the agreement of true religion.* But there is reason to believe that no such articles were offered to the Convocation. Weston objected afterwards to Cranmer, that he had set forth a Catechism in the name of the synod in London; and yet, said he, there be fifty, which, witnessing that they were of the number of the Convocation, never heard one word of this *Catechism*. And in a long and much laboured sermon of Brooks, preached at St. Paul's Cross, in November 1553, there is an intimation, that makes it indeed probable that the Articles were brought into the upper house of Convocation. For when he complains that they were set forth as allowed by the clergy, he adds, Whereas the Convocation without all doubt (for the lower house at least) was never made privy thereto: that reserve seems to make it probable that they were brought into the upper house. In the first impression of the Articles, the Catechism is printed first before the Articles: so this is to be under-

stood of that whole book, which is indeed a very small one. BOOK
IV.

When this was objected to Cranmer, he answered, *I was ignorant of the setting to of that title; and as soon as I had knowledge thereof, I did not like it. Therefore, when I complained thereof to the Council, it was answered by them, that the book was so entitled, because it was set forth in the time of the convocation.* In the interrogatories that were afterwards exhibited to him in order to his final censure, the seventh ends thus, *That he did compile, and caused to be set abroad, divers books:* the last part of his answer to that was, *As for the Catechism, the book of Articles, with the other book against Winchester, he grants the same to be his doings.* 1553.

It is true, in the first convocation under Queen Mary, when the Prolocutor charged Philpot with this, that a Catechism was put forth without their consent, he answered on the sudden, that the house had granted an authority to make ecclesiastical laws to certain persons to be appointed by the King's majesty: and what was set forth by them might be well said to be done in the synod of London, although the house had no notice thereof before the promulgation. But Weston also said, *That the Catechism beareth the title of the last synod before this, although many of them who were then present were never made privy thereof in setting it forth:* so that both Weston and Philpot agree that the book was never brought before the Convocation. In this matter, Philpot, as he could not deny the fact, so he made use of the best answer that then occurred to him, without considering that the Convocation had not agreed to any such deputation of thirty-two persons: for that was settled by an act of parliament; nor did the deputation relate to matters of doctrine, but only to the canons and proceedings in the ecclesiastical courts: for as it was a revival of the acts passed in King Henry's time,

PART
III.

1553.

so it run in the same strain with them. These evidences make it plain that the Articles of Religion did not pass in convocation. We have Cranmer's own word for it that he drew them, and that he, who was always plain and sincere, did not approve of that deceitful title that was prefixed to them, to impose upon the unwary vulgar. He also owns that they were his doings. One reason that may seem probable for his not offering them to the Convocation might be, that he had observed that many made a difference between obeying orders already made, and the consenting beforehand to the making of them : a greater degree of authority and evidence seemed necessary for the one than for the other ; besides that the offering things to debate, while it was free to argue on either side of the question, might carry some to engage themselves so far, that they could not after that submit with any decency. This, as far as I can judge, seems to be Cranmer's reason for not offering the Articles to be debated and passed in convocation.

But published by
the King's
authority.

But now that they were to be published with authority, that was to be done in the King's name : so, a very few days before the King's death, he sent a mandate to Cranmer to publish the Articles, and to cause them to be subscribed : this was done pursuant to the Archbishop's motion to the King and Council ; for he had desired, " That all bishops might have authority
" from him to cause all their preachers, archdeacons,
" deans, prebendaries, parsons, vicars, curates, with all
" their clergy, to subscribe the said Articles : and he
" trusted that such a concord and quietness in religion
" should shortly follow thereon, as else is not to be looked
" for in many years. God shall thereby be glorified,
" his truth shall be advanced, and your lordships (for
" he writes it to the privy-council) shall be rewarded
" of him as the setters forward of his true word and

"Gospel." Dated from Ford the 24th of November. **BOOK**
 It seems they were prepared some time before that; for **IV.**
 on the 20th of October, in the year 1552, the Council **1553.**
 had written to the six preachers, Harley, Bell, Horn, Grindall, Pern, and Knox, to consider of some articles then offered to be subscribed by all preachers, which can be no other than these Articles: but as this matter was long delayed formerly, so, when it was now ordered, it was sent about with all the diligence that so important a work required. The King also directed his orders to all the Archbishop's officers, enjoining them to cause all rectors, vicars, or those in any ecclesiastical employments, to appear before the Archbishop, to obey and do on the King's part as shall be signified to them.

The mandate that upon this was sent out by the Archbishop's officers, which is in the Collection, though And sent to the Archbishop of Canterbury. Collect. Numb. 7. it is in the King's name, yet was issued out by Cranmer himself, in execution of the mandate; it is mentioned in it, that it was sent to him by the King. It was thus put in the King's name, pursuant to the act passed in the beginning of this reign, that all process in the ecclesiastical courts should be in the King's name: but its being tested by the Archbishop, shows it was the act of his court. For though there is an exception in that act for the archbishops, yet that only related to what they should act in their provinces as metropolitans, but not to their proceedings in their particular dioceses; in which it seems they were put on the same foot with the other bishops. The King's mandate to himself is not in any record that I was able to find out. After the mandate, the execution of it by his officers was certified to him on the 22d of June, which is in his register, and is added in the Collection to the mandate. But probably the time given them run further than the King's life: for nothing farther appears to have been done upon it. The clergy of the city of London

PART (probably only his peculiars) appeared before him, and
III. he exhorted them to subscribe the articles. No men-
 1553. tion is made of any one's refusing to do it; but he com-
 pelled none to subscribe, which he affirmed in his an-
 swer to an interrogatory put to him by Queen Mary's
 commissioners; for he said that he compelled none, but
 exhorted such to subscribe as were willing to do it, be-
 fore they did it. It came to Norwich, where Thirleby
 was Bishop, who complied readily with every thing
 that he was required to do; though by his sudden turn,
 and his employments in the next reign, it appears that
 he acted at least against his heart, if not against his
 conscience.

And the
 Bishop of
 Norwich.
 Collect.
 Numb. 8.

The mandate for Norwich, which will be found in
 the Collection, bears date the 9th of June, in the 7th
 year of this reign: and it is not to be doubted but that
 the like mandates were directed to all the bishops,
 though they do not appear upon record. "It sets
 " forth, that whereas, after a long time of darkness, the
 " light was now revealed, to the inestimable benefit of
 " the nation; the King thought it his duty to have a
 " uniform profession, doctrine, and preaching, for the
 " evading dangerous opinions and errors: and therefore
 " he sent him certain articles, gathered with great judg-
 " ment of the greatest part of the learned bishops of
 " the kingdom, and sundry others of the clergy; which
 " he required and exhorted him to sign, and in his
 " preaching to observe, and to cause them to be sub-
 " scribed by all others who do or shall preach or read
 " within his diocese: and if any shall not only refuse
 " to subscribe, but shall preach contrary to them, he is
 " required to give notice of it to the King and his
 " Council, that further order may be given in the mat-
 " ter. And for such persons as came to be admitted to
 " any benefice or cure, he was to confer with them on
 " these Articles, and to cause them to subscribe them,

“ otherwise not to admit them to any such benefice, to
 “ which they were presented. But if the person was
 “ ignorant, and did not understand them, pains was to
 “ be taken on him to instruct him ; and six weeks time
 “ might be given him to examine them by the Scrip-
 “ tures : but at the end of six weeks, if he did not sub-
 “ scribe them, he was to be rejected. Then follows an
 “ order for him to receive the Catechism, and to give it
 “ to all masters of schools, that it may be taught in
 “ them all ; and he is required to make report to the
 “ Archbishop of the province, of the obedience given to
 “ these orders.” This order was so readily executed,
 that about fifty of the clergy subscribed it. This instru-
 ment was examined, and sent to me by Dr. Tanner, the
 learned Chancellor of Norwich.

But besides the evidence that appears from the regis-
 ters of Canterbury and Norwich, I have a further proof
 that the Articles of Religion were only promulgated by
 the King's authority, in an Injunction sent to the Uni-
 versity of Cambridge, signed by the Bishop of Ely, Sir
 Jo. Cheek, Mayo, and Wendy, who were the visitors of
 the University, bearing date the 1st of June 1553,
 directed to all the regents and non-regents ; setting
 forth, that great and long pains had been taken by the
 King's authority, and the judgments of good and learned
 men, concerning some Articles described according to
 the title with which they were printed ; these being
 promulgated by the King's authority, and delivered to
 all the bishops, for the better government of their
 dioceses, they did commend them to them, and, by
 their visitatorial authority, they do enjoin that all doc-
 tors and bachelors of divinity, and all doctors of arts,
 should publicly before their creation swear to them, and
 subscribe them ; and such as refuse to do it, are to be
 denied their degree. To this is added the form of the

BOOK
 IV.
 1553.

And to the
 University
 of Cam-
 bridge.

PART oath to be taken. The Injunction will be found in the
III. Collection.

1553.
Collect.
Numb. 9.
Cranmer
designed to
set up the
provincial
synods.

Thus it appears, by a variety of evidences, that these Articles were not passed in convocation, nor so much as offered to it. And, as far as can be judged from Cranmer's proceedings, he intended to put the government of the church in another method, different from the common way by convocation; and to set up provincial synods of bishops, to be called as the Archbishop saw cause, he having first obtained the King's licence for it. This appears by the 18th chapter of the Reformation of the Ecclesiastical Laws, prepared by him; in which it is plain, that these provincial synods were to be composed only of the bishops of the province. The convocations now in use by a long prescription, in which deans, archdeacons, and cathedrals have an interest, far superior in number to those elected to represent the clergy, can in no sort pretend to be more than a part of our civil constitution; and have no foundation either in any warrant from Scripture, or from the first ages of the church; but did arise out of that second model of the church, set out by Charles the Great, and formed according to the feudal law; by which a right of giving subsidies was vested in all who were possessed of such tenures, as qualified them to contribute towards the supporting of the state.

As for the Catechism, it was printed with a preface prefixed to it in the King's name, bearing date the 24th of May, about seven weeks before his death: in which he sets forth, that it was drawn by a pious and learned man, (supposed to be Bishop Poinet,) and was given to be revised by some bishops and other learned men; he therefore commands all schoolmasters to teach it.

King Ed-
ward's
scheme of
the succe-
sion.

I come now to set forth the dismal overturning of all that had been done now in a course of twenty years.

King Edward was for some months under a visible decay : his thoughts were much possessed with the apprehensions of the danger religion must be in, if his sister Mary should succeed him. This set him on contriving a design to hinder that. He seemed to be against all females' succession to the crown. I have put in the Collection a paper that I copied out of a manuscript of the late Mr. Petyt's, all written in that King's own hand, with this title; *My Device for the Succession*.
 " By it the crown was to go to the issue male of his own body ; or if he had only female issue, to the issue male coming of the issue female : next to the issue male of the Lady Frances ; then in succession to her three daughters, and to their issue male : and if they had only female issue, to the first issue male of any of her daughters. The heir male after eighteen was to enter upon the government : but his mother was to govern till he was of that age, with the advice of six of that council of twenty persons, which he should name by his last will : but if the mother of the issue male should not be eighteen, then the realm was to be governed by the Council, provided that after the issue male was of the age of fourteen, all matters of importance should be opened to him. If at his death there were no issue male, the Lady Frances was to be Governess-Regent ; and after her life, her three daughters were to be Governesses in succession, till an heir male was born : and then the mother of that heir male was to be Governess. If four of the Council should die, the Governess was ordered, within a month, to summon the whole Council, to choose four in their stead, in which the Governess was to have three voices. But after the death of the Governess, the Council was to choose the new counsellors, till the King was fourteen ; and then he was to choose them, but by their advice."

BOOK
IV.
1553.

Collect.
Numb. 10.

VOL. III.

B b

PART III. It may seem by this, that the King designed this some time before his death; while he thought that he himself might have issue: but he was prevailed on to change a great deal of this scheme; especially those clauses, that kept the crown as in an abeyance till an issue male should be born; which would have totally changed the government: so he departed from these clauses.

Much altered.

Collect. Numb. 11.

This was afterwards put in another form by the judges; and that scheme which they prepared was in six several places superscribed by the King's hand. Probably it consisted of so many pages. I never saw that paper; but I have put in the Collection the paper that was subscribed by twenty-four counsellors and judges: in which they set forth, "that they had often heard the King's earnest desire touching the limitation of the succession of the crown, and had seen his device written in his own hand: and after that was copied out, and delivered to judges and other learned men, they did sign with their hands, seal with their seals, and promise by their oaths and honours, to observe every article in that writing, and all such other matter, as the King should by his last will declare, touching the limitation of the crown; and never to vary from it, but to defend and maintain it to the utmost of their power. And they also promised, that they would prosecute any of their number, or any other that should depart from it, and do their uttermost to see them severely punished."

Opposed long by Cranmer.

I gave an account in my History of the opposition that Cranmer made to this: but Mr. Strype has discovered more particulars concerning it. He tells us, "that he argued with the King himself once about it, in the hearing of the Marquis of Northampton, and the Lord Darcy. He desired leave to speak to the King alone about it, that so he might be more free

“with him: but that was not allowed him. He hoped, **BOOK**
 “if he had obtained that liberty, he should have di- **IV.**
 “verted the King from it. He argued against it in **1553.**
 “Council, and pleaded that the Lady Mary was legiti-
 “mate: but some lawyers were prevailed on to say,
 “that the King, being in possession of the crown, might
 “dispose of it as he pleased. He stood firm, and said,
 “that he could not subscribe it without perjury; hav-
 “ing sworn to the observance of King Henry’s will.
 “Some counsellors said, they had sworn to that will as
 “well as he; and that they had consciences as well as
 “he. He said, Every man was to answer to God for
 “his own deeds, and not for other men’s: he did not
 “take upon him to judge any man’s conscience but his
 “own. He spake with the judges about the matter;
 “and they agreed, that the King might settle the suc-
 “cession, notwithstanding King Henry’s will: yet he
 “remained still unsatisfied, till the King himself re-
 “quired him to set his hand to his will; saying, he
 “hoped he alone would not stand out, and be more re-
 “pugnant to his will, than all the rest of the Council
 “were. This made a great impression on him; it
 “grieved him much: but such was the love that he
 “bore to the King, that in conclusion he yielded, and
 “signed it.”

A little before the King’s death, a very extraordinary **The Pri-**
 thing happened in Ireland. I had told in my former **mate of**
 work, that Goodacre and Bale were sent over to pro- **Ireland poi-**
 mote the Reformation in Ireland. The former was **soned.**
 made Primate of Armagh; of whose death there is a re-
 port, that has been all along believed by his posterity.
 A reverend and worthy clergyman of Hampshire, not
 far from Salisbury, (who is the fourth in descent from
 that Primate, they having been all clergymen but one,)
 told me he had it from his grandfather, who was the Pri-
 mate’s grandson. “That he being invited to a popish

PART III. "lord's house, a monk there drank to him in a poisoned liquor, on design to poison him ; of which they
 1553. "both died." This I set down from the venerable person's own mouth, as a thing known and believed in the family.

A character
 of the court
 in King
 Edward's
 time.

I have no particulars to add, neither concerning the death nor the character of that good Prince, King Edward ; whose untimely end was looked on by all people as a just judgment of God upon those who pretended to love and promote a reformation, but whose impious and flagitious lives were a reproach to it. The open lewdness in which many lived, without shame or remorse, gave great occasion to their adversaries to say, they were in the right to assert justification by faith without works, since they were, as to every good work, reprobate. Their gross and insatiable scrambling after the goods and wealth, that had been dedicated with good designs, though to superstitious uses, without applying any part of it to the promoting the Gospel, the instructing the youth, and relieving the poor, made all people conclude, that it was for robbery, and not for reformation, that their zeal made them so active.

I will here give an eminent instance of fraudulent proceedings in the beginning of this reign ; of which the present learned and zealous Dean of Norwich was pleased to send me a copious account out of their registers. The Prior, when inducted into that dignity, took an oath not to alienate any of their lands ; which was confirmed by injunctions, exhibited to the convent in the royal visitation. But the King, upon certain reasons suggested by the Prior and Convent, and approved by him, did dispense with that oath ; so that, notwithstanding the oath, they were left at liberty to alienate some lands, set forth in the instrument dated the 1st of April 1538, countersigned by Cromwell. A month after that, on the 2d of May that year, the church was

converted from a Prior and Convent, to a Dean and Chapter; and the last Prior was made the first Dean of the church.

BOOK IV.

1553.

But on the 26th of May 1547, in the beginning of King Edward's reign, a letter was sent to that church, signed by the Duke of Somerset, Rich the Lord Chancellor, and six other privy-counsellors; pretending, that they designed the advancement of God's glory, and the truest intent of the late King's determination: by which Sir Richard Southwell, Sir Roger Townshend, and Sir William Paston, were authorized to receive a full surrender of the whole chapter; assuring both the Dean, and every one of the Prebendaries, that there should be no alteration made in their yearly profits; and that there should be a just contentation given to the residue of the ministers there. A commission was granted on the 27th to these persons, to take the surrender, with articles and instructions annexed to it: which, because probably many others were of the same sort, are put in the Collection. But, for all this appearance of fair dealing, it being pretended, that this was only designed that the King should be the founder, and that the church should lose nothing by the surrender; yet when they had made the surrender, in the hope of new letters-patents, they could not obtain them: and lands, to the value of 200l. a year, were taken from them. Upon which, that corporation tried, in Queen Mary's time, to get a bill to pass, to restore them to the state they were in before they were prevailed on to make the surrender. But the bill did not pass. Perhaps it might be suggested, that it would alarm the nation too much, if any alienation of church-lands, how fraudulently soever obtained, were meddled with. I give this as a well-attested instance; by which it may appear, how things of this kind were obtained and managed, chiefly in the beginnings of this reign. For I am not so much

Collect.
Numb. 12.

PART set on justifying every thing that was done in this
III. reign, as another voluminous writer is on condemning
 1553. almost every thing done in it, with a particular viru-
 Coll. Eccl. lence against the memory of that pious Prince. This,
 Hist. p. from one of another communion, is that which might
 882. Col. 2. have been expected ; but it is a little singular, when it
 comes from one, who says he is of our church.

The bad
 lives of
 those who
 professed
 the Gospel. The irregular and immoral lives of many of the pro-
 fessors of the Gospel, gave their enemies great advan-
 tages to say, they run away from confession, penance,
 fasting and prayers, only that they might be under no
 restraint, but indulge themselves in a licentious and
 dissolute course of life. By these things, that were but
 too visible in some of the more eminent among them,
 the people were much alienated from them : and as
 much as they were formerly prejudiced against popery,
 they grew to have kinder thoughts of it, and to look on
 all the changes that had been made as designs to en-
 rich some vicious courtiers, and to let in an inundation
 of vice and wickedness upon the nation. Some of the
 clergy that promoted the Reformation were not with-
 out very visible blemishes : some indiscretions, both in
 their marriages and in their behaviour, contributed
 not a little to raise a general aversion to them.

It is true, there were great and shining lights among
 them, whose exemplary deportment, continual labours,
 fervent charity, and constant zeal, both during their
 lives, and at their deaths, kept up the credit of that
 work, as much as it was disgraced by others ; but they
 were *few*, in comparison of the *many bad* : and those of
 the clergy in whom the old leaven had still a deep root,
 though they complied in every thing that was imposed
 on them, seeing that they had lost those perquisites of
 masses, and other practices, which brought them their
 chief gains, and saw nothing came in lieu of them, for
 their subsistence ; they, who in their hearts hated all

that they were forced to profess outwardly, did secretly possess such as were influenced by them with an abhorrence of all that was done: and they disposed the nation to be ready to throw it all off.

That which was above all, was, that God was highly dishonoured by men who pretended zeal for his glory, but with their works dishonoured him. They talked of the purity of the Gospel, while they were wallowing in all sensuality and uncleanness; pretending to put all their confidence in the merits and sufferings of Christ, while they were crucifying him afresh, and putting him to open shame. In such lamentations as these I find the good men of that time did often vent their sorrows, in their letters to one another, and break out into severe reflections on them. Some did it afterwards abroad in their exile, and others at home in their sufferings. Their only human hope was in the King himself; in whom there appeared such a progress, both in knowledge and zeal, that they expected to see him complete the Reformation, and redress those crying abuses, in which the men in power found their account too evidently to expect a remedy from them. They were men, in whose hands things grew every day worse and worse; and whose arrogance and other disorders our chief reformers were forced in some measure to connive at, that they might not provoke them to retard a work, that could in no wise be carried on without their countenance and authority; though they saw the prejudice it brought upon them, to be obliged to apply to, and to make use of such tools, with which the righteous souls of our best reformers were much grieved. They were engaged with men that were ready to pull down, especially when any thing was to be got by it; but were as backward in building up, as they were forward in plucking down. So that they seemed to design to leave

PART all in a great ruin. These were great hinderances to
III. the progress of the Reformation, as they were both the
1553. burden and the shame of our reformers.

I thought it not amiss to open this as fully as I found it lying before me : and I hope the reader will not only consider this as a part of the history of a former age, but as an admonition to us in the present. If we fall under the disorders and corruptions that then reigned, why should not we expect such a calamity as overtook and overwhelmed them ? We may justly look for worse, since we have the advantages of much more light, and many more blessings, as well as many alarming terrors, which have all gone over us without those dismal convulsions that we might have looked for : and they have as easily slipped out of our thoughts, as if we had never seen or felt them. To the viciousness of life, and the open immoralities and neglect of religion, that were the sins of the former age, many among us have added a studied impiety, and a laboured opposition to all revealed religion ; which some have owned in so barefaced a manner, that perhaps no age of the world can show any thing like it. If others with secular views have declaimed against this, and put on some show of zeal, how much more of party than of true religion has appeared in it. The divided parties among us have showed little true regard to religion, and to a course of virtue and piety, which can only give both strength and honour to a church ; and this does too plainly appear in many, who talk the most of it, or for it.

Have we of the clergy made the steps that became us, and that were designed in the former age, for throwing out abuses, for regulating the courts, and restoring discipline ? While we have for above 150 years expressed once a year a faint wish that the primitive discipline were again restored, and yet have not made one

step toward it. What a venality of the advowsons to **BOOK**
 livings do we hear of; and at best the disposing of them **IV.**
 goes generally by secular regards, by importunities, ob- **1553.**
 ligations, or friendship: and above all, how few of
 those that labour in the Gospel, do labour indeed, and
 give themselves wholly to it! How much of their time
 and zeal is employed in things that do not deserve it so
 well, as the watching over, the instructing, and the
 building up their flock in their most holy faith! How
 few do fast and pray, and study to prepare themselves
 and their people for the evil day, that seems much
 nearer us than the greatest part are willing to appre-
 hend; that so we may by our intercessions deliver our
 church and nation from that which is ready to swallow
 us up; or at least be so fortified and assisted, that
 we ourselves, and others, by what they see in us, may
 glorify God in that day of visitation!

I shall conclude this book with one reflection, that The provi-
 dence of
 God to-
 wards the
 reformed.
 may make us hope, that the Reformation was under a
 particular and watchful care of Providence: when the
 light seemed almost extinguished in one place, it broke
 out in another; by which, as it was still kept shining
 somewhere, so there was a sanctuary opened, to which
 those who were forced to fly from one place, might in
 their flight find a covert in another from the storm. In
 the beginning of this reign, by the breaking of the
 Smalcaldic League, by the taking of the Elector of
 Saxony, and the Landgrave of Hesse, and by the *Inter-
 rim*, the Reformation seemed to be near extinguished in
 Germany. In this church it was at that time advanced;
 and we kindly then received those who were forced to
 fly hither for shelter. And now, in the year before the
 death of this good King, there was not only a revival,
 but a lasting settlement procured in Germany to the
 Reformation there: so that those who fled from hence

PART found a safe and kind harbour in all the places of the
III. Empire, to which they were driven by the storm and
1553. tempest that arose here. Of which I go next to gather
up such gleanings as have come in my way.

BOOK V.

*Of what happened during Queen Mary's Reign, from
the Year 1553, to the Year 1558.*

AS soon as the Queen came to the Tower of London, BOOK
she sent for the Lord Mayor and the Aldermen of the V.
city, and told them, "that though her own conscience 1553.
"was staid in matters of religion, yet she meaneth ^{The}
"graciously not to compel or strain other people's con- ^{Queen's}
"sciences, otherwise than God shall, as she trusteth, ^{words}
"put in their hearts a persuasion of the truth." These ^{were soft.}
soft words were not long remembered. Of the progress
of the severities in her reign I have a very authentical
account before me, in the original Council-book, that
begins on the 17th of August 1553, and goes to the
end of the year 1557 : but from that to her death I
have not so sure a thread. The book begins with or-
ders for letters to be written to Coverdale and Hooper
for their undelayed repair to the court : and a complaint
being made of a sermon preached by Fisher, Parson of
Amersham, he was ordered to appear the next day,
and to bring the notes of his sermon with him. A
parliament was summoned to meet in November.
On the 14th of August the writ for the convocation
was directed to Cranmer. A letter was soon after writ-
ten by the Queen and Council to the Bishop of Nor-
wich, to suffer none to preach without a special licence :
the same order was intimated to the Lord Mayor of
London ; and the same was no doubt universally both
ordered and executed.

PART
III.

1553.
But her
proceeding
severe.

Rymer
MSS.

On the 20th of August there was an order for guards to defend the preacher at St. Paul's Cross, occasioned by what had happened to Bourn. It seems few came to hear the sermons, for the Lord Mayor was ordered "to make the ancients of the companies resort to the sermons, lest the preacher should be discouraged by a small audience." On the 23d of August Gardiner was declared Lord Chancellor. Here I shall set down the appointments of the Lord Chancellor as they were settled at that time. There was a privy seal given for wages and diets, and for the masters in chancery, for 542l. 15s. yearly : 50l. was ordered for attending on the Star-Chamber every term ; and, besides that, a salary was given of 300l. and 64l. for twelve tun of wine, and 16l. for wax. All these were granted the 21st of September, but were to commence from the 23d of August. On the 24th of August there was an order sent to the Keeper of Newgate to receive and keep John Melvil, a Scot, and a very seditious preacher ; so he was called in the warrant. On the same day a letter was written to the Mayor of Canterbury, to set Panton, Vicar St. Dunstan's, and one Burden, on the pillory, for seditious words against the Queen ; and to take bonds at their discretion for their good abearing. On the 26th of August, a letter was writ to the Mayor of Coventry to apprehend Symonds, a Vicar there, and to send him up with such matter as can be procured to charge him with ; " and to punish at their discretion such slanderous talkers, as by his lewd preaching have had dissolute and seditious talk."

Against
Cranmer,
Hooper,
and others.

Here is a great deal of heat in ten days time. Cranmer was called before the Council in the beginning of August ; probably on the account of his signing King Edward's will, and acting upon it : but since so many of those who had signed it were then at the Council-board, they were perhaps ashamed to proceed further

against him, who had opposed it so much. He had for that time only a severe reprimand, and was commanded to keep his house. He was brought again before some of the Queen's commissioners, being cited to appear, and to bring the inventory of his goods with him. He brought it, but no further proceedings against him are mentioned at that time. On the 29th of August Hooper appeared before the Council. On the 1st of September he was sent to the Fleet, no regard being had to the active zeal that he had expressed in asserting the Queen's right, and against the Lady Jane; so sincerely did he follow the dictates of his conscience, when he could not but see what consequences it was like to have. On the 2d, order was given that his servant might attend on him. On the 31st of August, Coverdale appeared before them, and in respect that he was a foreigner, he was ordered to attend till further order. On the 2d of September, Sanders, Vicar in Coventry, appeared before the Council, and a letter was written to the Mayor of Leicester to bring up their Vicar. On the 4th of September, Latimer was summoned to appear, and a letter was written to the Mayor of Coventry to set Symonds at liberty, upon his repentance, for a wish he had uttered, wishing they were hanged that said mass: if he refused to do that, the Mayor was to give notice of it.

On the 5th of September a letter was written to Sir John Sidenham, to let the strangers depart, and to give them a passport. This related to the congregation of the foreigners that had settled, in order to set up a manufacture at Glassenbury. On the 10th of September a letter of thanks was ordered for the gentlemen of Cornwall, for their honest proceeding in electing knights for the parliament. It seems there was some debate about it with the Sheriff; for a letter was written to him to accept of the election, and not to trouble the

BOOK
V.
1553.

BOOK county for any alteration. On the 13th of September
V. it is entered, that Latimer for his seditious demeanor
1553. should be close prisoner in the Tower, with a servant to
attend him. On the same day, Cranmer was ordered
to appear the next day at the Star-Chamber. On the
14th, in the Star-Chamber, Cranmer, as well for his
treason against the Queen, as for spreading seditious
bills moving tumults, to the disquieting the present
state, was sent to the Tower, and referred to justice.
There are several orders made for restoring all chalices
to churches, together with all other goods belonging to
them, though they had been sent into the great ward-
robe. On the 4th of October the Archbishop of York
was committed to the Tower for divers offences; and
Horn, the Dean of Duresme, was summoned again and
again, but he thought fit to go beyond sea. Nothing
gave more offence than the promoting petitions for re-
taining the doctrine and service settled in King Ed-
ward's time. Those of Maidstone were charged with
it; and this is on several occasions mentioned in the
Council-book: but as the government was thus set to
overthrow all that had been done in King Edward's
time; so the fierceness of the popish party made them
on many occasions outrun the government. Some of
the clergy continued to perform the daily worship, and
to celebrate the sacrament: more they durst not do in
public, all preaching being forbidden. The people that
favoured the Reformation frequented the service with
great devotion and zeal: for all saw what was coming on
them; and so they studied to prepare themselves for it.
Some of the ruder multitudes came into their churches,
and disturbed them while they were at their devotions:
they insulted the ministers, and laughed at their wor-
ship; and there were every where informers with false
stories to charge the more zealous preachers. In many
places the people broke in violently into churches, and

set up altars, and the mass in them, before the parliament met to change the laws. BOOK
V.

The Duke of Northumberland showed that abjectness of mind, that might have been expected from so insolent a man, loaded with so much guilt: he begged his life with all possible meanness, *that he might do penance all the days of his life, if it were in a mouse-hole.* He went to mass in the Tower, and received the sacrament in the popish manner. He sent for Gardiner, and asked him if there was no hope for him to live, and do penance for his sins. The Bishop said, his offence was great, and he would do well to provide for the worst; especially to see that he stood well with God in matters of conscience and religion: for to speak plainly, he said, he thought he must die. The Duke desired he might have a learned priest sent him, for his confession and spiritual comfort. "For religion, he said, he could be of no other but of his: he never was of any other indeed: he complied in King Edward's days only out of ambition, for which he prayed God to forgive him; and he promised that he would declare that at his death." The Bishop shed many many tears, and seemed to be troubled for him: and, as he reported himself, he pressed the Queen so much, that he had almost gained her consent for his life. But the Emperor, who was then designing the marriage, that took effect afterwards, saw what a struggle there might be against that, and what mischief such a man might afterwards do. So he wrote his advice for his death positively to the Queen: and he was executed, and died as he had lived.

Gates and Palmer, who suffered with him, had tried how far the going to mass, and receiving the sacrament in the popish way, could save them: but when they were brought to suffer, Gates confessed, "that he had lived as viciously as any in the world. He was a

1553.
The Duke
of Nor-
thumber-
land begs
his life, but
in vain.

Others suf-
fered with
him.

PART "great reader of the Scriptures; but no man followed
 III. "them less: he read them only to dispute. He ex-
 1553. "horted people to consider how they read God's holy
 "word, otherwise it would be but poison to them.
 "Palmer thanked God for his affliction, and said, he
 "had learned more in one dark corner of the Tower,
 "than he had ever learned formerly: he had there
 "come to see God in his works, and in his mercies;
 "and had seen himself a mass of sin, and of all vileness
 "the vilest." He seemed not daunted with the fear of
 death, though he saw two die before him, and the
 bloody axe coming to finish the business on himself.
 I find nothing new with relation to the session of par-
 liament.

A convoca-
 tion sum-
 moned.

The writ, upon which the convocation was sum-
 moned, was directed to Cranmer, but executed by Bon-
 ner, Bishop of London. Weston was chosen Prolo-
 cutor: and the Queen sent a message to them to dis-
 pute about religion. I gave formerly an account of that
 disputation, and can add little to it. The minutes tell
 us, that Philips, who was one of the five that refused to
 subscribe, did, on the 30th of April, recant and sub-
 scribe. It is indeed of little consequence to inquire
 into the proceedings of the convocation during this
 reign; in which all the old notions of popery were
 taken up, even before they were enacted: though both
 this convocation and the next were summoned by the
 Queen's writ, with the title of Supreme Head of the
 Church.

There was at this time an infamous slander set about,
 of the Queen's being with child by Gardiner. The
 Queen's whole life being innocent as to all such things,
 that might have made them to despise such a report,
 rather than to trace it up: besides, Gardiner's great age
 made, that none could believe it. But the Earl of Sussex,
 in his officious zeal, pursued it through eight or ten

hands: and one at last was indicted for having re-BOOK
ported it; though such an absurd lie had, perhaps, ^{V.}
been better neglected, than so minutely inquired into. 1553.
In the same letter that mentions this, the Earl of Sussex <sup>MSS. Pe-
tyt.</sup>
gives an account of examinations, touching a design
for an insurrection, upon the arrival of the Prince of
Spain.

The Emperor had, on the 21st of December, signed <sup>A treaty of
marriage
with the
Prince of
Spain.</sup>
a commission, empowering the Count of Egmond, and
others, to treat a marriage between his son and the
Queen. Upon their coming to England, the Queen
gave a commission, on the 1st of January, to the Lord
Chancellor, and others, to treat with them. And Prince
Philip of Spain did, on the 28th of April, send from
Valladolid full powers to the same effect. That which
quickened the treaty was, an account of a vast treasure
that was come with the fleet from the West-Indies to
Seville; reckoned to have brought over five millions, as
Mason wrote from Brussels. He does not denominate
the millions, whether pounds, or crowns. He wishes
the half were true. It was necessary to have a great
treasure in view: for though I never found any hint of
the corrupting of parliament-men before this time, yet
there was now an extraordinary occasion for it; and
they saw where only the treasure to furnish it could
be had. A concurrence of many circumstances seemed
to determine all things for this marriage. Every thing
was agreed to: the conditions seemed to be of great ad-
vantage to the nation. In this treaty of marriage, if
Cæsar Campana (who wrote Philip's life very copiously) <sup>Part iii.
B. 6.</sup>
was well informed, Philip himself was extremely dis-
gusted at it: for he desired to be married to a wife
more suited to his own age. He adds another particu-
lar, "that the nation showed such an aversion to it,
"that the Count of Egmond, with the others sent over
"to treat about it, saw themselves in such danger, that

PART "they were forced to fly away, that they might avoid
 III. "it: and a parliament was to be called, to approve of
 1554. "the conditions of the treaty."

Wyat's ris-
 ing and
 principles.

Sir Thomas Wyatt was a man that had been oft employed in embassies, particularly in Spain; where he had made such observations upon the subtilty and cruelty of the Spaniards, and of the treatment that such kingdoms and provinces met with, that came under their yoke, that he could not look on the misery that his country was like to fall under without a just concern about it. He was the Duke of Northumberland's kinsman, yet he would not join in Lady Jane's business: and before he knew that any others had done it, he proclaimed the Queen at Maidstone; but he did not, upon that, run to her for thanks, as others did: yet the Queen was so sensible of his loyalty and zeal for her, that she sent her thanks to him by the Earl of Arundel; to whom he appealed, as to this particular, when he was under examination in the Tower. He had obtained a pass to go beyond sea; but his lady being with child, he staid to see the end of that. Nothing set him on to raise the country as he did, but his love and zeal for the public. He never pretended that religion was his motive: many Papists joined with him. When he passed by Charing-Cross, he might have turned to Whitehall, which was but ill defended; for many of the Earl of Pembroke's men came over to him. This showed that he meant no harm to the Queen's person. His marching into London was on design to engage the city to come and join with him in a petition to the Queen against the Spanish match. The Queen herself was so satisfied, as to his good intentions, that she intended to have pardoned him, had not a message from the Prince of Spain determined her to order his head to be cut off. I suppose there may be a mistake here; and that it was the Emperor, then in Flanders,

and not the Prince of Spain, who was yet in Spain, that **BOOK**
 sent this advice. He never accused the Lady Elizabeth : **V.**
 but being entangled by questions in one examination, **1554.**
 he had said somewhat reflecting on the Earl of Devon-
 shire: for this he begged his pardon. And when he
 was on the scaffold, he not only cleared the Lady Eliza-
 beth, but referred himself with relation to her inno-
 cence, and that she was not privy to their matters, to
 the declaration he had made to the Council. All this
 account concerning him I take from a relation that **Ex MS. Pe-**
 his son gave afterwards to the Lord Burleigh, marked **tyti.**
 with that lord's hand on it. It seems the priests at
 this time understood the interests of their cause better
 than others did above an age after: for they moved
 the Queen to show a signal act of mercy, and to pardon
 all that had been engaged in this rising.

Only it gave a colour to the severity against the Lady **Lady Jane**
 Jane Gray and her husband. She was the wonder and **Gray exe-**
 delight of all that knew her. I have two of her letters **cuted.**
 in Latin, writ to Bullinger, copied from the originals.
 all in her own hand, written in a pure and unaffected
 style. She was then entering on the study of the He-
 brew, in the method that Bullinger advised her. She
 expresses in her letters a wonderful respect and sub-
 mission to him, with a great strain of modesty, and a
 very singular zeal for religion. There being nothing in
 those letters that is in any sort historical, I thought it
 was not proper to put them in my Collection; though
 one cannot read them, without a particular veneration
 for the memory of so young and so rare a creature.

And now the government, finding all things under **Severities**
 their feet, did begin to show to the whole nation what **against the**
 was to be expected. All that adhered to the Reforma- **married**
 tion were sure to be excluded from all favour: com- **clergy.**
 missions were sent over the whole kingdom, to proceed,
 as upon other points, so particularly against the married

PART clergy. These came to York, directed to the Guardian
III. of the Spiritualities in that place: and the Dean and

1554. Chapter were authorized by the Queen to act pursuant
to their instructions. And they acted as in a vacancy:
though the commission to proceed against the Arch-
bishop bears date the 16th of March; yet, on the 9th
of March, they sent out a general citation of the clergy

Reg. Ebor.
Sede Vac. f.
65, 66.

to appear before them on the 12th of March. They
did not indeed begin to deprive any before the 27th of
April: and from that day to the 20th of December
they deprived one and fifty, of whom several were pre-
bendaries.

I will here insert a short account of the unjust and
arbitrary deprivations of the married clergy, that was
published by Parker, afterwards Archbishop of Canter-
bury. "What examples have they in stories before-
" time, that deprivations have been thus handled before
" our days? I will not speak of particular cases; where
" some men have been deprived, never convict, no, nor
" never called: some called, that were fast locked in
" prison; and yet they were nevertheless deprived im-
" mediately. Some were deprived without the case of
" marriage after their order: some induced to resign,
" upon promise of pension, and the promise as yet
" never performed. Some so deprived, that they were
" spoiled of their wages, for the which they served the
" half-year before; and, not ten days before the receipt,
" sequestered from it. Some prevented from the half-
" year's receipt, after charges of tenths and subsidies
" paid, and yet not deprived six weeks after. Some de-
" prived of their receipt somewhat before the day, with
" the which their fruits to the Queen's Majesty should
" be contented; and some yet in the like case charge-
" able hereafter, if the Queen's merciful Grace be not
" informed thereof, by the mediation of some charitable
" solicitor.—And a little after, there were deprived,

“ or driven away, twelve of sixteen thousand, as some **BOOK**
 “ writer maketh his account.” But there are good rea- **V.**
 sons to think, that numbers have been wrong taken of **1554.**
 this. Among other suggestions, Dr. Tanner has sent **Aggravated**
 me this ; that the diocese of Norwich is reckoned al- **by some.**
 most an eighth part of all England ; and he finds, there
 were only 335 clergymen deprived on that account : by
 this the whole number will fall short of 3000. This, it
 is true, is but a conjecture ; yet it is a very probable
 one : and the other account is no way credible.

I shall, to this, only add another short account of
 the proceedings at that time, published by Ailmer,
 afterwards Bishop of London. “ The bishops that
 “ were married were thrust out of the parliament-
 “ house ; and all married deans and archdeacons out
 “ of the convocation. Many put out of their livings,
 “ and others restored, without form of law.—Many
 “ churches were changed, many altars set up, many
 “ masses said, many dirges sung, before the law was
 “ repealed.” From these accounts we may easily be-
 lieve, that, when the laws were altered, there was a
 vigorous and a speedy execution of them.

After all matters relating to the Queen's marriage **The Queen**
 were settled, the Emperor sent a fleet for the Prince **writes the**
 of Spain : and upon that occasion the Queen was pre- **first letter**
 vailed on to break through all forms, and to write the **to King**
 first love-letter to him ; of which, having met with the **Philip.**
 original, I have put it in the Collection, as a singularity **Collect.**
 in such matters. She tells him, “ that she understand- **Numb. 13.**
 “ ing that the Emperor's ambassador was sending the
 “ bearer to him, though he had not written since their
 “ alliance had been a treating ; yet she, thinking herself
 “ obliged by the sincere affection that he had for her,
 “ confirmed by good effects, and by the letters that he
 “ had written to the Emperor's ambassador, could not
 “ restrain herself from letting him know the duty, in

PART " which she intended to correspond always with him :

III. " and she thanked him for all his good offices. She ac-

1554. " quainted him, that her parliament had, without any
" opposition, agreed to the articles of their marriage,
" and thought them honourable, advantageous, and
" more than reasonable. This gave her an entire con-
" fidence, that his coming to England should be safe,
" and agreeable to him. She ends, recommending
" herself most affectionately and humbly to his High-
" ness, as being his entirely assured, and most obliged
" ally."

Proceed-
ings against
heretics.

But, the matter of the marriage being settled, and afterwards executed, I will now look again into the proceedings of the Council. On the 16th of January, one Wotton, called an esquire, was committed to be close prisoner in the Fleet for his obstinate standing against matters of religion. On the 14th of February, letters were written to the Lord Rich, and to Sir John Wentworth, to punish some in Colchester, Coxall, and other places, who dissuaded people from frequenting such divine service as was then appointed by law to be observed. Upon this, many were committed, and others put under recognizances to appear. On the 8th of March, an order was sent to the Lieutenant of the Tower, to deliver Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer to Sir John Williams, who was to carry them to Oxford. On the 26th of March, an order was given to send up Taylor, Parson of Hadley ; and Askew of West-Hillesly. Barlow, Bishop of Bath and Wells, was carried beyond sea, by one Williams, a mariner of Bristol ; who, returning to Pembrokeshire, some gentlemen there seized on him, and sent him to London : so he was sent to the Marshalsea, and a letter of thanks was written to those who had seized on him ; so careful were they to encourage every officious show of zeal.

A convoca-
tion.

But now came on the second convocation in this reign,

in which all that was done was, that the Prolocutor **BOOK**
 Weston; with some deputed to go along with him, were **V.**
 ordered to go to Oxford, to dispute with the three bi- **1554.**
 shops. Of which I can add nothing to the account I
 formerly gave of it. On the 27th of April, Weston re-
 turned and reported the conference or examination of
 Cranmer, and the two other bishops, attested under the
 seal of the University: and soon after that they were
 dismissed; for the parliament met on the 2d of April,
 and was dismissed on the 5th of May.

On the 3d of May, Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer **Cranmer's**
 being judged obstinate heretics, the judges were asked **treason par-**
 what the Queen might do, since Cranmer was attainted. **doned, that**
 He was a man dead in law, and not capable of any **he might**
 other censure; and this seems to be the true reason **be burnt.**
 that moved the Queen to pardon the treason, upon
 which he was already condemned: for though he was
 very earnest to obtain a pardon for that, it does not ap-
 pear that there was any regard had to him in granting
 it; but, on the contrary, it seems it was resolved that he
 should be burnt as a heretic: and since that could not
 be done while he stood condemned of treason, this
 seems to be the only motive of that mercy, which, in
 this case, was certainly done out of cruelty. On the
 20th of May, a servant of the Lady Elizabeth's was
 brought before the Council: but there is nothing in
 particular mentioned, only he was required to attend.
 There were suspicions of her being concerned in Wyat's
 rebellion, as appeared in the account given of Wyat
 himself. It is alleged, that Gardiner studied to suborn
 false witnesses to charge her with that; and that this
 went so far, that a warrant was brought to Bridges, the
 Lieutenant of the Tower, for her execution; but that he **Reply to**
 would not obey it, till he knew the Queen's pleasure. **Parsons, p.**
84.
 Some credit seems due to this, since it was published in
 her reign, and was not contradicted, nor denied, as far

PART as I can find. But it seems to be denied in a declaration set forth many years after by herself when she was Queen; which shall be mentioned in its proper place. On the 25th of May, some in Stepney were ordered to be set on the pillory for spreading false news; the ears of one were ordered to be nailed to the pillory, and then cut off. On the 26th of May, Sir Henry Bedingfield was sent with instructions, signed by the Queen, for the ordering the Lady Elizabeth.

On the 1st of June, an order was sent to the Bishop of London, to send discreet and learned preachers into Essex, to reduce the people there. Bonner seemed to think of no way of reducing any, but by severity and force; so that the Council found it necessary to put him in mind of his pastoral care. Orders were then given for the reception of the Prince of Spain. Some were ordered to be set on a pillory, and their ears were to be nailed to it, and cut off. The Dutchess of Northumberland desired that her sons might hear mass in the Tower: this was granted, but order was given that none might speak with them. On the 11th of June, orders were given to receive the Duke of Savoy at Dover. And on the 5th of July, order was given to punish those who were concerned in the imposture, called *the Spirit in the wall*. On the 6th of July, some of the Lady Elizabeth's servants were committed for lewd words of the state of the kingdom. On the 24th of July, two treaties for the Queen's marriage, made by the Lord Fitzwater, who had been ambassador in Spain, were given to the Lord Treasurer.

The Council orders severe proceedings.

Now the marriage was made, and the jollities on such occasions put some stop to severities: but it was a short one; for, on the 15th of August, letters were writ to the justices of peace in Sussex, to punish those who railed at the mysteries of Christ's religion. I must observe here once for all, that the letters themselves, writ

by the Council, are not entered in the book: these BOOK V. would have set out particulars much more clearly than 1554. those short entries do: but there were forms of those letters put in a chest, and the Council-book refers us often to the letter in the chest. On the 19th of August, letters of thanks are ordered to Tirrell, and others, for their care, ordering them to imprison all such as came not to divine service; and to keep them in prison till they had the comfort of their amendment. Several men and women were imprisoned in Huntingtonshire. The 20th of August, mention is made of some in prison for words. On the 21st of August, an order was sent to examine into a conspiracy in Suffolk, by certain lewd persons. On the 16th of September, a letter was ordered to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London, to punish the spreaders of false rumours.

But now came on the great affair of the reconciling The reconciliation with Rome designed. the nation to the see of Rome. The two former parliaments could not be brought up to that; so the court was willing to accept all that they could be brought to; but when they saw at what they stuck, they were sent home: and some were so weak as to think, that, by yielding in some things, they should give the court such content, as to save the rest. They were willing to return back to that state of religion, in which King Henry left it; and did not rightly apprehend that nothing could give the Queen an entire content, but a total reconciliation with the Pope: whereas those who could not come up to this ought to have stood firm at first, and not, by giving ground, have encouraged the court to compass their whole design. The Queen was more than ordinary solicitous to get a parliament chosen to her mind. She wrote a letter to the Earl of Sussex; and probably she wrote to all those in whom she confided, in the same strain. It will be found in the Col-Collect. Numb. 14.lection. "She had now summoned a parliament to

PART III. " the 12th of November, in which she expected to be
 1554. " assisted by him ; and that he would admonish her
 " good subjects, who had a right to elect the members,
 " to choose men of the wise, grave, and catholic sort ;
 " such as indeed meant the true honour of God, and
 " the prosperity of the commonwealth ; which she and
 " the King her husband did intend, without the altera-
 " tion of any particular man's possession ; which, among
 " other false rumours, the hinderers of her good pur-
 " poses, and the favourers of heretics, did most untruly
 " report. She desired him to come up against the feast
 " of All-Saints at the furthest, that she might confer
 " with him about those matters, that were to be treated
 " of in parliament." This is dated the 6th of October ;
 and so careful was that lord to merit the continuance
 of the Queen's confidence, that, on the 14th of October,
 he wrote to the gentlemen of the county, to reserve
 their voices for the person whom he should name : he
 also wrote to the town of Yarmouth for a burgess. But
 now to open more particularly the great matter that
 was to be transacted in this parliament.

Pole sent
 Legate for
 that end.

When the news of the change of government in Eng-
 land, and of the Queen's intentions, were brought to
 Rome, it was not possible to deliberate long, who was
 the properest person to be sent Legate. Pole had so
 many meritorious characters on him, that, besides the
 signification of the Queen's desire, no other person
 could be thought on. A. Harmer has given the bull,
 upon which he was sent from Rome. It is dated the
 5th of August, 1553, though the Queen came not to
 London till the 3d of August : and Comendone, who
 carried her message to the Pope, was in London on the
 23d ; for he saw the Duke of Northumberland's execu-
 tion. It seems that at Rome, upon King Edward's
 death, they took it for granted, both that her right
 would take place, and that she would reconcile her

kingdom again to that see : and therefore the bull was prepared. Pole had at that time retired 300 mile from Rome, to an abbey upon the lake, now called De Garda : in his absence he was declared Legate ; upon which he wrote a letter to the Queen on the 13th of August, which I have put in the Collection.

BOOK
V.
1554.
Collect.
Numb. 15.
He wrote
to the
Queen.

“ He begins, expressing his joy at her exaltation, more particularly at the manner of it ; which he reckons a singular work of an immediate Providence : in which, as indeed the subject seemed to allow it, he enlarges very copiously. And since she carried the name of the *blessed Virgin*, he calls on her to say the *Magnificat*, applying it to the late providences of God towards herself. He desires her to consider what was the beginning of all the miseries that England had felt ; it was the King her father’s departing from the apostolic see, and the catholic church. He was a witness to all the steps made in that matter. He had upon all occasions asserted both her mother’s marriage, and her own right : and had done and suffered much on that account. He was therefore now most particularly concerned to know what her mind was with relation to religion ; and though he was then 300 miles from Rome, he was named Legate, to be sent to her, to the Emperor, and to the French King ; therefore he sent one to her to know her mind. He did not doubt of it ; for no person owed more to the apostolic see than she did, since it was upon her account that so much outrage had been done to it. So, before he would proceed in his legatine function, he desired to know her pleasure more particularly.”

Upon this she wrote an answer on the 10th of October, which is also in the Collection. “ She thanked him for all the kind expressions in his letter ; and in particular for the good advice he gave her. She was full of reverence and obedience to the holy see ; but it

The
Queen’s
answer.
Collect.
Numb. 16.

PART III. " was a great trouble to her, that she could not yet declare her mind openly in that matter. As soon as it
 1554. " was safe for her to do it, she would let him know it. " His messenger would tell him all particulars : she " was then crowned. She hoped the parliament would " repeal all the bad laws : and that she should obtain " the Pope's pardon for all her own faults. She sends by " him her most humble thanks to the Pope for his clemency to her, and for his readiness to forget all that " is past." With this she sent back Ormant to him. The bull that the Pope sent to Pole is all a rhetorical panegyric upon the Queen's coming to the crown, and on her pious intentions. But bulls being often in a common form, it is not in it, but in the breves, that we are to seek the powers, or instructions, given to Pole. There was a part of Cardinal Pole's register conveyed to me, about a year after my second volume was printed : a short account of the most remarkable things in it was then printed, in a letter directed to me. The characters of the truth of the papers are visible ; some of them are in Latin, and some in Italian : and because I look on this as a matter of great consequence, I will give a very particular account of them.

Collect.
 Numb. 17.
 His first
 powers.

The first paper, which will be found in the Collection, is the breve, that was at first sent him, of the Pope's own motion ; and bears date the 8th of March 1554. By it, " Pole is empowered to receive all heretics, of " both sexes and of all ranks, even bishops and archbishops, communities as well as single persons, of what " heresies soever guilty, though relapsed in them, upon " their true and unfeigned repentance ; and to absolve " them from all pains and censures, how long soever " they had continued in their errors, and though their " sins were reserved immediately to the holy see. And " he was empowered to pardon all irregularities run " into by them, and all the bigamies of ecclesiastical

“ persons ; they first relinquishing their wives : not- BOOK
 “ withstanding which, they might be continued in their V.
 “ orders and functions, and might be capable of all ec- 1554.
 “ clesiastical promotions ; all infamy being pardoned,
 “ provided they, with a contrite heart, should sacra-
 “ mentally confess their sins to any catholic priest, at
 “ their choice, and submit to such penance as he should
 “ enjoin : excusing them from all public confession, ab-
 “ juration, or open penance. Absolving all communi-
 “ ties from any unlawful pactions in favour of others,
 “ though confirmed by oaths. Empowering him to re-
 “ ceive all regulars, and to absolve them from the cen-
 “ sures of apostasy ; allowing them to possess benefices
 “ as seculars. Dispensing with the strict observation
 “ of Lent, as to milk, meats, and eggs ; and even flesh,
 “ upon the allowance of either the confessor, or the
 “ physician. Giving him authority to suffer such of
 “ the clergy, under the degree of a bishop, who were
 “ married, upon their true conversion, to live in that
 “ state, so that no scandals were given by it : only they
 “ were not to minister at the altar, nor to do any eccle-
 “ siastical function ; but they might lawfully continue
 “ in the married state, the issue being declared law-
 “ ful. To this is added, a power of uniting of bene-
 “ fices.”

Next comes the clause concerning the possessors of
 ecclesiastical goods. “ He is empowered to agree,
 “ transact, and discharge them, for all the profits they
 “ had wickedly received, and for the moveable goods
 “ that they had consumed ; *the immoveable goods that*
 “ *have been by them unduly detained, being first re-*
 “ *stored, if that should seem to be convenient to him.*
 “ And whatever should arise out of any such agree-
 “ ment, was to be applied to the church, to which such
 “ goods had belonged, or for the advancement of studies,
 “ and to schools. There is likewise a power granted, to

PART III. " delegate others under him, for the care and perform-
 1554. " ance of all these particulars. But because he was to
 " go first to Flanders, and stay in those parts for some
 " time; the Pope gave him authority to execute these
 " powers, even while he was without the kingdom, to
 " all persons belonging to it, that should apply to him,
 " particularly with relation to all orders unduly re-
 " ceived; and to confirm bishops or archbishops, who
 " had been promoted by a secular nomination, during
 " the schism, and had assisted the former kings, though
 " they had fallen into heresy, upon their return to the
 " unity of the church: and to provide to metropolitical
 " or cathedral churches, such persons as should be re-
 " commended to him by the Queen, according to the
 " customs of the kingdom, upon any vacancy: and to
 " absolve and rehabilitate all clergymen of all ranks, not-
 " withstanding their past errors. All these powers are
 " confirmed, with a full *non obstante* to all constitutions
 " whatsoever."

Cardinal
 Pole stop-
 ped in Flan-
 ders by the
 Emperor.

Here was a great fulness of favour, with relation to all personal things. When Pole (whose name I write as he himself did, and not as we usually do) came to Flanders, he was stopped by the Emperor's order till his powers were seen, and sent to England. When they were seen, they were considered as far short of what was expected, and of what seemed necessary for the carrying on the reconciliation quietly through the nation: so Pole sent Ormanet to Rome for fuller powers, and retired to Diligam-Abbey, near Brussels. While he was there, he heard the news of Philip's arrival in England, and of the Queen's being married to him: upon which he wrote a letter of congratulation to the Bishop of Arras, which is in the Collection: and on the same day he wrote this acceptable piece of news to the Cardinal de Monte; which is also in the Collection. In the postscript to the Bishop of Arras, he tells him,

Collect.
 Numb. 18.

Collect.
 Numb. 19.

that Ormanet was returned with fuller powers. He brought with him two breves. BOOK
V.

The first is of no importance to this matter : but because it was thought to be suppressed on design, by the writer of the letter directed to me by him that wrote on this subject in King James's time, it is put in the Collection. It sets forth, " that he was sent first to the Queen of England ; and after that he was constituted *legate à latere*, for mediating a peace between the Emperor and the King of France. He had also very ample powers given him, while he remained in Flanders, with relation to English persons and affairs. But since, by reason of the schism, and other errors, many cases might happen, that wanted a provision from the apostolical see, which could not be comprehended within the faculties given him : and because it is doubtful, whether he may yet use them in the Queen's dominions ; and which of them shall be made use of, while he is either with the Emperor, or the King of France : the Pope gives him full power to make use of all faculties sent to him, by himself, or by any other deputed by him ; and to do every thing that he shall think will conduce to the glory of God, the honour of the holy see, and the bringing the Queen's dominions to the communion of the church, as fully as may be. And while he remained with the Emperor, he gave him all the powers of a *legate à latere*, for all his dominions : and he gave him the same powers, while he should be with the King of France."

The other breve, which is also in the Collection, sets forth, " that, upon the hopes of reducing the kingdom of England, that had been torn from the body of the catholic church, to an union with it, out of which there is no salvation ; the Pope had sent him his *legate à latere*, with all the powers that seemed neces-

1554.

Collect.
Numb. 20.New and
fuller
powers
sent to
Pole.Collect.
Numb. 21.
With rela-
tion to church-
lands.

PART "sary or proper for effecting that work : in particular,
 III. "to agree and transact with the possessors of church-
 1554. "goods concerning them. And whereas, by the be-
 "ginnings and progress already made, there is good
 "hopes of bringing that work to a full perfection ;
 "which will go on the easier, the more indulgent and
 "bountiful the Pope shows himself, with relation to the
 "possessions of those goods : the Pope therefore, not
 "willing that the recovering that nation, and the salva-
 "tion of so many souls, should be obstructed by any
 "worldly regards, in imitation of the good father, who
 "received the returning prodigal, he empowered Pole,
 "in whose prudence and dexterity he put an entire
 "confidence, to treat with all the possessors or de-
 "tainers of ecclesiastical goods, for whom the Queen
 "should intercede ; and to transact and compound with
 "them, that they might, without any scruple, enjoy
 "and retain the said goods : and to conclude every
 "thing that was proper or necessary with relation to
 "them. *Saving always such things, in which, for the*
"greatness and importance of them, it shall seem fit to
"you to consult this holy see, to obtain our approbation
"and confirmation." Upon which he is fully em-
 powered to proceed, with a full *non obstante*, bearing
 date the 28th of June. With these breves, Cardinal de
 Monte wrote him a letter, in the Roman way, of a high
 compliment ; which is in the Collection.

Collect.
 Numb. 22.

Collect.
 Numb. 23.

The next letter is from Cardinal Morone ; which is
 likewise in the Collection. By this it appears, that
 Pole had gone to France, upon his legatine commission :
 and, after the usual Roman civilities, " he tells him, he
 " had laid his letter before the Pope, who was begin-
 " ning to despair of the affairs of England : and though
 " the Pope had not the patience to read, or hear his let-
 " ter, which was his ordinary custom, yet he told him
 " the sum of it ; with which he was satisfied : and said,

“ he had given no cause, neither to the Emperor, nor **BOOK**
 “ to any other, to use such extravagant words to him. **V.**
 “ It seems Pole had desired to be recalled; but the **1554.**
 “ Pope said, that could not be done. It would be a
 “ great disgrace both to the Pope and to the apostolical
 “ see, to the Emperor himself, and to Cardinal Pole;
 “ and a great prejudice to England. But he would not
 “ write to the Emperor upon it: nor was he resolved
 “ about the goods of the church; concerning which he
 “ spoke often very variously. He resolved to write both
 “ to the Queen and to the Prince of Spain; which let-
 “ ters, he adds, will be sent by Ormanet, who is dis-
 “ patched with every thing necessary for the business,
 “ conform to his desire.” The rest is all compliment;
 dated the 13th of July. Then follows a breve, merely
 in point of form, extending the former powers, that were
 addressed only to the Queen, to Philip her husband;
 dated the 10th of July.

Upon this, the Emperor being then at Valenciennes, All was laid before the Emperor.
 the Cardinal sent Ormanet thither; who gave an ac-
 count of his audience to Priuli, the Legate's great and
 generous friend, which will be found in the Collection. Collect. Numb. 24.
 The Bishop of Arras told him how much the Emperor
 had the matters of religion at heart; and that he would
 be always ready to promote them. But when Ormanet
 pressed him for a present dispatch, he said they had no
 news from England since the marriage: and that before
 any other step was made, it would be necessary to know
 what ply the affairs of that kingdom were like to take.
 It was fit to consider, whether the powers of securing
 the goods of the church should come from the Legate,
 or from the King and Queen. Then he desired to see
 the copy of the Cardinal's faculties. As to the point of
 time, Ormanet said, it was not fit to lose a moment,
 since so many souls were endangered by the delay;
 and the first coming of the Prince of Spain ought not

PART to be let slip, by which the honour of the work would
III. be chiefly due to him. As for his faculties, all things
 1554. necessary were committed to the Cardinal in the amplest manner; and more particular resolutions could not be taken but upon the place. Somewhat further passed between them, which Ormanet reserves till he saw the Cardinal. The Bishop of Arras promised to lay all before the Emperor, and to do all good offices. The Emperor was at that time so well, that he was often on horseback, to view his army, which had then marched to St. Amand; and the two armies were very near one another. This is dated the last of July.

Yet he was
 still put off
 by delays.

On the 3d of August, the Bishop of Arras wrote to the Cardinal, "that the Emperor received his congratulations on the marriage very kindly; but did not think it was yet proper for him to go to England, till they had a perfect account of the present state of affairs there. To know that, he had that day sent an express thither: upon his return, he should be able to give him a more positive answer. He knew the zeal of the King and Queen was such, that they would lose no time; but yet they must proceed with such moderation, that the way to a true remedy might not be cut off, by too much haste." This is in the Collection. The Cardinal had a letter from Bartholomew de Miranda, a friar, who (I suppose) was King Philip's confessor, and afterwards Archbishop of Toledo, from Winchester, July 28. It is only a letter of respect, desiring his commands. The Cardinal wrote to the Bishop of Arras on the 5th of August: he sent him the copy of his faculties, and expressed a great earnestness in his design of going speedily into England, as soon as the courier sent by the Emperor should return. He showed himself as impatient of the delays, as in good manners he could well do. This is also in the Collection.

Collect.
 Numb. 25.

Collect.
 Numb. 26.

King Philip staid at Winchester some days after the marriage: for, on the 4th of August, he sent the Count of Horn over to the Emperor from thence; and by him he wrote a letter, partly of respect, partly of credit, to the Cardinal. To this the Cardinal wrote an answer, which I have put in the Collection: though, besides such high compliments as are usually given to princes, there is nothing particular in it; only he still insists earnestly for leave to come over. On the 11th of August, the Bishop of Arras wrote to him, "that he had seen the copy of his faculties, and he joins with him in his wishes, to see that kingdom restored to its ancient obedience: he assures him, the Emperor was pressing the dispatch of the matter, and he did not doubt but that it would be speedily accomplished." Pole wrote on the 2d of September to Soto, the Emperor's Confessor, "thanking him for those pressing letters that he had written, both to the Emperor, and to Duke Alonso d'Aquilara; with which the Legate was so delighted, that he writes as one in a rapture upon it; and he animates him to persist in that zeal, for promoting this great work."

He was still put off with new delays; of which, the best account I can give is, that this being the decisive stroke, there was a close canvassing over England for the elections to this parliament. Since nothing can effectually ruin this nation, but a bad choice; therefore, as it is the constant character of a good ministry, who design nothing but the welfare and happiness of the nation, to leave all men to a due freedom in their elections; so it is the constant distinction of a bad ministry, that have wicked designs, to try all the methods of practice and corruption possible, to carry such an election, that the nation being ill represented by a bad choice, it may be easy to impose any thing on a body of vicious, ignorant, and ill-principled men, who may

PART find their own mercenary account in selling and betraying their country. It appeared in the two former
III.
 1554. parliaments, who they were that could not bear the returning to their old servitude to the papacy. It was, no doubt, spread over England, that they saw the Legate was kept in Flanders, and not suffered yet to come over: this seems the true cause, why his coming was so long put off. It might be likewise an artifice of Gardiner's, to make the difficulties appear the greater, and by that to enhance his own merit the more. It is plain, that till the election was over, and till the pulses of the majority were first tried, it was resolved not to suffer the Legate to come over. This seems to be that which he insinuates in his letter to the Confessor, when he says, that *the wisdom of the wise has kept the gate so long shut against him.*

Collect.
 Numb. 28.

On the 13th of October, Pole wrote the Pope an account of what had passed between him and the Bishop of Arras, and the Emperor himself: the Bishop of Arras, as he writes, came to him, and assured him that the Emperor was in the best disposition possible; but it was necessary to come to particulars, to examine all the impediments, and the best methods to put them out of the way. The Legate said he had full powers, and desired to know from England what impediments were suggested. He added, this was not a negociation like that in making a peace, where both sides did conceal their own designs all they could, till they discovered those of the contrary side: here all had but one design, and he was ready to enter into particulars when they pleased. He had an audience of the Emperor, none but the Nuncio and the Bishop of Arras being present. In it, after usual compliments, the impediments proposed were two: the first related to the doctrine, in which there was no abatement to be made, nor indulgence to be showed. The other was concerning the

lands ; for the usurpers of them, knowing the severity of the ecclesiastical laws, were afraid to return to the obedience of the church. To this the Legate answered, that the Pope was resolved to extend his indulgence in this case : first, as to all the mean profits already received, and the censures incurred by that, which was a great point ; the Pope was willing freely to discharge that entirely : nor did he intend to apply any part of these to himself, or to the apostolical see, as many feared he would ; though that might seem reasonable, as a compensation for damages sustained ; but he would convert all to the service of God, and to the benefit of the kingdom : and he had such regard to the piety of those princes, that he had empowered him to grant such favours as they should intercede for, and to such persons as they should think worthy to be gratified, and were capable to assist him in the matter of religion. The Emperor understanding all this, thanked the Pope very heartily for his favour in that matter : he said he had granted enough ; he excused himself, that, being wholly taken up with the present war, he had no sooner applied himself to consider the matter : now he knew it well : he had already written to England, and he expected a speedy answer from thence, by which he would know the state of affairs there. He knew, by his own experience in Germany, that this of the church-lands was the point that was most stood on : as to matters of doctrine, he did not believe that they stood much upon that, they neither believing the one, nor the other ; yet those lands (or goods) being dedicated to God, he thought it was not fit to yield all up to those who possessed them : he added, that though the Legate had told him the whole extent of his powers, yet he would do well not to open that to others. He then desired to see his faculties. The Legate upon that apprehending this would give a handle to a new delay, said he had

BOOK
V.
1554.

PART already showed them to the Bishop of Arras ; and he
III. told the Emperor, what a scandal it would give to the
 1554. whole world, if the reconciliation should not be settled
 by this parliament. The Queen did not think fit to
 press it formerly, till she had received that mighty as-
 sistance which was now come to her by her marriage ;
 yet if this, which ought to have been the beginning and
 the foundation of all the rest, were delayed any lon-
 ger, it must give great offence both to God and man.
 The Emperor said, regard was to be had to the ill dis-
 position of the people concerned, who had formed in
 themselves and others an aversion to the name of obe-
 dience, and to a red cap, and a religious habit. He
 said, some friars, whom his son had brought with him
 out of Spain, were advised to change their habits. They
 had not indeed done it, nor was it convenient that they
 should do it. He also touched on the ill offices that
 would be done them by their enemies abroad, in order
 to the raising of tumults : (meaning the French.) The
 Legate answered, if he must stay till all impediments
 were removed, that would be endless. The audience
 ended with this, that he must have a little patience, till
 the Secretary whom he had sent into England should
 return.

Cardinal
 Pole much
 esteemed
 by the Eng-
 lish ambas-
 sador.

Collect.
 Numb. 29.

Mason was then the Queen's ambassador at the Em-
 peror's court : he in a letter on the 5th of October, writ
 towards the end of it (the rest being a long account of
 the war between the Emperor and the French King)
 concerning the Cardinal, (which will be found in the
 Collection,) that he was sent by the Pope on two de-
 signs ; the one to mediate a peace between those two
 powers ; the other, to mediate a spiritual peace, as he
 called it, in the kingdom of England : but seeing no
 hope of succeeding either in the one or the other, he
 began to despair : and if he did not quickly see some
 appearance of success in the last, he would go back to

Rome a sorrowful man. And here Mason runs out, BOOK V.
 either to make his court to the Queen or to the Legate, 1554.
 or that he was really possessed with a very high opinion of him, which seems the more probable, as well as the more honest motive: he says, "All the world adores him for his wisdom, learning, virtue, and godliness. God seems to dwell in him; his conversation, with his other godly qualities, was above the ordinary sort of men. It would be a strong heart that he would not soften in half an hour's talk."

At this time the Cardinal wrote a long letter to King Philip in Latin: he tells him, he had been now for a year knocking at the gates of the palace, and no body opened to him; though he is the person that was driven from his country into an exile of above twenty years continuance, because he was against shutting the Queen out of that palace, in which he now lived with her: but he comes with a higher authority, in the name of the Vicar of the Great King and Shepherd, Saint Peter's successor, or rather Saint Peter himself; who was so long driven out of England. Upon this he runs out into a long allegory, taken from Saint Peter's being delivered out of prison from Herod's cruel purpose, and coming to the gate of Mary, where though his voice was known, yet he was kept long knocking at the door; Mary not being sure that it was he himself. He dresses this out with much pomp, and in many words, as a man that had practised eloquence much, and had allowed himself in flights of forced rhetoric; liker indeed to the declamation of a student in rhetoric, than the solemn letter of so great a man on such an occasion. It is true that this way of writing had been early practised, and had been so long used, even by popes themselves, that these precedents might seem to warrant him to copy after such originals.

At last the Queen sent the Lord Paget and Lord

D d 4

PART III. Hastings to bring him over: their letter upon their coming to the Emperor's court is dated from Brussels

1554.

The Queen
sent to
bring him
over to
England.
Collect.
Numb. 31.

the 13th of November. In it they give an account of their waiting upon the Emperor with the King and Queen's compliments. The Emperor had that day received the sacrament, yet they were admitted to audience in the afternoon: he expressed great joy when he heard them give an account how matters were in England, and roused himself up in a cheerful manner, and said, that, among many great benefits, he was bound to thank God for this as a main one; that he now saw England brought back to a good state. He had seen what the kingdom had once been, and into what calamities it fell afterwards: and now he thanked God for the miracles showed to the Queen, to make her the minister to bring it again to its ancient dignity, wealth, and renown. He also rejoiced that God had given her so soon such a certain hope of succession: these tidings of the state of her person, with the report of the consent of the noblemen and others touching the Cardinal, and their obedience and union with the catholic church, were so pleasant to him, that if he had been half dead, they would have revived him. He promised them all assistance, as they should come to need it.

From the Emperor they went to the Cardinal, who welcomed them with great joy, and with expressions full of duty and thankfulness to the Queen. Here they enlarge on his praises: "they call him the man of God, full of godliness and virtue; and so eminently humble, that he was contented to come into England in such sort as the Queen had commanded; not as a legate, but as a cardinal, and an ambassador sent to the Queen: and they assured the Queen, that, touching the matter of possessions, all things should pass on the Pope's behalf, so that every man there shall have cause to be contented." Pole took leave of the

Emperor on the 12th ; he was to set out in slow journeys, his body being then too weak for great ones ; in six days he was to be at Calais, where they had ordered every thing to be ready for his transportation. BOOK
V.
1554.

It seems by this, that the Queen reckoned on it, as sure, that she was with child : though in that, after the hopes of it were published with too much precipitation, she found herself so much mistaken, that it was believed the grief and shame of it, both together, had an ill effect on her health and life. The Queen
believed
herself to
be with
child.

About this time there was a very abusive libel, printed in the form of a letter, as writ by Bradford to the Queen ; in which it was said, " that it was believed the Queen intended to give the crown to the King, hoping that then he would keep company with her more, and live more chaste, contrary to his nature : for peradventure after he was crowned he would be content with one whore ; whereas he had then three or four in a night : and these not ladies, but common prostitutes." One John Capstoke, the printer, was discovered ; he was condemned to be imprisoned, and to have his ears nailed to the pillory, and cut off ; yet he was pardoned. The consideration is not mentioned ; it may be easily imagined it was no small one, probably enough it was upon the discovery of some of those whom they were seeking out for the slaughter. Rymer,
t. xv.

I have nothing to add to what I wrote formerly with relation to this parliament, and the reconciliation made in it : no doubt Pole, according to the powers in his breve, desired the Queen would name such persons, to whom the favour of confirming them in their possessions should be granted ; but it seems they durst not venture on any discrimination, lest that should have made the excepted persons desperate. So it is evident, that the confirming of all without exception was, if not beyond his powers, yet at least a matter of such im- Cardinal
Pole carries
his powers
beyond the
limits set
him.

PART
III.

1554.

Collect.
Numb. 89.
Some
preach for
restoring
the abbey-
lands.

portance, that he ought to have consulted the Pope upon it, and to have staid till he had new and special orders to pass it in so full a manner as he did. But still it is plain, by the message sent to Rome, that he made the Council at least to apprehend that it was necessary to send thither for a confirmation of what he had done, without any limits, upon powers that were expressly limited, and reserved to a confirmation.

On the 12th of December, Mason wrote from Brussels : and after he had given in his letter an account of what passed in the diet, upon a letter written to it by the French King ; he also writes, “ that one of the “ Emperor’s Council had told him, that his master was “ displeased to hear that a preacher was beating the “ pulpit jollily (I use his own words) for the restitution “ of the abbey-lands : upon this he writes, that if it be “ so meant by the Prince, and the thing be thought “ convenient, he did his duty ; but if it was not so, it “ was a strange thing, that, in a well-ordered common- “ wealth, a subject should be so hardy as to cry thus to “ the people, to raise storms next summer, against what “ they were then doing in winter : and if the thing were “ to be talked of, it ought to be to the Prince and “ Council, and not to the people. He reflects on the “ unbridled sermons in the former times, that they “ were much disliked : so he hoped, that in a good go- “ vernment that should have been amended. He thought “ the person that preached this might be well put to si- “ lence ; for he being a monk, and having vowed po- “ verty, possessed a deanery and three or four benefices. “ He tells them he had heard, by the report of other “ ambassadors, that England was now returned to the “ unity of the Christian church. He should have been “ glad that he might have been able to confirm this by “ some certain knowledge of it ; but it was ordinary for “ the ambassadors of England to know the least of

“all others of the matters of their own kingdom.” A BOOK
 custom of a long continuance, of which I have heard V.
 great complaints made of a later date. On the 25th of 1554.
 December he wrote, that, according to his orders, he Paper-Office.
 had let the Emperor know the apprehensions the Queen
 had of the progress of her big belly ; and that all was
 quiet, and every thing went on happily in England.
 Upon this the Emperor fell into a free discourse with him
 of the difference between governing with rigour and se-
 verity ; and the governing in such sort, that both Prince
 and people might *s'entre entendre et s'entre aimer*, mu-
 tually understand and mutually love one another. This,
 as it is at all times a noble measure of government ; so
 it was more necessary to offer such an advice, at a time
 in which it was resolved to proceed with an unmerciful
 rigour against those whom they called heretics. The
 Queen seemed to be so sure that she was quick with
 child, that the Privy-Council wrote upon it a letter to
 Bonner, and ordered him to cause *Te Deum* to be sung
 upon it. With such a precipitation was this desired
 piece of news published.

Some small favour was, at King Philip's desire, Jan. 18, 1554.
 showed to some. The Archbishop of York was re-
 leased, upon a bond of 20,000 marks for his good be- The Arch-
 bishop of
 York set at
 liberty.
 haviour. How far he recanted, or complied, does not
 appear : one thing may be reasonably concluded ; that
 since no more mention is made of the complaint put in
 against him, for keeping another man's wife from him,
 there is no reason to think there was any truth in it :
 for there being so particular a zeal then on foot, to dis-
 grace the marriage of the clergy, so flagrant an instance
 as this, in a man put in so eminent a post, would not
 have been passed over, if there had been any colour of
 truth, or proof for it. On the 27th of January, Hop-
 kins, Sheriff of the city of Coventry, was put in the
 Fleet for ill religion. On the 19th of February, some

PART small regard was had to Miles Coverdale, as being a
III. foreigner ; for he was a Dane : he had a passport to go
 1555. to Denmark, with two servants, without any unlawful
 let or search.

On the 29th of January, Cardinal Pole gave deputed powers to the bishops, to reconcile all persons to the church, pursuant to the first breve he had from the Pope ; by which the reconciliation was made very easy ; every one being left at his liberty to choose his own confessor, who was to enjoin him his penance : upon which the clergy, both regulars and seculars, were to be entirely restored, confirmed in their benefices, and made capable of all further favours : but those who were accused, or condemned for heresy, were only to be restored to the peace of the church, for the quiet of their consciences. All canonical irregularities were also taken off ; all public abjurations, or renunciations, were, at discretion, to be either moderated, or entirely forgiven ; with a power to the bishop to depute such rectors and curates as he shall think fit to absolve and reconcile all lay-persons to the church. That sent to the Bishop of Norwich is still upon record, and was collated with the register, and sent me by Dr. Tanner.

Collect.
Numb. 33.

Collect.
Numb. 34.

With this, I have likewise put in the Collection the method in which it was executed. First, the Articles of the Visitation are in it, in English ; then follow rules in Latin, given by the Cardinal to all bishops and their officials. The most material of these is, “ that
 “ all who were empowered to reconcile persons to the
 “ church, were required to enter into a register the
 “ names of all such as they should receive ; that it
 “ might appear upon record, who were, and who were
 “ not, reconciled ; and to proceed against all such as
 “ were not reconciled : in particular, they were to in-
 “ sert Thomas Becket’s name, and also the Pope’s, in
 “ all their offices.”

Now came on the burning of heretics. Many had **BOOK** been kept above a year and a half in prison, when yet **V.** there was no law against them: and now a law was **1555.** made against them, which it could not be pretended that they had transgressed. But articles were objected to them, to which they were by the ecclesiastical law obliged to make answer: and upon their answers they were condemned. Sampson, in a letter to Calvin, wrote on the 23d of February, "that Gardiner had ordered **Letters sent from Zurich.** " fourscore of the prisoners to be brought before him, "and had tried to prevail on them, both by promises **The reformers, when tried by Gardiner, were firm.** " and threatenings, to return, as he called it, to the "union of the church: but not one of them yielded, "except Barlow, that had been Bishop of Bath and "Wells; and Cardmaker, an archdeacon there." So this proved ineffectual. How far these yielded, does not appear.

It was resolved to begin with Hooper; against whom, both Gardiner and Bonner had so peculiar an ill will, that he was singled out of all the bishops to be the first sacrifice. A copy of his process and sentence was sent me by Dr. Tanner, which I have put in the **Collect. Numb. 35.** collection. On the 28th of January, he was brought before Gardiner in his court in Southwark, and is called only John Hooper, Clark. Gardiner set forth, "that "the day before he had been brought before him, and "others of the privy-council, and exhorted to confess "his errors and heresies, and to return to the unity of "the church; a pardon being offered him for all that "was past; but that his heart was so hardened, that "he would not accept of it: so he was then brought to "answer to certain articles; but he had again the "offer made him, to be received into the bosom of the "church, if he desired it. He rejected that; and, as "the acts of the court have it, he did impudently break "out into some blasphemies." The articles that were

PART III. objected to him were three: "1. That he being a priest, and of a religious order, had married a wife, and lived with her; and did, both by preaching and writing, justify and defend that his marriage. To which he answered, acknowledging it was true; and that he was still ready to defend it. 2. That persons married might, for the cause of fornication or adultery, according to the word of God, be so divorced, that they might lawfully marry again. To this he likewise answered, confessing it, and saying, that he was ready to defend it, against all who would oppose it. 3. That he had publicly taught and maintained, that in the sacrament of the altar the true and natural body and blood of Christ are not present under the accidents of bread and wine; so that there is no material bread and wine in it." To which his answer is set down in English words; "That the very natural body and blood of Christ is not really and substantially in the sacrament of the altar: saying also, that the mass was of the devil, and was an idol." Gardiner, upon this, ordered him to come again into court the next day; and then he did again try, by many persuasions, to prevail on him: but he continued still obstinate, and said further, "that marriage was none of the seven sacraments; and if it was a sacrament, he could prove there were sevenscore sacraments." After all this, Gardiner gave sentence, and delivered him over to the secular arm. Upon which, the Sheriffs of London took him into their hands, as their prisoner: but it was resolved to send him to Gloucester, there to receive his crown of martyrdom. And there was a particular order sent along with him to Gloucester; in which he is designed, "John Hooper, that was called Bishop of Worcester and Gloucester, who was judged to be a most obstinate, false, detestable heretic, and did still persist obstinate, and refused mercy, though it was of-

Hooper, the first bishop that suffered, barbarously used.

Paper-Office.

"fered to him : he was sent to be burnt at Glocester, BOOK
 "to the example and terror of those whom he had se- V.
 "duced. Order is also given, to call some of reputa- 1555.
 "tion in that shire, to assist the Mayor and the Sheriffs
 "of that city. And because this Hooper is, as all here-
 "tics are, a vainglorious person ; and if he have liberty
 "to speak, he may persuade such as he has seduced, to
 "persist in the miserable opinions that he hath taught
 "them ; therefore strict order is given, that neither at
 "his execution, nor in going to the place of it, he be
 "suffered to speak at large ; but that he be led quietly,
 "and in silence, for avoiding further infection." This
 will be found in the Collection. But though his words Collect.
 could not be suffered to be heard, yet the voice of his Numb. 36.
 sufferings, which were extremely violent, had probably
 the best effect on those who saw both them, and his
 constancy in them. He had been above a year and a
 half in prison, under much hard usage. He sent his
 wife out of England, to deliver himself from that which
 might raise too great tenderness in him, especially if he
 had seen her ill used, which the wives of the clergy
 were in danger of daily. He wrote several letters to
 Bullinger from the prison ; but was so watched, that he
 durst not enter into any particulars. Most of his let-
 ters were recommendations of some, who were then fly-
 ing out of England : he in them all expressed much
 constancy and patience ; and he was preparing himself
 for that, in which he reckoned his imprisonment would
 soon end. He had no other prospect, but of sealing the
 truth with his blood. He was very glad, when he knew
 his wife had got safe to Frankfort ; where she lived, and
 wrote several letters to Bullinger in a very clean and
 natural style of Latin : they do chiefly relate to her
 husband's condition.

Among several letters that Hooper wrote, during his
 imprisonment, to Bullinger, I find one that is so full,

PART and shows so clearly the temper of that holy man in his
III. imprisonment, that I have put it in the Collection. He
 1555. had written several letters to him, that it seems fell into
 Collect. ill hands, and so came not to Zurick, as they were di-
 Numb. 37. rected ; as he found by Bullinger's last letter, that some
 of his were also intercepted. " That last which he had,
 " was directed to him, to be communicated to all his
 " fellow-prisoners : he promised, that he would take
 " care to send it round among them. The wound that
 " the papacy had received in England was then entirely
 " healed : the Pope was now declared the *head of that*
 " *Church*. The prisoners, who had been shut up for a
 " year and a half, were daily troubled by the enemies
 " of the Gospel : they were kept asunder from one an-
 " other, and treated with all manner of indignities ;
 " and they were daily threatened with the last extre-
 " mities, which did not terrify them.

" They were so inwardly fortified, that they despised
 " both fire and sword. They knew in whom they be-
 " lieved ; and were sure they were to suffer for well-
 " doing. He desires the continuance of their prayers ;
 " let God do with them what seemed good in his eyes.
 " He sent over to him two books that he had written,
 " the one of true religion, and the other of false reli-
 " gion, which he had dedicated to the parliament, as
 " an apology for the Reformation. He gives them li-
 " berty to correct them as they thought fit ; and de-
 " sired, that they might be quickly printed ; for they
 " were well approved by the pious and learned about
 " him. He desires they may not be frightened from
 " doing it, by the apprehensions of any harm that
 " might happen to himself upon that account : he com-
 " mitted himself to God, who was his defence and his
 " guard, through Jesus Christ ; to whom he had en-
 " tirely dedicated himself. If God would prolong his
 " life, he prayed it might be to the glory of his name ;

“but if he would put an end to this short and wicked
 “life, which of these soever it pleased God to order, his
 “will be done.” This is dated from his prison, the
 11th of December, 1554. It appears that Hooper’s wife
 was a German ; so his sending her in time out of Eng-
 land was a just expression of his care of her.

On the 18th of March, some sacrifices being to be
 made in Essex, “letters were written by the Council
 “to the Earl of Oxford, and the Lord Rich, to be pre-
 “sent at the burning of those obstinate heretics, that
 “were sent to divers parts of that county.” And on
 the 1st of April, informations being brought that there
 were preachers at work in several parts of the kingdom,
 a general order was sent to all sheriffs to seize on
 them. When that madman William Thomas, called
 otherwise Flower, or Branch, was seized on, for wound-
 ing a priest in the church, they found a cloth about his
 neck, with these words, *Deum time, idolum fuge* ; Fear
 God, and fly from idolatry. He was seized on by Sir
 Nicholas Hare and Sir Thomas Cornwall : they had
 letters of thanks from the Council for their pains. They
 were ordered first to examine him, then to send him
 to the Bishop of London, to proceed against him for
 heresy ; and to the justices of peace, to punish him for
 the shedding of blood in the church : and if he persists
 in his heresy, order is given, that he be executed in the
 latter end of the week ; but that his right hand should
 be cut off the day before.

On the 16th of May, some persons were named, and
 their appointments ordered, who should be in readiness
 to carry the news of the Queen’s delivery to foreign
 princes. The Lord Admiral was appointed to go to the
 Emperor ; and was allowed 4l. a day, and 200l. for
 equipage. The Lord Fitzwater was to go to the French
 court, and was to have 200 marks for equipage. Sir
 Henry Sydney was to go to the King of the Romans,

BOOK
 V.
 1555.

Persons ap-
 pointed to
 carry the
 news of the
 Queen’s
 being de-
 livered.

PART and to have 500 marks : and Shelley was to carry the
 III. news to the King of Portugal, and to have 400 marks.

1555. This was repeated on the 28th of May. The money was ordered to be ready, for the immediate dispatch of those envoys. And on the 29th of May, order was given, that the persons named should be ready to go when warned. On the 1st of June, a letter was ordered to the Bishop of London, to proceed against some, who were suspected to be of evil religion. And on the 3d of June, letters were written to the Lord Rich to assist at the execution of some heretics at Colchester, Harwich, and Meaintru : a letter was also written to the Earl of Oxford, to send his servants to attend on the Lord Rich at those executions. It is not easy to guess whether the many letters written upon those occasions were to prevent tumults, because they apprehended the people might rescue those victims out of the Sheriff's hands, if he had not been well guarded ; or whether it was to celebrate those triumphs over heresy with much solemnity ; which is commonly done in those countries where the Inquisition is received. At the same time entries are made in the Council-books of the examinations of several persons for spreading false rumours.

Orders for
 torture at
 discretion.

On the 9th of June, letters were written to the Lord North, and others, to put such obstinate persons as would not confess to the *torture*, and there to order them *at their discretion* : and a letter was written to the Lieutenant of the Tower to the same effect. Whether this pretended obstinacy was a concealing of heretics, or of the reporters of false news, does not appear : but whatever the matter was, the putting people not yet convict, by that which the civil law called a half proof, (*semiplena probatio*;) to the *torture*, because they were thought obstinate, and would not confess, and the leaving the degree of the torture to the *discretion* of those appointed for their examination, was a great step to-

wards the most rigorous part of the proceedings of in-quisitors. On the 12th of June, orders were given for making out writs for the burning of three persons condemned for heresy in Sussex. On the 13th of June, letters of thanks were ordered to Sir Henry Tirrel, and Mr. Anthony Brown, for their assisting at the execution of heretics. And on the 15th of June, letters of thanks were ordered to the Earl of Oxford, and the Lord Rich, on the same account. On the 17th of June, letters of thanks were written to those in Cambridge, who had committed some priests to prison: but they are ordered to release them, if thoroughly penitent. And on the 18th of June, a letter was written to the Bishop of London, informing him that four parishes in Essex did still use the English service: he is required to examine into this, and to punish it, and to send some of his chaplains to preach to them.

On that day a letter was written from London to Peter Martyr, telling him that it was given out that the Queen had said, she could not be happily delivered till all the heretics then in prison were burned; for she continued still expecting to be delivered: and on the 24th of June, an order was given to have a passport ready for Shelley, that was to carry the news to Portugal. On the 27th of June, letters were written to the Lord Rich, to give the Queen's thanks to some gentlemen of Rochford in Essex, *for coming so honestly of themselves to Colchester, and other places, to assist the Sheriff at executions.* At this time a condition was put in all passports and licences to go beyond sea, that they shall avoid all heretics, and all places infected with heresy.

I shall here add a passage recorded by Fox, of a declaration that was made to himself, before witnesses, in the year 1568. A woman told him that she lived near Aldersgate, and was delivered of a boy on the 11th of

BOOK
V.
1555.

The Queen
still looked
to be deli-
vered of a
child.
P. Mar.
Loc. Com.
1626. fol.
769.

Fox, p.
1450.
A practice
that gives
suspicion
of ill de-
signs.

PART June 1555 ; and after she had borne it, the Lord North
III. and another lord came to her, and desired to have her
1555. child from her, with very fair offers, as that her child
 should be well provided for ; so that she should take no
 care for it, if she would swear that she never knew, or
 had such a child : and after this some women came to
 her, of whom one, they said, was to be the rocker. But
 she would in no case part with her child. This being
 at the time that the Queen seemed to be every day
 looking for her delivery, may give some suspicions, and
 puts us in mind of the words of the preacher, *That*
which is, is that which has been. On the 30th of June,
 letters were written to the gentlemen in Kent, to assist
 the Sheriff at the execution of heretics in Rochester,
 Dartford, and Tunbridge.

Plots pre-
tended.

On the 2d of July, upon an information of a com-
 motion designed in Sussex, the opinion of the judges
 was asked about it ; and some judges were sent to pro-
 ceed in it according to law. Great occasion was taken
 from foolish discourses to alarm the nation with the ap-
 prehension of plots, and the blame of all was to be cast
 on the concealed preachers, that were now hid in
 corners, instructing the people at the peril of their
 lives : twelve persons were brought up out of Sussex, as
 guilty of a conspiracy ; but I find no more of that
 matter. Bird, that had been Bishop of Chester, and
 was deprived for his marriage, did now think fit to re-
 pent ; and engaged so far, that Bonner made him his
 suffragan. He was blind of an eye ; and being appointed
 to preach before the Bishop, he chose those words for
 his text, *Thou art Peter* : but whether his conscience
 smote him, or his memory failed, he could go no fur-
 ther : so, instead of matter of triumph upon the apostasy
 of such a man, the shame of such a dumb action turned
 the triumph to the other side.

On the 9th of July, a letter was written to the Bishop

of London, directing him, that the three condemned BOOK
 heretics should be burnt at Uxbridge, Stratford, and V.
 Walden : and he was ordered to proceed against the 1555.
 rest. At this time Pole thought it became him to write Cardinal
 to Cranmer, to try how far a piece of high-flown rhetoric Pole's letter
 could work on him ; though some think this letter was to Cran-
 mer.
 written a very little while before Cranmer's execution :
 the original is yet extant. It does very little honour to
 his memory, being only a declamation against heresy
 and schism, against a married clergy, and separation
 from the see of Rome, and the rejecting of *transubstan-*
tiation. In it all he proves nothing, and argues nothing,
 but supposes all his own principles to be true and sure :
 he inveighs against the poor prisoner with some seem-
 ing tenderness, but with a great acrimony of style, and
 in an insulting manner, like one that knew he might
 say what he pleased, and that there was no room for
 making remarks and answers to so poor an epistle ;
 which Mr. Le Grand has thought fit to translate into
 French, but I do not think it worth the while to put it
 in the Collection.

On the 14th of July, the Archbishop of York was
 ordered to appear ; but no more is said concerning him.
 There were intimations given of commotions designed at
 fairs, and orders were sent to sheriffs and gentlemen to
 watch them : informations were also brought of a con-
 spiracy in Essex and Suffolk, and of another in Dorset-
 shire. On the 6th of August, thanks were written to
 the Earl of Oxford and the Lord Rich, with the other
 justices of peace in Essex, for their diligence ; desiring
 them to proceed in their examination of the late in-
 tended conspiracy, and to bring the offenders before
 them : if their offence was found to be treason, they
 were to suffer as traitors ; or if their guilt did not rise
 up to that, they were to order them to be punished ac-
 cording to the statutes.

PART

III.

1555. Ambassadors sent to the Pope, came back with a bull, erecting Ireland into a kingdom.

On the 28th of August, notice was given to the sheriffs and justices of peace, that the King was going to Flanders. The ambassadors sent to Rome did return about the middle of September: and in council, on the 16th of September, the Bishop of Ely produced the Pope's bull, erecting Ireland into a kingdom; and bestowing on the crown of England the title of *King of Ireland*. This was given to the Bishop of Dublin, with an order to publish it in Ireland: for that insolent Pope would not give them audience upon their powers from the King and Queen of England and Ireland, pretending that none had a right to assume the title *King*, but as it was derived from him. So, as a special grace, he conferred that regal title on the Queen, and then admitted them to audience, after he had made them stay a month waiting for it at Rome. It seems they knew the bigotry of the English court too well to dispute this point: so they yielded it up very tamely, fearing that they should be disowned, if they had made any opposition to it. But the main errand they came upon was, to obtain a confirmation of the settlement of the churchlands made in parliament by Cardinal Pole: that was not only flatly refused, but a bull was published, that in effect repealed it all.

See the Coll. of the former books, Numb. 1.

The Pope's bull for restoring all churchlands.

" It begins setting forth what Pope Symmachus decreed against the alienating of any lands belonging to the church upon any pretence whatsoever, or farming out the rights of the church: he laid an anathema on all who should be any way concerned in such bargains; and gave an authority to any ecclesiastical person to recover all, with the mean profits; and this was to take place in all churches. Pope Paul the Second had likewise condemned all alienations of church goods, and all farms of leases beyond the term of three years, and had annulled all such agreements, farms, or leases. Both the parties, as well the granter as

" the receiver of such leases, were put under excom- BOOK
 " munication; and the goods so alienated were to re- V.
 " vert to the church. But these prohibitions notwith- 1555.
 " standing, of late years several persons, both of the
 " laity and of the clergy, had possessed themselves of
 " castles and lands, belonging both to the church of
 " Rome, and to other cathedrals, and even to metropo-
 " litan churches; and to monasteries, regular houses,
 " and hospitals, under the pretence of alienations, to
 " the evident damage of those churches and mona-
 " steries, without observing the solemnities required by
 " law in such cases: and they continue their posses-
 " sion, by which the incumbents in those churches are
 " great sufferers; and the popes themselves, who were
 " wont to supply the poor who came to Rome out of
 " these lands, are no more able to do that, and can
 " scarce maintain themselves and their families; which
 " turns to the offence of God, the reproach of the
 " clergy, and is matter of scandal to the faithful: there-
 " fore the Pope of his own motion, upon certain know-
 " ledge, and by virtue of the plenitude of the apostolic
 " power, does annul all the alienations or impropria-
 " tions, either perpetual, or leases to the third, or to a
 " single life, or beyond the term of three years; or ex-
 " changes and farms of cities, or lands, or goods, or
 " rights belonging to the Roman church; or to any
 " cathedral, monastery, regular house, or to any eccle-
 " siastical benefice, with or without cure; to seculars,
 " or regulars; hospitals, and other pious foundations,
 " by whomsoever made, though by popes, or by their
 " authority; or by the prelates of cathedrals, mona-
 " steries, or hospitals; or the rectors of churches,
 " though cardinals, that had been made without the
 " solemnities required by law, in what form of words
 " soever they have been made, though confirmed by
 " oath, and established by a long prescription: all

PART "these are by the apostolic authority rescinded, an-
III. "nulled, and made void, and the possessors of such
 1555. "lands are to be compelled by all censures, and pe-
 "cuniary pains, to make satisfaction for all the mean
 "profits received, or to be received ; and all judges are
 "required to give judgment conform to this bull."
 Dated the 12th of July.

Reflections
 made on
 it.

Thus the Pope, instead of confirming what the Legate had done, did in the most formal terms possible reverse and annul it all. Even papal alienations, or made by the papal authority, are made void. The pretended consent of the convocation is declared null ; and all ratifications of what was at first illegally made are annulled. By this also, not only the possessors of church-lands, but all the tenants to any estate belonging to the church, who hold for lives, or years, beyond the term of three years, may see in this bull how that all that they now hold by those tenures is made void. No doubt the ambassadors of England did all that in them lay to have this bull softened, or to have an exception made for England : but that Pope was not to be moved, and perhaps he thought he showed no small favour to England, on the Queen's account, in not naming it in this bull ; and in not fulminating on the account of the late settlement. Thus the matter of securing the abbey-lands by that fraudulent transaction is now pretty apparent.

Pope Paul was in the right in one thing, to press the setting up courts of inquisition every where, as the only sure method to extirpate heresy. And it is highly probable that the King, or his Spanish ministers, made the court of England apprehend, that torture and inquisition were the only sure courses to root out heresy. It has appeared already what orders were given about torture, even to use it at *discretion* : but another step was made, that carried this matter much further.

Instructions had been given, in March 1555, to the justices of peace to have one or more honest men in every parish secretly instructed to give information of the behaviour of the inhabitants amongst, or about them. One of these was directed to the Earl of Sussex, who acted with a superlative measure of zeal : he wrote, on the 18th of April this year, to the Bishop of Norwich, complaining, that at a town near him there had been no sepulchre, nor creeping to the cross before Easter. The day after he wrote that letter, it appears, by another of his letters, that Ket, who led the insurrection in Norfolk in King Edward's reign, and whose body was hanged in chains, had fallen down from the gallows ; and that prophecies were spread about the country, of what should follow when that should happen. He ordered the body to be hanged up again, if it was not wasted ; and he imprisoned those that gave out these prophecies. He went on to greater matters, and drew up an account of the obedience that the justices had paid to all the instructions and orders that had been sent them. I had a volume of his letters in my hands some years ago ; but I wrote out of it only the answers he returned to the sixth article, in these words : " It is agreed, that the justices of the peace, in every of their limits, shall call secretly before them one or two honest and secret persons, or more, by their discretions, and such as they shall think good, and command them, by oath or otherwise, as the same justice shall think good, that they shall secretly learn and search out such person and persons as shall evil-behave themselves in the church, or idly, or despise openly by words the King's and Queen's proceedings ; or go about to make or move any stir, commotion, or unlawful gathering together of the people ; or that tell any lewd or seditious tales, rumours, or news, to move or stir any person or persons to rise,

BOOK
V.
1555.

PART “ stir, or make any commotion or insurrection, or to
III. “ consent to any such intent or purpose. And also,
 1555. “ that the same persons so to be appointed shall declare
 “ to the same justices of peace the ill behaviour of
 “ lewd, disordered persons; whether it shall be for
 “ using unlawful games, idleness, and such other light
 “ behaviour of such suspected persons, as shall be in the
 “ same town, or near thereabouts: and that the same
 “ informations shall be given secretly to the justices;
 “ and the same justices shall call such accused persons
 “ before them, and examine them, without declaring by
 “ whom they be accused: and that the same justices
 “ shall, upon their examination, punish the offenders,
 “ according as their offences shall appear to them, upon
 “ the accusation and examination, by their discretion,
 “ either by open punishment, or by good abearing.”

Here was a great step made towards an inquisition; this being the settled method of that court, to have sworn spies and informers every where, upon whose secret advertisements persons are taken up. And the first step in their examination is, to know of them, for what reason they are brought before them: upon which, they are tortured, till they tell as much as the inquisitors desire to know, either against themselves, or others. But they are not suffered to know, neither what is informed against them, nor who are the informers. Arbitrary torture, and now secret informers, seem to be two great steps, made to prepare the nation for an inquisition.

In September, the Dutchess of Suffolk, who had married Mr. Bertie, went out of the kingdom without a licence: upon which, a commission was sent into Lincolnshire to take an account of her estate. On the 19th of September, there was a paper cast into a house near Fulham, with some intimations of ill designs in Essex. The master of the house brought it to the Council;

upon which they sent orders to that country, to see what foundation there was for such suspicions. Tracy (probably the son of him, concerning whose will there was much ado made in King Henry's time) had been brought before the Bishop of Gloucester; and he, as was informed, behaved himself stubbornly towards him: upon which he was brought before the Council, and was required to declare his conformity in matters of religion. He promised to do it; and upon that he was sent back to his country. On the 23d of September, there was some hopes given of the King's coming back; upon which, Sir Richard Southwell was sent to attend on him. On the 9th of October, the Governor of Jersey having examined one Gardiner for speaking some indecent words of the King, desired orders how to proceed against him: upon which he was ordered to proceed according to the statutes, if these took place in that island: but if not, according to the custom of the place.

On the 12th of September, Brooks, Bishop of Gloucester, who was constituted Subdelegate to Cardinal Puteo, the Pope's Delegate, to try Cranmer, (it being, it seems, thought indecent, that Pole, who was to succeed him, should be his judge,) came to Oxford, with Martin and Story, who were the King and Queen's commissioners, to demand justice against Cranmer; exhibiting articles against him. Cranmer made a long apology for himself. Among other things, he said, "the loss of his promotion grieved him not: he thanked God as heartily for that poor and afflicted state in which he was then, as ever he did for the times of his prosperity. But that which stuck closest to him, and created him the greatest sorrow, was, to think that all that pains and trouble, that had been taken by King Henry and himself for so many years, to retrieve the ancient authority of the Kings of England, and to

BOOK
V.
1555.
Cranmer
proceeded
against.

PART III. "vindicate the nation from a foreign yoke, and from
 1555. "the baseness and infinite inconveniences of crouching
 "to the Bishops of Rome, should now thus easily be
 "quite undone: and that the King and Queen should,
 "in their own realm, become his accusers, before a
 "foreign power. If he had transgressed the law, they
 "had sufficient authority to punish him; and to that
 "he would at all times submit himself." They exhib-
 ited interrogatories to him; and he gave his answer to
 them. In conclusion, they required him to go to
 Rome, within fourscore days, to make his answer in
 person. He said he was most willing to go, if the King
 and Queen would send him.

On the 16th of October, Ridley and Latimer suffered
 martyrdom: but Gardiner, who was with impatience
 waiting for the news, was, soon after he heard it, struck
 with an illness, in which he languished for some time.
 Pilkington, Bishop of Duresm, in a sermon that he
 preached, said, *he rotted above ground, so that it was
 scarce possible to get any to come near him.* He died
 on the 12th of November. On the 5th of November,
 orders were given for to dispose of many prisoners.

Cranmer was now to be offered up. Some have
 thought, that upon his attainder the see of Canterbury
 was vacant; and indeed, the Chapter of Canterbury
 acted accordingly: but the papal authority being re-
 stored, he was still, according to the papal law, Arch-
 bishop, till by a commission from Rome he was judged
 an obstinate heretic, and was thereupon deprived. When
 the eighty days were out, a mock process was made at
 Rome; in which it was falsely said, that he did not
 care to appear; upon which he was declared contuma-
 cious: and then a formal sentence was given in the
 Pope's name, *as sitting on the throne of justice, having
 before his eyes God alone, who is the righteous Lord,
 and judgeth the world in righteousness.* With such

specious words was that grossly unrighteous judgment introduced. And upon that, a letter came from Rome, on the 14th of December, mentioning his being condemned and deprived, and delivering him over to the secular arm. The deprivation must have passed some days before: for, on the 11th of December, Pole's bulls were granted; in which mention is made of the see's being vacant by the deprivation of Cranmer. The writ for burning him mentions his being judged an obstinate heretic by the Pope, and deprived by him; and that he had been degraded by the Bishops of London and Ely, by commission from the Pope: so on the 24th of February the writ was sealed. I have nothing to add to the sad narration I gave, both of his fall, and of his repentance, and his firm constancy to the last, in that amazing instance of holding his hand in the fire till it was almost burnt away; of which Thuanus gives a very particular account, so that the truth of the fact cannot be disputed.

On the 13th of March, the Privy-Council were concerned, when they heard his paper of recantation was printed. Rydall and Copeland, two printers, were required to deliver to Cawood, the Queen's printer, the books of his recantation, to be burned by him. One part of his character may be added out of Pole's letter to him. In one place he says, he hears "it was pretended that he forced no man in points of religion, but behaved himself mildly towards all persons." And in another place he writes, "that it was said his life was unblameable." But though Pole throws that off, as of no importance, yet, upon his mentioning these good characters, it may be depended on that they were true. Ridley, in that noble letter that he wrote to Grindall, when they were every day looking for their crown, says of him, "that he then showed how well he deserved the great character of the Chief Pastor and

BOOK
V.
1555.

PART “Archbishop of this church:” to which he adds of Latimer, “that he was the ancient and true Apostle of

III.

1556.

“Christ to the English nation.” In a word, if it had not been for Cranmer’s too feeble compliance in King Henry’s time, and this last inexcusable slip, he might well be proposed as one of the greatest patterns in history. And if the excesses to which some opinions had formerly carried men, did in some particulars incline him to the opposite extremes, this must be reckoned a very pardonable instance of managing the counterpoise without due caution. He was a pattern of humility, meekness, and charity. He had a true and generous contempt of wealth; and of those shows of greatness, that belong to a high station. His labours, in searching into all ecclesiastical authors, both ancient and modern, are amazing to those, who have seen the vast collections that he writ out, on all matters of divinity, with his own hand. But now, after a long course of vexation and contradiction, and, in conclusion, after a long and severe imprisonment, he was put to a cruel death, by persons whom he had served faithfully and effectually: for he had both served the Queen, and reconciled her to her father; and he had showed a most particular favour to Thirleby, and others who concurred to finish this tragedy. I have put all this matter together; and now I must look back to public affairs.

Proceed-
ings in
convoca-
tion.

There was a convocation sate with the parliament in October; and to the middle of November 1555. Christopherson was chosen Prolocutor: and after Bonner had confirmed him, he desired that the Lower House would name eight or ten persons, to hear some secret propositions that were to be made to them by the King and Queen, and by the Cardinal, concerning the public good of the kingdom, and of the church. They upon that did choose the Prolocutor, and ten more: and to these the Bishop of Ely proposed to offer the Queen a

subsidy, in return for the great favour she had showed the clergy, in forgiving the first-fruits and tenths, and in restoring to the church all the impropriations of benefices, that were then, by the suppression of the monasteries, vested in the crown: for all which the Bishop of Ely proposed a subsidy of eight shillings in the pound, to be paid in four years. The last session of the convocation was on the 15th of November; and a memorandum was inserted in these words: "After this convocation was begun, there was a national synod; the clergy of York being joined with them." For which, the Cardinal thought it safe and fit to take out a licence under the Great Seal. The first session was on the 4th of November: and in this the Cardinal set himself so zealously to remove many abuses, that Mason wrote, that many of the clergy wished he were in Rome again.

The Earl of Devonshire went out of England this summer. As he passed through Flanders, he waited on the Emperor; and, as Mason wrote, he owned that he owed his liberty to him. The Queen sent, and offered her mediation between the Emperor and the French King: the Emperor accepted it; but with very sharp reflections on the French King.

There was in April a treaty of peace between the Emperor and the King of France set on foot: in which the Queen was mediator, and sent over both Pole and Gardiner to Calais in order to it. The Constable and the Cardinal of Lorraine were ordered to come from the court; but the Pope's death made it be thought more necessary to send that Cardinal to Rome: what further progress was made in this does not appear to me, for I take it from a letter of Mason's to Vannes, then the Queen's ambassador at Venice. It will be found in the Collection, the original being in Dr. Tanner's hands, who sent me this copy. By this letter it appears, that

BOOK
V.
1556.

Collect.
Numb. 28.

PART Bolls of Cambridgeshire, and S. Peter Mewtas, were
III. there in prison upon suspicion; but nothing appeared
 1556. against them. That letter tells us, that the Princes of
 Germany were alarmed upon the Cardinal Morone's
 coming to Ausburg, apprehending probably that he
 came to disturb the settlement then made in the matters
 of religion in the empire: but the Emperor had sent
 such powers to his brother Ferdinand, that his coming
 was like to have no effect. He also tells in that letter,
 that the Dean and Prebendaries of Westminster were
 using all endeavours to hinder the converting that foun-
 dation into an abbey: and that Dr. Cole was active in
 it, affirming that monks had not their institution from
 Christ, as priests had: but he saw the court was resolved
 to have no regard to the opposition they made. He adds,
 that the Duke of Alva was still in England, though he
 had sent his baggage and servants to Calais.

Motions in
 the diet of
 the em-
 pire.

Mason writes news from the diet, that matters of re-
 ligion had not been quite settled, but all were to conti-
 nue in the state in which they were then till the next
 meeting; and it was provided, that all parties should
 live according to the religion then accepted of them.
 The Emperor seemed resolved not to consent to this.
 He writes, that the allowance of the marriage of the
 clergy, and in particular of bishops, had been earnestly
 demanded, but was utterly refused. On the 28th of
 October he writes, that two monks of the Charter-
 House had desired the King's letter that they might re-
 turn to their house, and at least receive their pension:
 the King answered, that, as touching their house, since
 the parliament was then sitting, it was not a proper
 time to move it; but when he should come to England,
 he would help them the best he could: and as to their
 pensions, he ordered Mason to write concerning that to
 Secretary Petre. On the 7th of January, 155½, a let-
 ter was written to the Mayor and Aldermen of Coven-

try, to choose some catholic grave man for their Mayor **BOOK**
 for that year : a list of three persons was sent to them, V.
 and they were required to give their voices for one of 1556.
 them. These were John Fitz-Herbert, Richard Wheeler,
 and one Coleman.

On the 14th of January, a letter of a very singular ^{Compassion expressed to those who suffered, punished.}
 nature was written to the Lord Mayor and the Sheriffs
 of London, "requiring them to give such substantial
 "order, that when any obstinate man, condemned by
 "the order of the laws, shall be delivered to be punished
 "for heresy, that there be a great number of officers,
 "and other men, appointed to be at the execution ; who
 "may be charged to see such as shall misuse them-
 "selves, either by comforting, aiding, or praising the
 "offenders ; or otherwise use themselves to the ill ex-
 "ample of others, to be apprehended and committed to
 "ward : and besides, to give commandment that no
 "householder suffer any of his apprentices, or other ser-
 "vants, to be abroad, other than such as their master
 "will answer for. And that this order be always ob-
 "served in like cases hereafter." Philpot's martyrdom
 had been about a month before this ; and he being a
 man highly esteemed, who went through all his suffer-
 ings with heroic courage and Christian constancy, it is
 probable there was more than ordinary concern ex-
 pressed by the people at his sufferings ; which drew
 this inhuman letter from the Council ; for they had no
 sacrifices at that time ready to be offered.

While these things passed in England, the scene ^{Charles the Fifth, the resignation of Spain.}
 abroad was considerably altered, by the resignation of
 Charles the Fifth, who delivered over his hereditary do-
 minions to his son Philip. He began that with the do-
 minions derived from the house of Burgundy ; after
 that, he resigned up to him the crown of Spain, and all
 that belonged to it : upon that, letters were written to
 the several states and cities of Spain, on the 17th of

PART January. These were all in one form: so that which
III. was addressed to the city of Toledo was sent over to
1556. the Queen, translated out of Spanish into English,
 which, for the curiosity of the thing, I have put into
 the Collection.

Collect.
 Numb. 89.

In it, " he tells them, that which he always denied to
 " the Germans, that for religion's sake he had enter-
 " prised the war of Germany, upon the desire he had
 " to reduce those countries to the unity of the church;
 " that so he might procure an universal peace to all
 " Christendom, and to assemble and assist at a general
 " council, for the reformation of many things, that so
 " with the less difficulty he might bring home those
 " who had separated themselves, and departed from the
 " faith. This he had brought to a very good point,
 " when the French King allured the Germans to a
 " league with him, against their oaths and fidelity to
 " the Emperor, and so they made war on him both by
 " sea and land; and then the French King procured
 " the coming of the Turk's army into Hungary, to the
 " great damage of Christendom; upon which he was
 " forced to bring down an army, to the great prejudice
 " of his own person, by his being obliged to keep the
 " field so long, that it had brought on him painful in-
 " firmities: he was upon that become so destitute of
 " health, that he was not able in his own person to en-
 " dure the travel, and to use that diligence that was re-
 " quisite; which proved a great hinderance to many
 " things, of which he had a deep sense: he wished he
 " had taken the resolution he was now taking sooner;
 " yet he could not well do it, by reason of his son's ab-
 " sence; for it was necessary to communicate many
 " things to him. So he took order for his marriage,
 " and to bring him over to him; and soon after that he
 " resigned to him all his states, kingdoms, and the
 " seigneuries of the crown of Castile and Leon, with all

“ their appurtenances, which are more amply contained **BOOK**
 “ in instruments which he had signed of the same date **V.**
 “ with this letter : trusting that he, with his great wis- **1556.**
 “ dom and experience, of which he had great proof in
 “ all that he had hitherto handled in his father’s name,
 “ would now order and defend the same with peace and
 “ justice. He therefore, having had large experience of
 “ their loyalty, fidelity, and obedience, did not doubt
 “ but that they would continue to serve and obey him
 “ in the same manner and sort as if God had taken
 “ him into his mercy. Dated at Brussels the 17th of
 “ January 1556.”

Soon after that, he retired to the place he had de- Reasons
to think he
died a Pro-
testant.
 signed to spend the rest of his days in ; and, according
 to the account given by my worthy friend Dr. Geddes,
 there is great reason to believe, that he applied himself
 to serious reflections on religion. No Prince knew bet-
 ter than he did, both the corruptions and the practices
 of the court of Rome, and the artifices and methods
 by which two sessions of the council of Trent had been
 conducted. He must likewise have understood the
 grounds upon which both the Lutherans, and the re-
 formed in Germany, built their persuasions. He had
 heard them often set out ; but the hurry of business,
 the prepossession of education, and the views of inte-
 rest, had prejudiced him so far against them, that he
 continued in a most violent enmity to them : but now
 that he was at full leisure to bring all his observations
 together, and that passion and interest had no more
 power over him, there are great presumptions to believe,
 that he died persuaded of the doctrines of the reformed
 religion. Augustin Casal, a canon of the church of
 Salamanca, was his preacher, and was esteemed the
 most eloquent preacher that Spain ever produced : he
 was taken up in the year 1558, and with thirteen more
 was publicly burnt at Valladolid, in the year 1559 ; the

PART unfortunate Prince Charles, and his aunt, Donna Juana,
III. then Governess, looking on that barbarous execution.

1556. Constantine Pontius, a canon of Sevil, who was his confessor, esteemed a man of great piety and learning, was likewise taken up by the Inquisition for being a Protestant: he died in prison, probably enough by the torture the inquisitors put him to; but his bones, with his effigies, were burnt at Sevil: so were the bones of the learned Egidius, whom the Emperor had named to the bishoprick of Tortosa, one of the richest in Spain: and at the same time eighteen were burnt alive for being Protestants; of which the History of the Inquisition gives this account, that had not the holy tribunal put a stop to those reformers, the Protestant religion had run through Spain like wild-fire: people of all degrees, and of both sexes, being wonderfully disposed at that time to have embraced it. And the writer of the Pontifical History, who was present at some of those executions, says, that had those learned men been let alone but three months longer, all Spain would have been put into a flame by them.

The most eminent of them all was Bartholomew de Caranza, a Dominican, who had been Confessor to King Philip and to Queen Mary, and had been by her recommended to the archbishoprick of Toledo. He had assisted Charles in the last minutes of his life. He was within a few months after his death, upon suspicion of his being a Protestant, first confined by the Inquisition to his own palace at Tordelaguna: and after he had been for seven years kept within that confinement, he was carried to Rome, and kept ten years a prisoner in the castle of St. Angelo; and was at last condemned as one suspected of heresy. That great man had been sent by Charles as one of his divines to the council of Trent, where he preached, and wrote a treatise of the personal residence of bishops. These things put to-

gether, make it highly probable, that Charles himself **BOOK**
 was possessed with that doctrine that was so much **V.**
 spread among those who were then most about him. **1556.**

Mezeray tells us, " that, at Philip's arrival in Spain, he
 " caused a great many to be burnt for heretics in his
 " own presence, both at Sevil and at Vallidolid, both
 " seculars and ecclesiastics, men and women, and in
 " particular the effigies of his father's Confessor : and if
 " reports may be believed, he intended to have made
 " his father's process, and to have had his bones burnt
 " for heresy ; being only hindered from doing it by
 " this consideration, that if his father was an heretic,
 " he had forfeited all his dominions, and by conse-
 " quence he had no right to resign them to his son." This digression will be forgiven me, I hope, both because it belongs to the main design upon which I write, and since our Queen was Queen of Spain, when this persecution was first begun.

There are in my hands two papers concerning the method in which the Queen ordered her Council to proceed : there is no date put to them ; but they were written, either soon after the King went beyond sea, or perhaps about this time ; for now King Philip having the Spanish monarchy put in his hands, and being engaged in a war with France, the Queen had reason to expect that her dominions might feel the war very sensibly, as afterwards they did : and so it might seem necessary to put the administration of her affairs into a good method. One of these papers is writ in Cardinal Pole's own hand, and is a memorial prepared for the Queen, of the things that she was to recommend to her Council, for she had ordered them to attend on her. It is in the Collection. " First, she was to put them in
 " mind of the charge that the King gave them at his
 " departure, which was to be rehearsed to them ; and
 " that is, perhaps, the following paper : they were still

The method in which the Queen put her affairs.

Collect. Numb. 40.

PART "to attend at court, the matters they were to treat
 III. "about being of great weight; and they were to lay

1556. "such matters as were proposed in Council before the
 "King, that they might have his pleasure before they
 "were to be executed. They were in particular to
 "know the resolution of the Council, touching those
 "things that were to be proposed in this parliament,
 "and these were to be sent to the King that very
 "day: and since the King delayed his coming over,
 "they were to consider whether it were not better to
 "delay the parliament till Candlemas, if there should
 "be no prejudice to her affairs, that money was so long
 "wanted; for there was great need of it at present, for
 "the setting out of ships, both for the Emperor's pas-
 "sage to Spain, and for the King's return, for the pay-
 "ments due at Calais, for the debt owing to the mer-
 "chants, the day of payment approaching, and for the
 "debt of Ireland: and she was to ask of her Council
 "an account concerning all these things: she was like-
 "wise to charge them to call in her own debts, as the
 "best way to clear what she owed to others: and she
 "was to offer them all authority for doing it effectually;
 "and to require them, that at the end of every week
 "she might know what came in that week, and what
 "order was taken for the rest. And that all those who
 "have any commission to execute any matter, shall at
 "the end of every week inform the Council what pro-
 "gress they have made that week: and that the Coun-
 "cil should never begin to treat of any matter in the
 "second week, till they were informed of what was
 "done in the former week." Thus she was to be taught
 what she was to say to them: upon which they, who
 did not know how weak a woman she was, might ima-
 gine, that she understood her own affairs well, and
 thought much of them: whereas the poor bigoted wo-
 man was only as a machine, made to speak and to act

as she was prompted by those who had the manage-
ment of her : for of herself she seemed capable to think
of nothing, but how to destroy the heretics, and to ex-
tirpate heresy.

The other paper is in Latin, and seems to be that
which the King had left behind him. It is also in the
Collection. " He named in it a select committee, to
" whom the special care of matters of state, of the reve-
" nue, and the weighty affairs of the kingdom, were to
" be referred. These (in a modern term) were the Ca-
" binet-Council ; and the persons were, the Cardinal,
" (in all great matters, when he could conveniently
" come,) then the Lord Chancellor, the Lord Treasurer,
" the Earl of Arundel, the Earl of Pembroke, the Bi-
" shop of Ely, the Lord Paget, Rochester the Comp-
" troller, and Petre the Secretary. Every one of these
" was constantly to attend, to determine in all matters
" of state and revenue, and to make honourable pay-
" ment of all debts, and to do every thing in which the
" honour and dignity of the crown was concerned.
" They were also earnestly prayed to lay all differences,
" or quarrels among themselves, aside ; that so they
" might amicably, and in the fear of God, deliver such
" things in Council, as might tend to the glory of God,
" and the honour and good of the crown and kingdom.
" And when there is occasion for it, they were either to
" come to the Queen, or to send some of their body to
" inform her of every thing that came before them :
" and at least thrice a week they were to give her an
" account of all their consultations and actings. In
" particular, they were to consider when the parliament
" was to meet, and what things were to be proposed
" and done in it, and to digest all that in writing. On
" Sundays they were to communicate such things to
" the whole Council as should be thought convenient
" to be laid before them. They were to take special

BOOK
V.
1556.

Collect.
Numb. 41.

PART “ care for the payment of debts, for the retrenching of
III. “ expence, and for the good management of the Queen’s
 1556. “ estate, revenues, and customs, and for the administra-
 “ tion of justice.” Such were the orders laid down :
 how they were executed, does not appear.

Proceed-
 ings against
 heretics.

The Queen herself never came to Council, and the Cardinal very seldom. Sometimes they were very few that attended at that board : often not above three or four. And now I return to give an account of what I find in the Council-book. On the 19th of January, a letter of thanks was ordered to the Lord Willoughby, and others, in Lincolnshire. At first, upon the condemnation of heretics, notice was given to the Council, before the execution, to see if a pardon should be offered them : but they found so few, if any, inclined to accept of it, that they did not think fit to expose the Queen’s pardon to any further contempt : so those persons are required to proceed thereafter, against all such as should be condemned before them, according to the laws, and not to stay for any order. On the 20th of January, letters were written to the sheriffs of Warwickshire, Bedfordshire, and Cambridgeshire, ordering them, that though the prisoners should be acquitted by order of law, yet to detain them in safe custody, till they should hear from the Earl of Sussex. On the 14th of February, the Council was alarmed with this, that a stage-play was to be acted in Shrovetide ; and that many were to run to it : so the Lord Rich was ordered to hinder the acting of it, and to examine and report what he could learn concerning it. On the 16th of February, there was an order sent to Sir Henry Bedingfield, Lieutenant of the Tower, to put two to the *torture*, and to *pain them at his discretion*. On the 19th of February, a letter of thanks was ordered to the Lord Rich for stopping the stage-play. He had put the actors in prison, but he gave a good character of them : so he

was ordered to set them at liberty ; but to have an eye BOOK
on all such meetings. Several inquiries were made at V.
this time after seditious books : many examinations and 1557.
commitments were made on that account.

On the 20th of April, one Harris, a carpenter and gunner at Deptford, was brought before the Council, for having said on Maundy-Thursdays, " The Queen " hath this day given a great alms ; and has given that " away, that should have paid us our wages. She hath " undone the realm too ; for she loveth another realm " better than this." He confessed the words, but asked pardon, and was dismissed. It seems, about that time, they expected the King's coming over : for, on the 1st of June, the Lord Admiral was ordered to attend on him. On the 21st of June, an order was sent to the Lieutenant of the Tower, and to a Master of Requests, to put one to the *torture*, if he thought it convenient. Information was given to the Queen by Wotton, her ambassador in France, that several heretics had fled over to France, and were well received there : in particular, that Henry Dudley (perhaps a son of the Duke of Northumberland's) and Christopher Ashton were plotting there against the Queen. Upon that, a letter was written to Wotton, to demand that they might be seized on, and sent at her charge to the frontier, to be delivered to her officers. When the draught of this was brought to her to be signed by her, she with her own hand interlined these words ; *considering that when the King my husband and he were enemies, I neither did, nor would have done the like.*

Wotton wrote over, that the heretics took great advantage from the new war that the Pope engaged the French King to make on the King, after a truce for five years had been agreed to, and sworn by both Kings. But the Pope sent a legate to France, to persuade that King to begin the war. And though the consciences

Paper-Office.

The Pope sets on a new war after a truce was sworn to, and dispensed with the French King's oath.

PART of princes are not apt to be very scrupulous in the ob-
 III. serving or breaking their treaties ; yet a treaty, made
 1557. and confirmed by an oath so very lately, it seems, made
 such an impression on that King, that so great an au-
 thority was to be interposed, to give a colour for the
 breaking it. Those called heretics took great advan-
 tages from this to infuse a horror in people at the pa-
 pacy, since one who pretended to be the Vicar of the
 Prince of peace became thus an open and a perfidious
 incendiary.

This of the Pope's dispensing with a Prince's oath
 gave so great a distaste every where, that I do not re-
 member an instance in which it was openly put in
 practice since that time. But the Protestant Princes of
 Germany do believe, as one of the greatest of them told
 me, that the confessors of the Princes of that commu-
 nion have secret faculties to dispense with their breach
 of faith ; which is so much the more dangerous, the
 more secretly it may be managed. On that ground it
 was, that the Prince, who told me this, said, that in all
 their dealings with Princes of that communion, they
 took their word, but would never put any thing to their
 oaths : for they knew that the popish princes reckoned
 they were bound by their word, as they were men, and
 members of human society ; but for their oaths, they
 reckoned, these being acts of religion, their Confessors
 had it in their breast to tell them how far they were
 bound to keep them ; and when they were absolved
 from any obligation by them. But we have seen in our
 days, to the no small reproach of the Reformation, that
 princes professing it have in an avowed manner shaken
 off their leagues and alliances, with this short declara-
 tion, *That they reckoned themselves freed from them :*
 as if they had been things of so little force, that they
 might be departed from at pleasure.

Pole was now in his synod, labouring to bring the

clergy to their duty. On the 13th of December, *The BOOK Institution of a Christian Man* was divided in parcels, ^{V.} to be examined by them : and some were appointed to ^{1557.} prepare a book of Homilies. On the 16th of December, ^{Pole's national synod.} a translation of the New Testament was ordered, and parcelled out : the *Seven Sacraments* were also treated of. On the 20th of December, the Cardinal sent an order to the Prolocutor, to intimate to all the clergy, more particularly to all deans, that they should confirm no leases, that had been made of their benefices : this seems to be done in obedience to the Pope's bull, formerly mentioned, that condemned all leases for a longer term than three years. There was offered to them a schedule of some terms that were to be carefully considered in the translation of the New Testament. On the 8th of January, that was again considered : propositions were also made for having schools in all cathedral churches. Thus Pole found it necessary to give some instruction in the matters of religion to the nation : for an earnest desire of knowledge in these points being once raised and encouraged, it was neither safe nor easy quite to extinguish that, which is so natural to man ; and therefore, instead of discouraging all knowledge, and bringing men to the state of implicit faith, without any sort of inquiry, he chose to give them such a measure of knowledge, as might be governed and kept within its own bounds. There was in this synod a question moved ; what should be done with such of the clergy, as should refuse to say or come to mass ? but I do not see what was determined upon it. Nor do I see what reason was given them for another petition to the Queen, Lords, and Commons, for maintaining their liberties and immunities, nor what effect it had.

Pole prorogued the synod to the 10th of November, and from thence to the 10th of May. The reason

PART given is, because the bishops were in their visitations,
III. which could not be soon ended; since a large space of

1557.
*Pro certiore
 bonorum Ec-
 clesiastico-
 rum quanti-
 tatis et qua-
 litatis ra-
 tione ha-
 benda, ma-
 jus temporis
 spatium re-
 quiri vide-
 batur.*

time seemed necessary for their taking an exact ac-
 count of the quantity and quality of all ecclesiastical
 goods. I suppose this was the procuring terriers of
 the lands, and inventories of the goods belonging to the
 churches: for many orders were given out for restoring
 such plate and furniture, as could be found, that had
 belonged to any church.

A great
 scarcity of
 all things.

From the 10th of May, Pole prorogued the synod to
 the 10th of November: the reason given is, for the
 great want and penury of victuals. For I find the
 dearth at this time was very great. Wheat was at
 four marks the quarter; malt, at two pound four shil-
 lings; pease, at two pound five shillings: but the next
 harvest proving plentiful, it fell as low as it had been
 high. Wheat was at five shillings, malt at a noble, and
 rye at three shillings and four pence a quarter.

On the 28th of July, the Council hearing that some
 naughty books were sent over, and concealed in the
 Dutchess of Suffolk's house, ordered the Bishop of Lin-
 coln to search for them, and to send them up. On the
 19th of July, the Council was alarmed with reports of
 conspiracies in Suffolk and Essex: so they sent orders
 to inquire about them; and about a zealous man, that
 went about carrying letters and books over the country,
 from whence he was called Trudge-over; so he was or-
 dered to be sought for. On the 15th of August, a letter
 was written to the Mayor, Jurats, and Commons at Rye,
 to choose one of the Queen's servants to be Mayor for
 the ensuing year.

Prosecution
 of heretics.

On the 21st of August, a letter of thanks was ordered
 for the Earl of Sussex, for his diligence in apprehending
 those who spread about lewd and seditious reports;
 with whom he is desired to proceed according to the
 laws: and as for those lewd priests that had been mar-

ried, and were found still to repair to their women ; they tell him, they had written to the Bishop of Norwich, to cause them to be apprehended and punished. BOOK
V.
1557.

And a letter was at the same time ordered for the Bishop of Norwich, to that purpose. On the 23d of August, a letter of thanks was ordered to the Lord Darcy, for his apprehending some ill-disposed persons, who used conventicles, and readings, about Harwich. He was to get them to be fined according to their quality, and as he thought fit ; and to bind them to appear before the Bishop of London : and a letter was ordered to the Bishop, either to reduce them to the church, or to order them according to the laws.

On the 4th of September, the Earl of Sussex had moved, that offenders should be proceeded against by martial law : his zeal is commended ; and it was written back to him, “ that these deserved to be so used ; “ but that is not thought best : they are to be punished “ as the laws order. But when they have had their “ punishment, he shall cause them to be kept in prison, “ and in irons, till they know themselves and their “ duty.” On the 15th of September, a letter of thanks was written to the Earl of Sussex, and the justices of Norfolk, for their diligence in punishing one Thomas Long.

At this time they were called on to consider of the danger Calais might be in : so a state of the fortifications, and of what was necessary to maintain the place, was laid before the Council : but the giving orders in that matter was delayed till the King should come over, of which they were in daily expectation : for on the 17th of September they understood that the Emperor, with his two sisters, had embarked on the Tuesday before ; and that the King was to come to Calais, and from thence to England. Privy-seals were at this time sent about every where, for a loan of money ; but

PART it came in very slowly. Some took the privy-seal, but
III. did not pay in the money. There was about 1000 privy-
 1557. seals given out, at 100l. a-piece. On the 6th of Oc-
 tober, a letter was sent to Calais, to search for some
 who had fled from England thither: it is directed to
 the Earl of Sussex; which makes it probable they were
 heretics: for in that matter his heart was entirely as
 the Queen's heart was. On the 7th of October, the
 Lady Throgmorton was before the Council, asking leave
 to send some supply to her husband Sir Nicholas, who
 was then in France: the Cardinal had told her, in the
 presence of the Lord Chancellor, and others, that for
 this one time the Queen allowed of it, so it did not ex-
 ceed forty crowns. It seems the way of exchange was
 much beset, when so small a supply, from so near a re-
 lation, could not be conveyed without such an appli-
 cation. On the 17th of November, a letter was ordered
 for the Bishop of London, to receive a companion of
 him who was called Trudge-over, to be ordered by him
 according to law; and they complain to him, that a
 man and a woman of Colchester, that had been sent to
 him, charged with heresy, were returned back dis-
 charged by him, but were now worse than they were
 before. In another book, that seems to be the minutes
 of the Council, it is entered, that twenty-four per-
 sons were discharged by him, who were still rank he-
 retics.

I find at this time the Council was much employed
 in the matter of the privy-seals. Our fleet was then so
 inconsiderable, that 14,000l. being ordered to be applied
 to the fleet, by the Lord Treasurer, and the Lord Ad-
 miral, both for repairing, furnishing, and victualling it,
 they reckoned, that, when that was done, 10,000l. a
 year afterwards would answer what was necessary. On
 the 19th of February, one Christopher Howe was or-
 dered to be proceeded against for some detestable words,

not fit to be heard : so it was ordered, that only such BOOK
 parts of them should be opened, as might serve for evi- V.
 dence to the jury. On the 21st, complaints were 1557.
 brought of a jailor who suffered heretics to go freely
 about. On the 24th, the Queen expected hourly to
 hear of the King's arrival ; so the Lord Admiral and
 others were ordered to attend on him. An ambassador
 came at this time from Russia : he landed in the north
 of Scotland, and was well received, and nobly treated
 by the Lord Wharton ; for which, thanks were written
 to him. Here several orders are entered concerning
 the Lord Sturton and his servants : three of them were
 ordered to be hanged in chains at Mere.

I had in my former work given a due commendation An account
 of Lord
 Sturton's
 execution.
 to that which seemed to me a just firmness in the
 Queen, not to pardon the Lord Sturton for so heinous
 a crime as the murdering father and son in so barbarous
 a manner. But since I have lived long in Wiltshire, I
 find there is a different account of this matter in that
 neighbourhood. The story, as it has been handed down
 by very old people, is this : The day before the execu-
 tion was appointed, there was a report set about, that a
 pardon or a reprieve was coming down ; upon which
 the Sheriff came to the Earl of Pembroke, who was then
 at Wilton, for advice. That lord heard the report, and
 was much troubled at it : so, apprehending some mes-
 sage might come to him from the court, he ordered his
 gates to be shut somewhat early, and not to be opened
 till next morning. My Lord Sturton's son came down
 with the order : but since the gates were not to be
 opened, he rode over to his father, who received the
 news with great joy. In the night the Sheriff left Wil-
 ton, and came so secretly to Salisbury, that Sturton
 knew nothing of it, and believed he was still at Wilton,
 where he knew he was the night before. But when he

PART was so far gone, that the Sheriff knew he could not
III. come back in time to hinder the execution, he brought
 1557. his men together whom he had ordered to attend on
 him that day; and so the lord was executed before
 his son could come back with the order to stop it. I
 set down this story upon a popular report, of which I
 have had the pedigree vouched to me, by those whose
 authors, upon the authority of their grandfathers, did
 give an entire credit to it. So meritorious a man as the
 Lord Sturton was, who had protested against every
 thing done in King Edward's parliament, had no doubt
 many intercessors to plead for him in this his extremity.
 I leave this with my reader as I found it.

On the 20th of March, the King came to England.
 Orders being sent into Kent, that the gentlemen should
 attend upon him in their best apparel; thanks were after-
 wards written to them for their readiness in furnishing
 him with post horses. On the 17th of April, proceed-
 ings are ordered to be made upon a book that is called
 lewd and seditious: and the Countess of Sussex coming
 over at this time, and bringing letters which gave some
 suspicion, she was sent to the Fleet. She had been for
 some years separated from her husband: she was or-
 dered to be examined strictly; but upon this and many
 other occasions, particulars are not set forth, and only
 a general mention is made of the minutes put in the
 chest.

There is, besides the great Council-book, another
 Council-book, which, I suppose, might be the minute
 book, which was perused by my learned friend Doctor
 Kennet, and who communicated to me all the extracts
 that he had made out of it, and some other manuscripts,
 which I never saw. It seems, it was apprehended that
 the French designed a descent in Dorsetshire: so or-
 ders were sent to make musters in that county, and to

have them in readiness, in case of an invasion, or a rebellion: and 300 men were sent over to Calais, with orders concerning the fortifications. BOOK
V.
1557.

On the 14th of June, complaint was made of some naughty plays and lewd books. The Council was often alarmed with these plays: but it does not appear whether there was any thing in the plays with relation to religion, or the government; or whether it was, that they apprehended some mischief from the concourse of the people that those representations brought together. One Sir Thomas Cawwarden was committed to the Fleet for his misbehaviour to the State: he was ordered to be kept a close prisoner, with only one servant, since he had made no manner of submission, and had not acknowledged his offence: but what this offence was, does not appear to me. On the 29th of June, orders were given for sending 2,000 men to Calais, with directions to distribute them to the places about, that wanted a reinforcement the most. 860 of them were ordered for Guisnes; and a letter was written to the Mayor and Jurats of Calais, to continue their Mayor for another year. On the 3d of July, the Cardinal made an offer of 100 men to serve the Queen: he was ordered to levy them immediately, and to send them to Dover. 200 foot, and 600 horse more, were ordered in all haste for Calais: and assurance was given, that more should quickly follow. There were then great apprehensions of disorders on the borders of Scotland, which were wholly in the hands of the French.

Bonner at this time gave the city of London a most dismal spectacle, a little removed from the city, happens for fear of a tumult at Stratford, where thirteen persons, eleven men and two women, were burnt in one fire. He had condemned sixteen to be thus sacrificed: but Cardinal Pole heard there was some hope of working on three of them; so there came an order to

A severe
prosecu-
tion.

Cardinal
Pole saved
two per-
sons.

PART put them in his hands : and he, by the 26th of July,
III. prevailed so far on two of them, that a pardon was
 1551. granted to those two who had been condemned by the
 Rymer MSS. Bishop of London, but were prevailed on by the Cardi-
Exemplo licet rarissimo. nal to abjure, (a very extraordinary thing, as is men-
 tioned in the pardon,) and had received them into the
 communion of the church ; “ and he had upon that in-
 “ terceded with the King and Queen for their pardon,
 “ which they, as true sons of the church, did willingly
 “ imitate, and embraced this occasion of showing their
 “ zeal.” I cannot tell what became of the third person,
 whom he had taken out of Bonner’s hands.

But here I must lessen the character of the Cardinal’s
 mildness towards heretics : for on the 28th of March
 this year, he sent orders to proceed against the heretics
 in his diocese ; and on the 7th of July, he sent a *signi-*
ficavit of some heretics to be delivered to the secular
 arm.

I find likewise, by other evidences, suggested to me
 by the laborious Mr. Strype, that Pole was not so mild
 as I had represented him. Parker in his *British Anti-*
quities, which Strype believes assuredly he can prove
 that it was written by him ; he calls him *Ecclesie An-*
glicanæ Carnifex et Flagellum ; the whip and the ex-
 ecutioner of the Church of England : and Calfhil, a
 canon of Christ-Church in Oxford, in a letter he wrote
 to Grindall Bishop of London, mentions the proceed-
 ings of the visitors sent to Oxford by Pole ; who were,
 Brooks, Bishop of Gloucester ; Cole, Dean of St. Paul’s ;
 and Ormanet : he sent them thither, not only to restore
 the Pope’s authority, but diligently to inquire if there
 were any who neglected the Pope’s ceremonies ; and if
 there were any found, that were under the least suspi-
 cion, (*levissima suspicio*,) they were without any delay
 to eject them : he writes, there was nothing eminent in
 Ormanet, but intolerable insolence ; nothing could be

imagined more arrogant than he was. They raged, as **BOOK** he adds, against a great many in the University; and ^{V.} burned in the open market-place an infinite number of ^{1557.} Bibles, and other books. The like severity was practised at Cambridge; of which Mr. Strype promises an account in the life of Whitgift, now ready for the press.

The nation began to grow every where weary of the cruel executions of so many heretics: the great promoter of these barbarous proceedings was the Earl of Sussex. He died in March this year: for his son Thomas, who succeeded to him in his honour, was then deputy of Ireland; and on the 1st of April, order was given for a new patent to him, by the title of the Earl of Sussex.

At one time complaints were brought of the Sheriffs ^{The nation} of Kent, Essex, Suffolk, and Staffordshire, and of the ^{abhorred} Mayor of Rochester, and the Bailiff of Colchester, that ^{this cruelty.} when some persons, being condemned for heresy, were delivered to them by their ordinaries, they, instead of proceeding to a present execution, had delayed it: so letters were ordered to them, requiring them to signify what it was that had moved them to stop the usual proceedings. Information was also given of some lewd and seditious words, spoken by some of the Queen's household; upon which they were sent to prison: and orders were given to prosecute them. On the 3d of August, thanks were ordered to be given to Serjeant Brown for his proceedings with Trudge-over; and orders were given for the disposing of his head and quarters. On the 7th of August, Sir John Butler, Sheriff of Essex, was fined 10l. because his deputy had respited the execution of a woman, condemned for heresy, that should have been executed at Colchester; and he was to answer for his deputy's fault. This perhaps is the same with that which was mentioned on the 28th of

PART July. Many were ordered to be proceeded against for
III. writing and spreading lewd and seditious books. It
 1557. seems the Lord Rich continued to give the Council notice, before they proceeded to any executions in Essex, and so laid the odium of the severity on the Council, for showing no pity: so, on the 6th of August, they wrote to him to proceed according to law, and not to give them any more trouble on those occasions. Complaint was made, on the 10th of August, of a bad choice that the town of Calais had made of a Mayor for the ensuing year; especially in so critical a time. They were told, that, by such an election, they might have their charter to be brought in question. On the 12th of August, orders were sent to Canterbury to proceed without delay against those who acted there a lewd play that was sent up.

A great coldness in those matters at Bristol.

On the 15th of August, news came of the great defeat given the French at St. Quintin's: so an order was sent to the Bishop of London to publish that at St. Paul's Cross. On the 24th of August, letters were ordered to be written to the Mayor and Aldermen of Bristol, requiring them to conform themselves, in frequenting sermons, processions, and other ceremonies, at the cathedral: and not to absent themselves, as they had done of late, nor to expect that the Dean and Chapter should come with their cross, and in procession, to fetch them out of the city; which was a thing unseemly, and out of order. On the 2d of September, news came of the taking of St. Quintin's; upon which, an order was sent to the Lord Mayor of London to have bonfires at night, and to come the next day to high mass. On the 6th of September, an order was sent to the Lord Mayor of London to apprehend those who had acted a play, called *A Sack full of News*; but there was an order sent soon after to set them at liberty. On the 6th of October, news came that peace

was made between the Pope and the King; upon which the Council ordered high mass to be at St. Paul's; and the Lord Mayor was required to be there, and to have bonfires over the city. The Council was for some time wholly taken up with the matter of the loan, and the privy-seals; and though the government had certain notice of the design of the French upon Calais, yet no parliament was called, by which money, and every thing else that was necessary to the preserving it, could have been furnished. But the spirit of the nation was now much turned; and compassion began to rise towards these poor people, that were thus sacrificed to the cruelty of the priests, and the bigotry of a weak peevish woman, so that they would not venture on calling one, but tried other ineffectual methods of raising money; which increased the jealousy of the nation more than it added to the Queen's treasure.

Bonner was again quickened, by another letter, to proceed against heretics: upon which, he sent down Dr. Chedsey to Colchester; who, in a letter that he wrote to Bonner, on the 21st of April 1558, tells him, that, while he was sitting at Colchester, examining heretics, he received a summons to appear before the Council: but he desires that Bonner would make his excuse, since he was on the great work of finding out heretics, Anabaptists, and other unruly persons, such as the like was never heard.

Bonner called on by the Council to be more severe.

There is also in the minute-book an entry of the letter of the 1st of August 1558, written on Benbridge's account; who, when he was ready to be burnt, offered to recant: upon which the Sheriff of Hampshire staid the execution: for that he was chid; but a letter was written to the Bishop of Winchester, to examine whether his conversion was entire and sincere.

And now I have no more light from the Council-book: for that authentic volume goes only to the end

PART of the year 1557; the last passage I find in it relating

III.

1557.

to religion being on the 15th of December: then they wrote a letter to the Bishop of London, and sent with it the examination of John Rough, a Scottish minister, whom they had sent to Newgate, and required him to proceed against him according to the laws. It may be, perhaps, thought, that I have taken out of it nothing but what related to proceedings against heretics: but that is, because there is scarce any thing else in it; for I have taken out of it every thing that related to the government, or that was in any sort historical. But the Council knew what it was that the Queen's heart was set on, and what would please her most; and so they applied their care and diligence chiefly to that.

There was a strange spirit of cruelty, that run through the body of the clergy: it was animated by the government, and showed itself in so many dismal instances, in all the parts of the nation, that it struck people with horror. This, joined with the intolerable haughtiness of the King, and the shameful loss of Calais, brought the government under a universal hatred and contempt. In a book, corrected, if not written by the Lord Burleigh, in Queen Elizabeth's time, entitled, *The Executions for Treason*, the sum of those who suffered in this wretched reign is thus reckoned: "Four hundred persons suffered publicly in Queen Mary's days, besides those who were secretly murdered in prison: of these, twenty were bishops and dignified clergymen; sixty were women; children, more than forty: some women big with child; one bore a child in the fire, and the child was burnt."

It does not appear that the bishops or clergy showed any great inclination to entertain Pole's project for the reformation of abuses; or that they were at much pains, in the way of instruction, to reduce the people. All that I find in this way is, that Bonner set out an

instruction for his diocese, in the year 1555. The BOOK people had heard so much of the Second Command-^{V.}ment, that he did not think fit to leave it quite out, as 1557. is done in most catechisms of the church of Rome: but yet he durst not venture on giving it honestly; therefore, instead of the words, *nor worship them*; he gave it thus, *nor adore them with God's honour*. Watson, Bishop of Lincoln, did, in June 1558, put another out for his diocese. It seems he was in a high degree of favour with the Cardinal; since, notwithstanding the zeal he expressed against plurality of benefices in one person, he was allowed to hold the deanery of Duresme *in commendam*, when he was promoted to Lincoln. The licence is in January 1557; in which it is said, that the Cardinal consented to it. ^{Paper-Office.}

The first public occasion, that the ill-natured Pope found to express his displeasure at Pole, was, upon the death of Day, Bishop of Chichester. The Pope would not suffer Christopherson, the new bishop, to be preconized in Pole's name, but did it himself, as Karn wrote over on the 10th of April. Karn after that, on the 15th of June, wrote to the Queen, that the Pope had ordered Cardinal Morone to be imprisoned on the account of religion. Four cardinals were sent to examine him. Karn adds, that he was in high reputation at Rome for his sanctity: and he believed him a good catholic, and a holy man.

Rymer.

The style in which all the bishops' bulls during this reign did run, was, that the Pope, by his apostolical authority, did provide the person to the see, and set him over it. Upon which the bishop so named did renounce every clause in his bull, that was in any sort prejudicial to the crown: and the renunciation being so made, the custody of the temporalities was given to the bishop elect. In the bulls, no mention is made either of the Queen's recommending, nor of the Chap-

The papal provisions in this reign.

PART ter's electing. Rymer has gathered the bulls for Exeter, Bangor, St. Asaph, Carlisle, Chester, Peterborough, and Lincoln, besides those for Canterbury and York; and they all run in the style of papal provisions. Nor does he mention a *congé d'élire*, except for Chester, Winchester, Carlisle, Lincoln, Chichester, and Peterborough. There is something particular in the restitution of the temporalities of Carlisle to Oglethorpe: it is added, that he was to pay 400 marks. I do not comprehend what could be the reason of this singularity.

Proceedings in convocation.

There was another convocation in January 1557. Harpsfield was chosen Prolocutor. On the 28th of January, Bonner, as the Cardinal's commissary, proposed some heads of reformation; and the Lower House desired leave to offer their propositions. On the 4th of February, a subsidy was agreed to of eight shillings in the pound, to be paid in four years; and on the 9th, he told the bishops, that the Lower-House had agreed to it. Complaint was made of a want of priests to serve the cures: in order to remedy this, and to provide a supply for the smaller benefices, it was proposed, that no priest should be taken up to serve in the wars. 2. That the bishops might have authority to unite small benefices, which the priest should serve by turns. 3. That the parishioners of chapels of ease might be obliged to come to the parish-church, till curates could be provided. 4. That bishops might be authorized by the Pope to ordain *extra tempora*. There was also some consideration had about the furnishing of arms; and a decree passed for the provision of them, after the same rate that the laity had agreed to. But then the convocation was prorogued, first to the 11th of November, and then to the 17th; on which day the Queen died.

A general treaty of peace was opened.

But now to open the state of the nation: Calais, and the places about, were lost; and the nation was so exhausted, that the supporting the government was no

easy thing. The persons most in favour with the two **BOOK**
 Kings of France and Spain were two clergymen, the **V.**
 Cardinal of Lorraine, and the Bishop of Arras, soon after **1558.**
 promoted to be a cardinal. They saw, that the con-
 tinuance of the war made it reasonable on both sides
 not to put a stop to the progress of heresy ; though it
 had not that effect in England : they therefore, at an in-
 terview, projected a peace ; that so both Kings might
 be at full leisure to extirpate heresy out of their domi-
 nions.

In order to this, France was willing to make great
 restitutions : only, from the first opening of the treaty,
 they declared very positively, that they resolved never
 to part with Calais. A treaty was opened ; and the
 Earl of Arundel, the Bishop of Ely, and Dean Wotton,
 were sent to treat in the Queen's name. I shall here
 only give the abstract of two papers, which I found re-
 lating to this matter.

The first is the Council's letter to the ambassadors, Paper-
Office.
 written on the 8th of November ; which is in the Col-
 lection. The ambassadors saw no hope of the restoring Small hope
of having
Calais re-
stored.
 of Calais ; so they had moved the Council to lay the
 matter before the parliament. " It was not thought
Collect.
Numb. 42.
 " convenient to break it to the whole house : it was
 " thought best to begin with the nobility, and some of
 " the best and gravest sort. But before they made that
 " step, they thought it necessary to ask the Queen's
 " mind : she thought it was best to lay it first before
 " the King. Upon which, they sent the ambassadors
 " with a letter to the King ; and resolved to stay till his
 " answer came. They write, that the Queen was still
 " sick and weak : they hoped for her amendment ; but
 " they were driven to fear and mistrust the worst. In
 " a postscript, they tell them they had received the am-
 " bassadors' letters of the 4th, by which they saw the
 " French were resolved not to restore Calais : and that

PART "the King told them, that his commissioners had al-
III. "most agreed with the French in all other matters;
 1558. "but he would agree to nothing, unless the Queen
 "was satisfied. The Council ordered the ambassadors
 "to lay before the King the importance of leaving Ca-
 "lais in the hands of the French; and how much it
 "would touch the honour of the King and Queen, that,
 "so many restitutions being to be made on both sides,
 "this alone should not be restored. The subjects of
 "this realm would certainly be very uneasy at this.
 "The war was begun at the King's request, and for his
 "sake. If to other of the King's allies, places are to
 "be restored, that were taken from them some years
 "ago; what then can be judged, if a peace is con-
 "cluded without this restitution? Yet, on the other
 "hand, if there is an agreement in all other matters,
 "(which is like a giving up of the point,) much were to
 "be endured for the wealth of Christendom. In these
 "matters, the ambassadors were ordered to deal plainly
 "with the King, and to study to know his mind; since
 "the French keeping these places might be as great
 "prejudice to his Low-Countries, as to England. They
 "desire a plain and speedy answer, that they might
 "know what to offer to the nobility and parliament,
 "with relation to this matter."

The answer to this belongs to this reign; though it
 was written on the day after the Queen died, signed by
 the three ambassadors. It is in the Collection. "They
 Collect. Numb. 43. "had written formerly, that the French King had said
 "he would hazard his crown rather than restore Ca-
 "lais: yet for all those high words they did not quite
 "despair. The commissioners of both Kings had broke
 "up their conferences, and returned to their masters,
 "to give an account of what they had done, and to re-
 "ceive their final orders. The ambassadors believed,
 "that if the King insisted positively on the restitution

“ of Calais, that this might induce the French to agree BOOK
 “ to it : whereas, if the King and his ministers spoke V.
 “ but faintly of that matter, they were sure the French 1558.
 “ would still refuse to do it. Therefore they did not
 “ think fit to use any words to the King, to make him
 “ imagine that the Queen or the kingdom would con-
 “ sent to a peace, without the restoring of Calais : be-
 “ cause their instructions were express in that point.
 “ The King continued to say, that he would make no
 “ peace, unless the Queen should be satisfied : so that
 “ if she and her Council continued to insist on that
 “ point, they did believe the French would restore it,
 “ rather than lose the view they had of peace. And
 “ whereas the Council wrote to them, that if all other
 “ things were near agreed, much were to be endured
 “ for the peace of Christendom : yet that all others
 “ should have restitution, and that poor England should
 “ only bear the loss, was hard ; especially so great a
 “ loss : and they were so far from thinking that the
 “ leaving Calais to the French would purchase a sure
 “ peace, that they thought, on the contrary, that nothing
 “ showed more evidently that the French did not in-
 “ tend to continue the peace, with England especially,
 “ than their keeping of Calais. The French could
 “ easily annoy England on the side of Scotland ; the
 “ Dauphin being then married to the Queen of Scots :
 “ and what the French pretend to by that marriage
 “ was not unknown to them. (This probably was, to
 “ claim the crown of England upon the Queen’s death.)
 “ Now if the French kept Calais, the English could nei-
 “ ther hurt their enemies, nor assist their friends, or be
 “ assisted by them so easily, as when that place was in
 “ their hands. England would be shut out from the
 “ rest of Europe : the very knowledge of the transac-
 “ tions abroad would come late to them, and that place
 “ would be a scourge for England, as it was before Ed-

PART III. 1558. “ward the Third took it; which made him come
 “with his son, and but with a small army from Nor-
 “mandy into France, and to march through Picardy to
 “besiege it, the enemy pursuing him with a greater
 “army: but he fought through them, till at last he
 “fought them at Cressy; where, though the French
 “were three to one, yet he totally defeated them, and
 “continued the siege till he took it. So the French
 “having Scotland on the one hand, and Calais on the
 “other, it was easy to apprehend what might follow on
 “this. The French would sign any terms with them
 “to keep that place. These would be only parchment
 “and wax. They knew how many parchments King
 “Francis sealed to King Henry; and the present King
 “to King Edward. They saw the effects they had;
 “and if a war should follow between England and
 “France, they were not sure that Spain would join
 “with England: whereas now the King could not
 “honourably make any peace without us; and he him-
 “self said he would not: so they did not think Chris-
 “tendom should have a good peace, if Calais were left
 “to the French; and it was certainly more the interest
 “of England to continue the war in conjunction with
 “the King, than to make a peace, letting it go, and
 “then be forced to begin a new war, and to have all
 “the burden of it lie upon England. All this they
 “thought themselves bound to lay before the Council.
 “The Bishop of Ely adds, that he was with the com-
 “missioners by the King’s order; they had not yet
 “agreed concerning the matters of Corsica and Siena:
 “the French have likewise demanded the restitution of
 “Navarre; so that some thought the treaty would be
 “broken off without concluding in a peace. The Earl
 “of Arundel adds, that, after they had gone so far in
 “their letter, he received a letter from the Bishop of
 “Arras, dated the 17th, in which he writes thus; The

“ Bishop of Ely has told you on what terms we were
 “ in this purgatory, at his leaving us. The French BOOK
V.
 “ told us yesterday that they would condescend to 1558.
 “ every thing rather than yield in the matter of Calais,
 “ or let that place go out of their hands. And we on
 “ our part told them, that, without full satisfaction to
 “ the kingdom of England, we would not treat with
 “ them in any sort. And we parted so, that there is
 “ more appearance of a rupture than of a conclusion of
 “ the treaty.” But after all, our ambassadors doubted
 much whether it would break off only on the account
 of Calais. If they were in doubt about it, while the
 Queen was yet alive, it may be easily supposed that
 her death put them out of all doubt concerning it.

And now I am come to the conclusion of this in- A particular
relation of
the occa-
sion of the
Queen's
death.
 glorious reign. Campana gives a different account of
 the immediate occasion of the Queen's death, from what
 is to be found in other authors. He tells us, that King
 Philip, seeing no hope of issue by her, and that she was
 in an ill state of health, designed a marriage between
 the Duke of Savoy and the Lady Elizabeth : the Queen
 had a very bad opinion of her sister, suspecting she had
 ill principles in religion. King Philip thought the
 Duke of Savoy would be a firm friend to him, and a
 constant enemy to France. But he could never bring
 the Queen to hearken to this : yet now that she was
 declining very fast, he sent over the Duke of Feria to
 propose the match to the Privy-Council, without any
 regard to the Queen, or to the opposition she might
 make to it. And he ordered him to use all possible
 means to bring it to a conclusion. The Queen resented
 this highly ; and when she saw it was designed to force
 her to it, she fell into an extreme melancholy. The
 Privy-Council did not entertain the motion ; and the
 Queen dying in a few days, an end was put to it : for
 though I find the Duke of Feria was in England upon

PART
III.

1558.

Queen Elizabeth's coming to the crown, it does not appear that he made any proposition of that matter to her. What truth soever may be in this, the nation was now delivered from a severe and unhappy, though short reign : in which superstition and cruelty had the ascendant to such a degree, that it does not appear that there was any one great or good design ever set on foot, either for the wealth or glory of the nation. The poor Queen delivered herself up to her peevish and fretful humours, and to her Confessor ; and seemed to have no other thoughts, but about the extirpation of heresy, and the endowing of monasteries. Even the war, that commonly slackens vigorous proceedings, had not that effect here. Her inexorable hatred of all she accounted heretics was such, that I find but one single instance of a pardon of any condemned of heresy : and that was upon the Cardinal's intercession. God shortened the time of her reign for his elect's sake : and he seemed to have suffered popery to show itself in its true and natural colours, all over both false and bloody ; even in a female reign, from whence all mildness and gentleness might have been expected ; to give this nation such an evident and demonstrative proof of the barbarous cruelty of that religion, as might raise a lasting abhorrence and detestation of it.

A parallel
of Queen
Mary and
Queen Eli-
zabeth's
reign.

It was visible that the providence of God made a very remarkable difference, in all respects, between this poor short and despised reign, and the glory, the length, and the prosperity of the succeeding reign. So that, as far as we can reason from the outward characters of things, the one was all over mean and black, while the other shined with a superior brightness, to the admiration of all the world. It wanted no foil to set it off, being all over lustre and glory. But if that was wanting, the base and contemptible reign that went before it could not but add to its brightness.

One amazing character of Providence in her death, **BOOK**
and in the great successor that came after her, was, that **V.**
at the time that the two ministers, being both ecclesi- **1558.**
astics of the Kings of France and Spain, were designing
a peace, with the view of destroying heresy upon the
conclusion of it ; their project was entirely blasted in so
critical a minute : first by the death of Queen Mary,
and the succession of Queen Elizabeth ; and next by
the unlooked-for death of the King of France in July
after : so that not only the design totally miscarried,
but France fell under the confusions of a minority ;
under which, that they called heresy gathered great
strength : and the cruelty of the Spanish government
occasioned the revolt of the Netherlands ; while the
glorious Queen of England protected and assisted both
so effectually, that King Henry the Fourth owed his
being supported by her in his lowest state was the
chief means that brought him to the possession of the
crown of France : and the United Provinces had their
main dependance on the protection and assistance that
they had from her. So mercifully did God deal with
this nation, by removing that Queen, that he had set
over it in his wrath, and so graciously did he watch
over the Reformation, that in the very time, in which
the enemies of that work reckoned it was to be rooted
out, he raised up a glorious instrument, that not only
revived it among us, but by a kind and tender influence
watched over it, and protected it every where. So I
now turn to view the auspicious beginnings of that
blessed reign.

BOOK VI.

Of the Beginnings of Queen Elizabeth's Reign.

NO Prince ever came to the throne in a more clouded state of affairs than this Queen did: the nation was engaged in a war, both with France and Scotland. The Queen had no ally but King Philip: and though she was sensible of her particular obligations to him, yet being resolved to make alterations in religion, she knew she could depend no longer on him, when once these should be begun. The Duke of Feria, then his ambassador in England, took all occasions to let her understand, that his master was the *Catholic King*, and that therefore he must protect that religion. The Papists whom she found in the ministry possessed her with fears of rebellions at home, and of wars from abroad, if she set herself to alter religion. Those she brought into her councils, in conjunction with the Papists, chiefly Bacon and Cecil, had been so accustomed to comply with what they condemned in matters of religion, that they brought themselves to bear what they did not approve: and they apprehended great danger if they should proceed too quick in those matters.

BOOK
VI.
1558.

The Queen's inclinations to the Reformation were universally relied on: her education and knowledge, her bad usage during the former reign, and her title to the crown, that was grounded on a marriage, made in defiance to the Pope, led all people to conclude, that, what slow steps soever she might make in it, she would

Her inclinations in religion cautiously managed.

PART certainly declare for it, as soon as she saw she could be
III. safe in doing it. Upon this some, whether out of a for-
 wardness of zeal, or on design to encourage her, began
 1558. early to pull down images, and to make changes: but
 on the other hand, the priests, apprehending what was
 like to follow, begun at the same time to alarm the
 people: some broke out into seditious words, to ani-
 mate the people against all changes; and the pulpits
 being all in their hands, they had free scope there to
 give the alarm: some went further, and called her title
 to the crown in question; and set up the pretensions
 of the Queen of Scotland. Of these, the industrious Mr.
 Strype has gathered many instances, that showed on
 the one hand their seditious tempers; and on the other
 hand, the great mildness of the government, different
 from the cruelty of the former reign. To put a stop to
 these, she did by one proclamation prohibit all preach-
 ing; and by another, all alterations by private hands.

As her ministers advised this caution in matters of
 religion, so they persuaded her to digest the loss of
 Calais, and to come into a peace with France and Scot-
 land.

Mount sent
 to Ger-
 many.

They likewise thought of new alliances. In order to
 this, Mount was brought into England again; and had
 secret instructions given him by Cecyl, to go to all the
 Princes of Germany, to know how far the Queen might
 depend on their assistance; and to receive the advices
 that the Princes offered, with relation to the affairs of
 England, and in particular, concerning a proper mar-
 riage for the Queen. He found them ready to receive
 the Queen into the Smalcaldic League; chiefly, if the
 Reformation that was intended might be made upon their
 model. The match they all proposed was with Charles
 of Austria, the Emperor Ferdinand's second son, bro-
 ther to Maximilian, the King of Bohemia and Hungary;
 who was known to be a Protestant: for though he com-

A match
 with
 Charles of
 Austria ad-
 vised.

plied in the outward acts of the Popish worship, yet he **BOOK**
 had a minister in his court, whom he heard frequently **VI.**
 preach. Both the Elector Palatine, and the Duke of **1558.**
 Wirtemberg, assured Mount, that Charles designed, as
 soon as he durst, for fear of his father's displeasure, to
 declare himself of their religion. He said to one of
 these Princes; "I love the religion that my brother
 " holds, and approve of it; and will, by the grace of
 " God, profess it openly. He told him, that his father
 " suspected this; and had pressed him to take an oath,
 " that he would never change his religion. He refused
 " that; but said to his father, that he believed, as he
 " did, all that was in the New Testament, and in the
 " orthodox Fathers. Upon which the Emperor said, I
 " see this son is likewise corrupted." They thought
 this match would be a great strengthening of the
 Queen: it would engage the whole House of Austria
 in the Protestant religion, and unite the whole empire
 in an alliance with the Queen. This was writ to the **Cott. Libr.**
 Queen in the year 1559; but in the copy I saw, the **Galba, 11.**
 particular date is not added.

The news of the Queen's coming to the crown no **The Re-**
 sooner reached Zurick, than all those who had retired **formers re-**
 thither resolved to return to England. They had been **turn to**
 entertained there both by the magistrates, and the **England.**
 ministers, Bullinger, Gualter, Weidner, Simler, Lavater,
 Gesner, and all the rest of that body, with a tenderness
 and affection, that engaged them to the end of their
 lives to make the greatest acknowledgments possible
 for it. The first of these was in all respects the chief
 person of that society, with whom they held the closest
 correspondence. Peter Martyr was likewise there, and
 was treated by them all with a singular respect, even to
 a submission. Jewel was first formed by him at Ox-
 ford, and so continued to his death in a constant com-
 merce of letters with him, writing always to him by the

PART title of *Father*. I saw a great volume of those letters as
III. I passed through Zurick in the year 1685 ; so I was de-
 1558. sirable to have the volume sent me : but I found, that,
 by their rules, that could not be done. I also under-
 stood, that there were several letters relating to our af-
 fairs, scattered through several other volumes ; so Pro-
 fessor Otto did kindly and with much zeal undertake
 to get them to be copied for me. The person who
 managed and procured this for me was that pious and
 learned Professor at Geneva, Alphonsus Turretin, born
 to be a blessing to the state he lives in. He has given
 the world already, on many occasions, great instances
 of his exquisite learning, and of a most penetrating
 judgment, having made a vast progress in a few years ;
 in which a feeble and tender body, though it is a great
 clog, that gives his friends many sad apprehensions, yet
 cannot keep down an exalted mind from many per-
 formances, that seem to be above both his years and
 his strength. But how valuable soever these qualities
 are, yet his zeal for the great things of religion, and his
 moderation in lesser matters, together with a sublime
 and exalted piety, is that which I observed in him,
 even when he was scarce out of childhood, and have,
 with a continual joy and delight, seen the advances of it
 ever since. This grateful account of him I owe not so
 much to his friendship, (though I owe a great deal to
 that,) but to his rare and singular worth. By his means
 I procured copies of the letters that our Reformers con-
 tinued to write, chiefly to Peter Martyr, Bullinger, and
 Gualter : and with them I have a solemn attestation,
 under the seal of that noble Canton, of their being true
 copies, carefully collated with the originals ; which I
 have put at the end of the Collection. If there had not
 been many interruptions in the series of those letters,
 they are so particular, that from them we should have
 had a clear thread of the history of that time : but

many of them are lost; and they are wanting on some BOOK
of the most critical occasions. I shall make the best ^{VI.}
use of them I can, as far as they lead me. 1559.

Horn and Sands went first to England: so Jewel, ^{They were well received by the Queen.} who was following them, writes from Strasburg, on the 26th of January 1559, to Peter Martyr: and adds, ^{Collect. Numb. 44.} "that they were well received by the Queen; that
"many bishopricks were void; Christopherson was
"certainly dead: that White, whom Martyr knew well,
"had preached the funeral sermon when Queen Mary
"was buried; the text was, *I praised the dead more*
"*than the living*: in which he charged the audience,
"by all means not to suffer any change to be made in
"religion. Inveighing against the fugitives, that might
"perhaps return into England, he said, whosoever should
"kill them, would do a deed acceptable to God. Upon
"this he writes, that both the Marquis of Winchester,
"and Heath Archbishop of York, seemed highly dis-
"pleased at it. He adds, that Bonner was obliged to
"restore to Ridley's executors all his goods that he
"had violently seized on, and was confined to his
"house." I have seen a copy of White's Sermon. In
it he commends Queen Mary for this, that she would
never be called Head of the Church: though the false-
hood of that is on record, in the writs that were sealed
for above a year after she came to the crown. He runs
out with great fury against heresy: Geneva is, in par-
ticular, named the seat of it. He says, Queen Mary's
death was like the death of an angel, if they were mor-
tal. He insinuates his fears of *flying in the winter, on*
the sabbath, or being with child; all which he repre-
sents as allegorical. Yet he has some decent words of
the Queen; and says, they were to comfort themselves
for the death of one sister, in the other that survived.

Gualter wrote to one Masters, who was the Queen's ^{Those of Zurich advise a tho-} physician, and was well known to him, on the 16th of

PART January. "He congratulates the happy change of their

III. "affairs. He wishes (I translate his words strictly)

1559. "that they would not hearken to the counsels of those
rough re- "men; who, when they saw that popery could not be
formation. "honestly defended, nor entirely retained, would use
Collect. "all artifices to have the outward face of religion to re-
Numb. 43. "main mixed, incertain, and doubtful: so that, while
"an evangelical reformation is pretended, those things
"should be obtruded on the church, which will make
"the returning back to popery, to superstition, and to
"idolatry, very easy. I write not these things to you,
"he adds, as knowing that there are any such among
"you; but I write, from a fear that there may be some
"such: for we have had the experience of this for
"some years in Germany, and know what influence
"such persons may have. Their counsels seem to a
"carnal judgment to be full of modesty, and well fit-
"ted for carrying on an universal agreement: and we
"may well believe, that the common enemy of our sal-
"vation will find out proper instruments, by whose
"means the seeds of popery may still remain among
"you. A little after he writes, that he apprehends, that
"in the first beginnings, while men may study to avoid
"the giving some small offence, many things may be
"suffered under this colour, that they will be continued
"but for a little while; and yet afterwards, it will
"scarce be possible, by all the endeavours that can be
"used, to get them to be removed, at least not without
"great strugglings." Dr. Masters, in answer to this,
tells him, he had laid his letter before the Queen, and
that she had read it all. He promises to use his best
endeavours for carrying on a sound reformation. This
plainly insinuated their fears of somewhat like what
was designed by the *Interim* in Germany.

The Earl
of Bedford
had staid

Francis Earl of Bedford had gone out of England in
Queen Mary's time, and had staid some time at Zurich:

he had expressed a true zeal for the Reformation, and **BOOK**
 a particular regard for the divines there; of which a **VI.**
 letter in the Collection gives a clear account: and upon **1559.**
 that they wrote often to him, and pressed him 'vehe- some time
 mently to take care in the first beginnings to have all at Zurich,
 things settled upon sure and sound foundations. and wrote
to them.

On the 24th of January the Convocation was opened; Collect.
 but the bishops, in obedience to the Queen's proclama- Numb. 46.
 tion against preaching, did not think fit to open it with Proceedings
 a sermon. Those who I find are marked as present in Convo-
 are, the Bishops of London, Winchester, Lincoln, Wor-
 cester, Coventry and Litchfield, and the Abbot of
 Westminster. These appeared personally; and the
 Bishops of Ely, Peterborough, and St. Asaph sent their
 proxies: but no mention is made of the Bishops of
 Bath and Wells, St. David's, Landaffe, and Exeter. All
 the other sees were then vacant; Canterbury, Salisbury,
 Norwich, Chichester, Hereford, Gloucester, Oxford,
 Bangor, Bristol, and Rochester: ten in all. Harpsfield
 was chosen Prolocutor. He asked, What they had to
 do, and what was to be done, to preserve religion? The
 bishops answered, They must pray the Queen, that no
 new burden might be laid on the clergy in this parlia-
 ment. This was to prevent the demand of a new sub-
 sidy, the former not being yet paid. In the seventh
 session the Prolocutor offered to the bishops the five
 articles mentioned in my History. These they had
 drawn up for the discharge of their consciences, and
 they desired the bishops to be their leaders in this
 matter. The bishops received their paper, and pro-
 mised to offer it next day to the House of Lords. In
 the next session, the Prolocutor and clergy came up,
 and asked the bishops, if they had delivered their paper
 to the House of Lords? Bonner answered, that they
 had delivered it to the Lord Keeper, the mouth of that
 House; who, to all appearance, received it kindly, or

PART thankfully, (*gratanter*,) but gave them no answer. The
III. clergy desired the bishops to get an answer from him,
 1559. or at least to know his pleasure, before their next meeting. In the ninth session the bishops told the clergy, that they had not yet found a fit opportunity to obtain an answer from the House of Lords. On the tenth session Bonner told the clergy, that all their articles, except the last, which was, "That the authority of
 "treating and defining, in matters of the faith, of the
 "sacraments, and of ecclesiastical discipline, belonged
 "to the pastors of the church, and not to the laity;" were approved by the two universities. After this came only perpetual prorogations from day to day, without any business done, till the ninth of May, in which the Convocation was dissolved. So this was the last and feeble struggle that the popish clergy made in Convocation.

The bishops
 oppose the
 Reformation
 in the House
 of Lords.

Collect.
 Numb. 47.

The bishops stood firm in the House of Lords, where there were none of the other side to answer them; few of the temporal lords being very learned. They seemed to triumph there, and hung so upon the wheels, that there was a slow progress made. On the 20th of March, Jewel writes to Peter Martyr, "That after a journey of
 "fifty-one days from the time he left Zurick, he got to
 "London; where he was amazed to find the Pope's authority was not yet thrown off: masses were still said;
 "and the bishops continued still insolent. Things were
 "beginning to mend a little: a public disputation was
 "then resolved on; and he adds, that the Queen spoke
 "with great esteem of Peter Martyr. The inferior sort
 "of the populace was both ignorant and perverse. He
 "tells him, Brooks, Bishop of Gloucester, whom he calls
 "an *impure beast*, was newly dead; and cried out, as
 "he was dying, that he was damned."

Collect.
 Numb. 48.

Jewel, in a letter to Bullinger from London on the 22d of May 1559, which is in the Collection, after

great acknowledgments of his obligations to him and to all Zurick, "thanks him for quickening them to act
 " with zeal and courage. There was need of it; for
 " besides those who had been always their enemies, the
 " deserters, who had left them in the former reign,
 " were now their most bitter enemies. Besides this,
 " the Spaniards had corrupted the morals of the nation
 " to a great degree. They were doing what they could,
 " and all things were coming into a better state. The
 " Queen did very solemnly refuse to be called Head of
 " the Church: she thought that title was only due to
 " Christ. The universities were strangely corrupted by
 " Soto, and another Spanish monk: it was scarce cre-
 " dible how much mischief they had done in so little
 " time. He tells him, that the Lord Bedford had asked
 " him, What would be the most acceptable present that
 " he could send to him and his brethren? He answered,
 " Nothing could be so acceptable to them, as his ex-
 " pressing a zeal for promoting the Gospel, and against
 " popery. That lord assured him, he would do that
 " faithfully: which, as he writes, he was doing very
 " sincerely. He writes also, how that several princes
 " were making addresses to the Queen for her mar-
 " riage; but many suspected her inclinations lay to
 " one Pickering, a worthy and pious man, and one of a
 " most noble figure, as to his person. He refers him
 " for other things to his letters to Peter Martyr." On
 the sixth of April, Jewel wrote a particular account of
 the disputation; which though it is upon the matter
 the same that is in my History, yet since it is both a
 confirmation of it, and has some circumstances that are
 new, I have put it in my Collection. " He tells him
 " that Cole treated the Reformers with many reproaches
 " and much scorn, and called them seditious incendi-
 " aries. He delivered his speech with great emotion,
 " stamping with his feet, and putting himself as in

BOOK
VI.
1559.

Collect.
Numb. 49.

PART " convulsions. He said, the Apostles divided their
 III. " work into two provinces, the *western* and the *eastern* :
 1559. " the first St. Peter and St. Paul had given to them,
 " where the worship was to be all in Latin; the *eastern*
 " division fell to the other Apostles, where all was to be
 " performed in Greek. This he introduced with pomp,
 " as a thing certain. He affirmed, that it was not fit
 " the people should understand the public worship; for
 " ignorance was the mother of devotion. The paper
 " prepared by the Reformers was read gravely and mo-
 " destly by Horn: so that all who were present (he
 " names the Earl of Shrewsbury in particular) acknow-
 " ledged the victory was clearly on their side. By
 " this, and by what happened the second day, the po-
 " pish cause sunk much in the opinion of the people."

Collect.
 Numb. 50.

On the 28th of April, in another letter, which is in the Collection, he tells Peter Martyr how earnestly the bishops contended in the House of Lords. " Fecknam defended monastic orders from the sons of the prophets, and the Nazarites among the Jews; and said, Christ and his Apostles were monks. None struggled more vehemently than Thirleby. He saw a design at court of seizing on the bishops' manors, and assigning parsonages to them instead of them: but he laments most of all, that no care was taken of schools, or of promoting learning; the universities were in a most miserable condition. The Earl of Bedford pressed the Queen to send for Peter Martyr; she said she would do it: but as much as Jewel desired to see him, he writes, that he would not advise his coming over, if he was not sent for with such an earnest and honourable invitation as he deserved to have. He saw many of the Queen's ministers were in hope to enter into the Smalcaldic League; and one who had been a bishop possessed them with an opinion, that if Martyr were brought over, that would obstruct

“ the other design : he expresses an ill opinion of that **BOOK**
 “ person, but does not name him :” it must have been **VI.**
 either Barlo, Scory, or Coverdale, for these were all the **1559.**
 bishops of the Reformation that were then alive ; Co-
 verdale, as being a Dane, is the likeliest to have been en-
 gaged in the Lutheran opinion. He concludes his
 letter, that those who had returned from their exile
 were yet in great misery, no care being taken of them.

His next is on the tenth of April : “ He laments the He com-
 plains of
 want of
 zeal, and
 an excess
 of caution.
 “ want of zeal and industry in promoting the Reforma-
 “ tion ; far short of what the Papists showed in Queen
 “ Mary’s time. Then every thing was carried on vio-
 “ lently, without staying either for law or precedent.
 “ But now every thing is managed in so slow, so cau-
 “ tious and prudent a manner, as if the word of God
 “ was not to be received upon his own authority : so
 “ that, as Christ was thrown out by his enemies, he is
 “ now kept out by his friends. This caution made
 “ that the spirits of those that favoured them were
 “ sunk, while their enemies were much exalted upon it.
 “ Yet he acknowledges, that though no law was made
 “ abrogating the mass, it was in many places laid down.
 “ The nobility seemed zealous in their hatred of po-
 “ pery. The Queen had indeed softened her mass
 “ much ; but there were many things amiss that were
 “ left in it : if she could be prevailed on to put the
 “ crucifix out of her chapel, it would give a general en-
 “ couragement ; she was truly pious, but thought it
 “ necessary to proceed by law, and that it was dan-
 “ gerous to give way to a furious multitude.”

Cox, on the 20th of May, wrote to Weidner, another
 divine of Zurick, whom he calls a venerable old man.
 “ He tells him, that they found the short reign of
 “ Queen Mary had such effects in hardening the minds
 “ of the people in their superstition, that it would not
 “ be easy to change the nation. Great opposition was

PART III. "made to every good motion by the *Scribes* and *Pharisees* in the House of Lords; for there was none
 1550. "there that could maintain arguments against the bishops: but the divines who were returned from their exile were called to preach at court before the Queen; where they plainly affirmed that the Pope was Antichrist, and that their traditions were blasphemies. Some of the nobility came every day over to them, and many of the people, but not one of the clergy; they stuck all together as a body that was not to be moved. He tells him the event that the public disputation had; and that now King Edward's laws were to be revived. Thus, says he, God has regarded the low estate we were in, and with his fatherly compassion has pitied us, and taken off the cross we lay under. God grant these his great and inestimable benefits may never be forgotten by us. But he laments, that, while there was so great a harvest, there were so few labourers."

All business was brought to a good conclusion in parliament. The King of France's unlooked-for death had given such a change to the face of affairs abroad, that the Queen and her ministers seemed to be animated with more courage than had appeared hitherto. Of this there is a letter of Jewel's in the Collection. In the beginning of August, it appears, from another letter in the Collection, that preachers were sent to many different parts. "Many northern counties were assigned to Sands. Jewel had a large province; he was to make a circuit of about 700 miles, through Berkshire, Gloucestershire, Somersetshire, Devonshire, Cornwall, Dorsetshire, and Wiltshire. The popish bishops made a very poor address to the Queen, persuading her not to change the state of religion; to which she answered very resolutely: and they, rather than abjure the Pope once more, which they had often done before,

Collect.
Numb. 51.

Collect.
Numb. 52.

" were resolved now to relinquish their bishopricks. It BOOK VI.
 " was plain they had no religion among them; yet now 1559.
 " they pretended conscience: they were full of rage;
 " and one of the artifices they used at that time to
 " keep the people from receiving the Reformation was,
 " the giving out of prophecies, that this change would
 " be short-lived: howsoever the Queen had courage; so
 " he thanks God for the state to which their affairs
 " were then brought. Matters went well in Scotland;
 " Knox was preaching in many places of the country,
 " well guarded: the monasteries were every where
 " pulled down, and all the superstitious stuff that was
 " in them was destroyed. The young King of France
 " took among his titles both England and Scotland.
 " He understood it was designed to make himself Bi-
 " shop of Salisbury; but he was positively resolved to
 " decline it." In the letters sent me from Zurick I find
 none of Grindall's on this occasion; but Mr. Strype in
 his Life has informed the world, that Grindall, when
 he knew he was designed to be a bishop, wrote to Peter
 Martyr for his opinion in several matters. I shall give
 the substance of his letter. " He did not approve of
 " the Queen's taking away the estates of the bishop-
 " ricks, and giving them parsonages instead of them:
 " he thought this was the patrimony of the inferior
 " clergy; so he did not see how they could be sup-
 " plied, if these were given to the bishops. He had
 " also a doubt concerning the popish vestments. At
 " another time he asked his advice, whether the popish
 " priests, upon their changing again, should be received
 " and continued in their functions? or whether such
 " of them as had been concerned in the late cruelty
 " ought not to be prosecuted for that?"

To all this Peter Martyr answered, " That for the Peter Mar-
tyr's ad-
vices to
Grindall.
 " taking away the bishops' estates, and giving them
 " parsonages for them, they could neither hinder nor

PART “ help it ; but they ought out of them to support the
III. “ clergy that laboured in those parishes. For the ha-
1559. “ bits, he confessed he did not love them ; for while he
 “ was a canon in Oxford, he never would use the sur-
 “ plice. He thought they ought to do what they could
 “ to get them to be laid aside ; but that, if that could
 “ not be done, he thought he might do more good, even
 “ in that particular, by submitting to it, and accepting
 “ a bishoprick, which might give him an interest to
 “ procure a change afterwards. As for the popish
 “ priests, he advised the forgiving all that was past ; and
 “ the receiving them, according to the practice of the
 “ primitive church, in the return of the Arians to the
 “ orthodox body. But they were to watch over them,
 “ and to instruct and examine them with more care.”
 This answer came too late, for Grindall was consecrated
 before he got it ; but it was, no doubt, a great satisfac-
 tion to him, to find that a person, whom he esteemed
 so highly, approved of the resolution that he had taken :
 in which it was probable Jewel’s opinion, of whom they
 had all a high esteem, might contribute to settle him ;
 for though he disliked the use of those vestments, and
 treats the insisting so much on it with great contempt ;
 yet, on the other hand, he blames those who laid too
 much weight upon that matter, and so looked on it as
 a thing of more importance than truly it was.

They all rejoiced in the happy turn of affairs then in
 Scotland, the much greater part of that nation declar-
 ing themselves openly and zealously against Popery.

The begin-
 nings of the
 Reforma-
 tion in the
 parliament
 of Scotland.

Here I shall insert an account concerning Scotland,
 of what happened in the reign of King Henry, but that
 came not to my knowledge till the impression of this
 volume was advanced to the reign of Queen Mary. The
 Scottish nation was so well disposed towards the Re-
 formation, that immediately upon King James the
 Fifth’s death, which was in December 1541, there ap-

peared a wonderful inclination among them to be better informed in matters of religion. Cardinal Beaton, to prevent this, had got a will to be forged, in the name of the deceased King, constituting him Regent: but as that was discovered to be a forgery, so the nobility had no regard to it, but owned the Earl of Aran to be the second person in the kingdom; and that he was, next to the young Queen, and the heirs of her body, the heir of the crown. So they took the oaths of allegiance to the Queen as their Sovereign, and to the Earl of Aran as their Governor, till the Queen was of perfect age: and upon that the Cardinal was secured.

A parliament was summoned to meet in May 1542, in which the regency of the Earl of Aran was of new confirmed on the 13th of May; and all the subjects were required to obey him in all things pertaining to that office, conform to the acts formerly made; which were again ratified by that parliament. They also ratified the oaths that had been taken to him by some lords spiritual and temporal; and all who were present were required to confirm these oaths by solemn oaths in full parliament; which they all did by the holding up of their right hands, swearing that they would be true and obedient to the Lord Governor, and serve him with their persons, kindred, friends, and goods, and no other, during the Queen's nonage.

On the 15th of May, they ordered an authentic publication to be made of all they had done under the Great Seal; and they all affixed their seals to the instrument made to confirm this settlement. On the same day a council was named; six of these was the number that was at the least necessary to concur with the Governor. The Cardinal was not one of them. The Archbishop of Glasgow, who was Lord Chancellor; with the Bishops of Aberdeen, Murray, Orkney, Ross, and Brichen; and the Abbots of Dunfermlin and Cowper;

BOOK
VI.
1559.

PART were for the ecclesiastical state. The Earls of Angus,
 III. Huntley, Murray, Argyle, Bothwell, Marshall, Cassilis,
 1559. and Glencairn; and the Lords Erskin, Ruthuen, Maxwell, Seton, and Methuen; for the nobility: with some other commoners of the boroughs. After whom, the Treasurer, the Secretary, the Clerk of Register, the Justice Clerk, and the Queen's Advocate, are named. It seems they intended that no peers should be created, but with the concurrence of the parliament: for the Governor, with the advice and consent of the estates of parliament, made the Lord Stewart of Ochiltry a peer, to have vote and place in parliament. In the same record, mention is made of the draught of an act offered by the Lord Maxwell to the Lords of the Articles, in these words:

It is statute and ordained, that it shal be lawful to all our Sovereign Lady's lieges, to have the holy writ of the New Testament and the Old, in the vulgar tongue, in Inglis or Scotts, of a good and tru translation; and that they shall incurre no crime, for the having, or reding of the same. Provided always, that no man dispute, or hold opinions, under the pains contained in the acts of parliament.

The Lords of Articles found this reasonable; and thought, that the Bible might be used among all the lieges of the realm, in our vulgar tongue, of a good, true, and just translation, because there was no law showed to the contrary. And therefore they agreed, that none should incur any crime for having or reading it, nor be accused for it: but added the proviso that was added to the draught offered to them.

The use of
 the Scrip-
 tures in
 the vulgar
 tongue
 much op-
 posed:

But the Archbishop of Glasgow did in his own name, and in the name of all the prelates of the realm that were present in parliament when the act came to be read in full parliament, *dissent (simpliciter) to it, as being one of the three estates of the parliament: and they opposed them thereto, unto the time that a provincial*

council might be had of all the clergy of this realm, to advise and conclude thereupon ; if the same be necessary to be had in the vulgar tongue, to be used among the Queen's lieges or not ; and thereafter to show the utter determination that shall be done in that behalf. Upon this he demanded an instrument to be made, according to the forms in that kingdom. But notwithstanding this opposition, the act passed. For in the same record, there is an order entered, as signed by the Governor, requiring the Clerk of Register to cause the acts passed in parliament to be proclaimed ; *and in special, the act made for having the New Testament in vulgar tongue, with certain additions.* In the copy sent me, this bears date the 19th of March, but I believe it should be May ; since the matter was not before the parliament till May. I have set down all this matter, almost in the words of the record of parliament, that was sent me.

BOOK
VI.
1559.

But grant-
ed.

In the same record, the instructions are set down that were given to the ambassadors, that were sent to treat concerning the Queen's marriage with Edward, then Prince of Wales : in which it appears, that they thought it necessary, if their Sovereign went out of the kingdom, even after she was of perfect age, yet that the Governor of the realm should continue to exercise his authority all the days of his life : and that after his death, the nearest lawful person of the blood should succeed to the said office, by a large and ample commission ; of which they order a form to be devised.

The free use of the Scriptures was a great step to let the nation look into the nature of the Christian religion : and the clergy foresaw well the consequences that would naturally follow upon it ; so it was no wonder that this was opposed so zealously by them. It was a great piece of foresight, to secure the nation, by having a Governor with full powers still residing amongst them. In the subsequent treaty with France,

PART there was not that care nor precaution used : but, at the
III. conclusion of the marriage, the French proceeded in so
 1559. perfidious a manner, as to give a warning to all, who in
 future times should treat with that court. For on the
 4th of April 1558, (a fortnight before the articles of the
 marriage were settled, which was on the 19th of April,)
 the young Queen being then but little more than fifteen,
 a secret act was passed ; in which, after she had set
 forth the ancient alliance between the two crowns, and
 the honourable entertainment that she had received from
 the present King of France ;

Aperfidious
 proceeding
 of the
 court of
 France.

“ She, to confirm and establish the affection between
 “ the two kingdoms, and in order to unite the kingdom
 “ of Scotland to the crown of France, in case she should
 “ die without heirs of her body, had made some dispo-
 “ sitions in favour of the crown of France, which she
 “ intended should have their full effect : yet she, by a
 “ communication with the deputies sent from Scotland,
 “ saw into the secret designs of some, who were prac-
 “ tising to the effect, that, in default of heirs of her body,
 “ the crown should descend to some lords of the coun-
 “ try ; depriving her by that means, to her great regret,
 “ of the power of disposing of it. Yet since she could
 “ not at that time openly oppose them, for certain just
 “ causes of fear ; and considering that she was out of
 “ her kingdom, and had no strong places in it at her
 “ own disposal ; and that great troubles might arise, if
 “ what she was then doing should be publicly known ;
 “ especially considering the present war with the king-
 “ dom of England : she therefore did protest, that what
 “ consent or agreement soever she should make to the
 “ articles and instructions sent over by the states of her
 “ kingdom, with relation to the succession, in case she
 “ should die without heirs of her body ; she intended
 “ still, that the disposition then made in favour of the
 “ crown of France should have its full and entire effect,

“ notwithstanding any agreement she had made, or BOOK
 “ should yet make, conform to these instructions, as a VI.
 “ thing contrary to her will and intention.” Upon 1559.
 which she demanded an act from the Keeper of the
 Great Seal, Bertrandi, who was made a cardinal that
 year.

This instrument was signed by her, and by the Dau- *Recueil des*
 phin; and is printed in that great collection of the *Traites, t.*
 treaties of France, that was published twenty years ago. *ii. p. 508.*
 It opens a scene of treachery, that, how much soever
 the design was suspected, (as will appear by the paper,
 of which an account will be given in the following re-
 lation,) yet it was never certainly known, till they them-
 selves have made their own shame thus known to the
 world. But at that time this was so carefully concealed,
 that Francis the Second sent a formal obligation under
 his Great Seal; by which he bound himself to the
 Duke of Chatelherault, to maintain his right of suc-
 ceeding to the crown of Scotland, in case the Queen
 should die without heirs of her own body. The origi-
 nal obligation is still preserved in Hawdton. The
 Queen's secret act was as ill grounded in law, as it was
 perfidious in itself: for certainly, what power soever
 our princes, with the concurrence of their parliaments,
 have to limit the succession to the crown, our princes
 themselves cannot, by any private act of their own, alter
 the succession, or dispose of it at pleasure. But to
 return to that which has led me into this digression.

The knowledge of religion, that the free use of the
 Scriptures brought the nation to, had such an effect,
 that the Reformation was every where desired; and the
 vices and ignorance of the popish clergy gave all people
 an aversion to them. This was long connived at even
 by the Queen Mother, during her government: but
 now that she thought all was sure, she threw off the
 mask, and declared herself an open enemy to those

PART III. whom she had courted hitherto, and seemed to favour. Upon this there was a great and a sudden turn. Popery was the object of all men's hatred : the churches were purged from idolatry and superstition : the monasteries were broke into ; and many acts of hot and irregular zeal were complained of in all the corners of the kingdom.

^a *Nobilium qui hæreseas obstringebantur crimine, humanitas non estreticenda, quod eo tempore paucos catholicos de religionis re multarint exilio, pauciores carcere, morte nullos.*
Leslæus de Rebus Scot.
l. 10.

One thing is not a little to the honour of Knox and his followers in that tumultuary reformation, that the multitude was so governed, even amidst all that popular heat, that no blood was shed, and no man was killed in it : which being positively delivered by ^aLesley, Bishop of Rasse, that must be looked on as a testimony beyond exception.

But since the affairs of Scotland have not hitherto been so clearly represented, as I find them stated in some original papers, that I fell on in the Cotton Library ; I will give a full account of them, as far as those papers do guide me.

There is a long representation drawn up, of the breach of faith, and of the violation of their laws, during the government of the Queen Regent of Scotland : at the end of which, there is a petition to the Queen, signed by the great lords of that kingdom, in which both Papists and Protestants concurred. And in order to obtain that concurrence, the matters of religion are not insisted on ; but the continued course of a perfidious and illegal administration is charged on the Queen Dowager. So that from this it appears, that the war was not begun, nor carried on, upon the account of religion, but upon the pretence of public and national rights. I have put it in the Collection.

Collect.
Numb. 53.

“ They begin it to show, that the arms that they were
“ forced to fly to was no rebellion. They run the mat-
“ ter back to the first proposition for carrying their
“ Queen into France : which, they say, was obtained,

" partly by corruption with money, partly by autho- BOOK
 " rity, and partly by fair promises : yet before that was VI.
 " agreed to, a treaty was made by the parliament, and 1559.
 " sworn to, as well as ratified by the Great Seals of the
 " King and Dauphin of France, that Scotland should
 " be governed by their own laws, and by the nobility
 " and people of Scotland : that all offices should be
 " given to them ; and, that no garrisons of the French
 " should be admitted to settle in the kingdom. Great
 " practice was made after that to bring the parliament
 " to consent that their Queen should marry the Dau-
 " phin : and to obtain that, the succession to the crown
 " was declared to belong to the Duke of Chatelherault
 " and his heirs, after the heirs of the Queen's body.
 " New oaths were then taken, and charters given under
 " the Great Seal of France, and under their Queen and
 " the Dauphin's Seal, that Scotland should be governed
 " by a council of natives : the castles were also to be
 " put in sure hands. Duplicates of these were lodged
 " in the castle of Edinburgh, and with the Duke of
 " Chatelherault. Upon this, an embassy was sent to
 " France, of two bishops, two earls, and four lords ; and
 " the marriage was concluded. They were upon that
 " dealt with, to endeavour that the crown of Scotland
 " might be given to the Dauphin. They refused to
 " undertake that ; and believed, that it could not be
 " brought about. The word upon that was changed.
 " And it was desired only, that the *matrimonial crown*
 " might be sent him ;" (which was afterwards explained
 " in the act of parliament that granted it, that he should
 " be King of Scotland during life.) " The lords were suf-
 " fered to return : but when they came to Diep, one
 " bishop, two earls, and two lords died in one night.
 " The three that were left came home much amazed,
 " believing that the others had been poisoned."

Here I must add another particular relating to that

PART deputation. In the Council-book, that goes from April

III. 1554, to January 1558, that was cast by and neglected,

1559. many leaves being cut out of it, and was first discovered by a nephew of mine, whom I desired to search their register for me; it appears, that on the 13th of December 1557, there was a tax laid on the kingdom, to be paid in before Easter, for the expence of that embassy, of 15,000*l.* Scots money, that is, 1250*l.* sterling; which was to be levied by the same proportion that all the taxes were then levied; of which there are several instances in that book: the one half was levied on the spirituality; and two thirds of the other half was on estates in land, and the other third was levied on the boroughs. This shows that the estates of the spirituality were then reckoned by a settled proportion, the full half of the kingdom. The persons deputed were, the Archbishop of Glasgow, the Bishop of Orkney, and the Prior of St. Andrew's, (afterwards Earl of Murray;) the Earls of Cassiles and Rothes, and the Lord Fleming; with the Provost of Edinburgh, and of Montross. When I wondered how so small a sum could answer the expence of so great an embassy, on such an occasion; he showed me, that either the value of money, or, which is the same thing, the value of things to be purchased by money, is almost incredibly changed now, in the course of 160 years; of which he gave me this instance: the tun of wine was then by act of parliament to be sold at twenty livres; or, in sterling money, at 1*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*; and in the retailing it, their pint, which is four English pints, was to be sold at four farthings, their penny having six farthings; so that, reducing this to English measures, three quarts of wine were to be sold at a penny. This I thought was a small digression, which the reader would not be ill pleased to find laid in his way. To return to the Scotch memorial.

“ The Queen Dowager took two methods to gain her point : the one was, to show favour to all those who had received no favour of the Duke during his government, because they were in the interest of England ; whereas he was at that time in the interest of France. The other was, she offered them a permission to live according to their conscience in religion : in conclusion, the Queen Dowager brought the parliament to give the matrimonial crown to the Dauphin ; but with this condition, that the Duke’s right should not be impaired by it.”

BOOK
VI.

1559.

When all this was obtained, the Queen forgot all her promises : “ She began with the greatest of the Scottish lords then in office, the Earl of Huntly, who was then Lord Chancellor, and the Duke’s particular friend ; she took the Great Seal from him, and gave it to one Rubay, a French advocate : she also put the Earl of Huntly in prison, and set a great fine on him, and left him only the name of Chancellor. She made another Frenchman Comptroller, who had the charge of the revenue of the crown : and she put all Scotchmen out of the secrets of the Council, committing these only to Frenchmen. She kept in several places garrisons of Frenchmen, who lived on discretion. She gave them no pay. She sent the revenue of the crown to France ; and brought over some base money that was decried in France, and made it current in Scotland. She also set up a mint for coining base money, with which she paid the soldiers. She tried to get the castle of Edinburgh into her hands, but that failed her. She gave such abbeyes as fell void to Frenchmen, as to her brother the Cardinal of Guise, and others : and for the space of three years she kept all that fell void in her own hands, except such as were of any value ; and these she bestowed on Frenchmen. Nor did she ever follow the advice of those

PART " lords, who, upon her first entering upon the govern-
 III. " ment, were named to be of the Council. Many in-

1559. " tercessions were made to her, upon these proceedings,
 " by the nobility : sometimes companies of them joined
 " together ; and sometimes they applied to her more
 " privately, for they foresaw that they could not be
 " borne long.

" The Queen Dowager set herself next to a practice,
 " which of all others was both the most dangerous and
 " the most dishonourable, to set aside the Duke and
 " his house : pains was taken to engage the Lord
 " James, and other lords, in it, who had no friendship
 " for the Duke ; to whom the Queen Dowager promised
 " that she would bear with their devotion in religion, if
 " they would join with her against the Duke, in favour
 " of the French. This encouraged them to do those
 " things, by which they incurred the censures of the
 " church ; and were by reason of a law not much
 " known brought in danger of the guilt of treason. So
 " process was ordered against them : and upon that
 " the Queen Dowager tempted them to engage in the
 " French interest ; but that not prevailing, they were
 " declared traitors. The rest of the nobility being
 " alarmed at this, the Queen Dowager brought out her
 " French garrisons, and disposed of their estates, and
 " entered into St. John's town in a warlike manner :
 " she changed the magistrates, and left a garrison in the
 " town. The whole nation was alarmed at this, and
 " were coming together in great numbers. But she not
 " having force enough to conquer the nation, sent for
 " the Duke and the Earl of Huntly, and employed
 " them to quiet the country ; promising that every
 " thing should be redressed in a parliament that should
 " be held next spring, with many other more particular
 " promises : upon this assurance, these lords quieted
 " the country. While this was a doing, the Duke's eldest

" son, being then in France, was sent for to court; but
 " he had secret advertisements sent him, that it was re-
 " solved to proceed against him to the utmost extremity
 " for heresy: upon which he kept out of the way, till
 " an order was sent to bring him in dead or alive:
 " upon that he made his escape; but they seized on a
 " younger brother of his, of the age of fifteen, and put
 " him in prison.

BOOK
 VI.
 1559.

" In Scotland the nobility had separated themselves,
 " trusting to the faith that the Duke had given them,
 " that all things should be kept quiet till the parlia-
 " ment. But some companies coming out of France to
 " Leith, the Queen Dowager ordered that town to be
 " fortified, and put twenty-two ensigns of foot, with
 " one troop of horse, in it. The nobility upon that
 " charged the Duke with breach of faith, who could do
 " no more but press the Queen to forbear to give such
 " cause of jealousy; but all was to no purpose. The
 " town was fortified; all the ammunition she had was
 " carried into it, and the French continued still to be
 " sending over more forces. The Duke, with the no-
 " bility, represented to the Queen Dowager, that it was
 " now plain she designed a conquest: but she despised
 " all their requests; for by this time the French thought
 " they were so strong, that they reckoned it would be
 " a short work to subdue Scotland. There were but
 " two or three mean lords, Bothwell and Seaton, that
 " kept company with the Queen Dowager; yet even
 " these signified to their friends, that their hearts were
 " with their countrymen. Upon all this, the Duke,
 " with the rest of the nobility, and with the barons
 " and burgesses of the realm, seeing an imminent dan-
 " ger to the whole nation, and no hope of remedy at
 " her hands, began deeply to consider the state of the
 " kingdom: their Sovereign Lady was married to a
 " strange Prince out of the realm, and wholly in the

PART “ hands of Frenchmen, without any council of her own
III. “ natural people ; and they considered the mortality of
 1559. “ her husband, or of herself without issue. The Queen
 “ Dowager, sister to the house that ruled all in France,
 “ persisted in ruining the liberties of her daughter the
 “ Queen’s subjects, on design to knit that kingdom for
 “ ever to France ; and so to execute the old malice of
 “ the French on the crown of England, of which they
 “ had already assumed the title.

“ They upon all these grounds were constrained to
 “ constitute a council for the government of the king-
 “ dom, and for the use of their Sovereign, to whom
 “ they had signified the suspension of the Queen Dow-
 “ ager’s authority ; maintaining, that, being sore op-
 “ pressed with French power, they had, as natural sub-
 “ jects, sufficient strength for that, though they are
 “ not able to stand against the power of France : but
 “ partly for the right of their Sovereign, and partly for
 “ the ancient rights of the crown, they have been forced
 “ to spend their whole substance ; yet they cannot
 “ longer preserve themselves from being conquered by
 “ the power sent over from France, a greater force
 “ being promised to be sent next spring. They there-
 “ fore lay the whole matter before the Queen of Eng-
 “ land’s ministers, then upon their borders, and com-
 “ mit their cause to her protection ; desiring nothing
 “ but that their country may be preserved from France,
 “ together with the rights of their Sovereign, and of the
 “ whole nation.”

To this they add a petition, “ that the numbers of
 “ French soldiers then within the kingdom might be
 “ removed speedily ; that so they might live quietly,
 “ and be suffered to offer to the King and Queen such
 “ articles as were necessary for the peace and good go-
 “ vernment of the kingdom, without alteration of their
 “ ancient liberties : this was signed by the Earl of Aran,

as he was then called, but that was his father's title ; **BOOK**
 for he had no higher title in Scotland : the son there- **VI.**
 fore signed James Hamilton. It was also signed by the **1559.**
 Earls of Argyle and Glencairn ; by Lord James, after-
 wards created Earl of Murray ; and by the Lords Boyd,
 Uchiltry, Maxwell, and Ruthen ; and by a son of the
 Earl of Huntly's, and a son of the Earl of Athol's ;
 both these families being at that time Papists. And
 thus, by the tenor of this whole paper, it appears, that
 religion was not pretended to be the cause of the war.

Upon the suspending the authority of the Queen
 Regent, I will here add a particular reflection, which
 will show what Archbishop Spotswood's sense was,
 when he first wrote his History of that transaction. He
 gives an account of the opinion that Willock and Knox
 delivered, when they were called and required to give
 it, which they did in favour of that suspension ; for
 which he censures the opinion itself in these words :
Howbeit the power of the magistrate be limited, and
their office prescribed by God, and that they may like-
wise fall into great offences ; yet it is no where per-
mitted to subjects to call their princes in question, or to
make insurrection against them : God having reserved
the punishment of princes to himself. Yet in a fair
 manuscript of that history, written with great care, as
 for the press, this whole period was first penned quite
 in another strain : *Allowing the states of the kingdom a*
right to restrain their prince, when he breaks through
rules ; only censuring clergymen's meddling in those mat-
ters : this is scored through, but so that it is still legi-
 ble ; and Spotswood interlined with his own hand the
 alteration ; according to which his book was printed.
 This manuscript belonged to me ; and forty-two years
 ago I presented it to the Duke of Lauderdale, and
 showed him that passage, on which he made great re-

PART flection. I cannot find out in whose hands that manu-
 III. script is fallen ; but whosoever has it, will, I hope, justify
 1559. me in this particular : for though I am not sure as to
 the words, yet I am very sure they are to this pur-
 pose.

Collect.
 Numb. 54.

When this representation and petition was brought to the Queen, Cecil drew up a state of the matter, which will be found in the Collection ; putting this as the question, *Whether it was meet that England should help Scotland to expel the French or not ?* For the negative he says, “ It was against God’s law to aid any “ subjects against their natural prince, or their mini- “ sters : it was also dangerous to do it ; for an aid se- “ cretly given, would be to no purpose : and an aid “ publicly given, would draw on a war ; and in that “ case, the French would come to any composition with “ the Scots, to join with them against England : since “ they will consent to any thing, rather than suffer “ Scotland to be united to the crown of England. He “ adds, It may also be apprehended, that the Emperor, “ the King of Spain, the Pope, and the Duke of Savoy, “ with the potentates of Italy, will join with the French “ King, rather than suffer these two kingdoms to be “ joined in one manner of religion ; and many within “ both kingdoms will not approve of this. But, in op- “ position to all this, he concludes for assisting the “ Scots.

“ He lays it down for a principle, that it is agreeable “ to the laws of God and of nature, that every prince “ and state should defend itself ; not only from perils “ that are seen, but from those that may probably come “ after : to which he adds, that nature and reason teach “ every person politic, or other, to use the same manner “ of defence that the adversary useth of offence. Upon “ these grounds he concludes, that England might and

“ ought to assist the Scots to keep out the French : and BOOK
 “ so earnest was that great statesman in this matter, VI.
 “ that he prosecutes it very copiously. 1559.

“ His first reason is that which the Scots would never
 “ admit, but he might think it proper to offer it to an
 “ English council ; that the crown of England had a
 “ superiority over Scotland, such as the Emperor had
 “ over Bohemia or Milan. He next shows that Eng-
 “ land must be in great danger from the French, if they
 “ became the absolute masters of Scotland. Upon this
 “ he runs out to show, that the French had been long
 “ enemies to England ; that they had been false and
 “ double in all their treaties with them these 700 years ;
 “ and that the last peace was forced from them by their
 “ poverty. That France could not be poor above two
 “ years ; nor could it be long without war ; beside the
 “ hatred that the house of Guise, who then governed
 “ the French councils, bore to England. They call in
 “ question the Queen's title, and set up their own against
 “ it : and at the treaty of Cambray they set that pre-
 “ tension on foot ; but it was then stopped by the wisdom
 “ of the Constable : yet they used means at Rome to
 “ get the Queen to be declared illegitimate ; upon which
 “ the bull was brought into France : and at the solem-
 “ nities, in which the King was killed, the arms of Eng-
 “ land and Ireland were joined with the Queen of Scots'
 “ arms. The present embroilment in Scotland is the
 “ stop that now restrains them from carrying these pre-
 “ tensions further ; but as soon as they can, they will
 “ certainly set them on foot : and the assaulting Eng-
 “ land by the way of Scotland is so easy, that it is not
 “ possible to avoid it, but by stopping the progress of
 “ that conquest. A war by the way of Scotland puts
 “ France in no danger, though it should miscarry ; but
 “ England is in the utmost danger, if it should succeed.
 “ He concludes, That as the matter was of the last im-

PART "portance, so no time was to be lost; since the preju-
 III. "dice, if too long delayed, would be irrecoverable."

1559.

What further steps were made in the secret debating of this point, does not appear to me, but by the conclusion of the matter: for the Queen sent forces, under the command of the Duke of Norfolk, to the borders of Scotland. What followed upon that is set out fully in the common historians, and from them in my former work.

Collect.
 Numb. 55.

But a copy of the bond of association, into which the lords and others in Scotland entered, (the original of which remains still in the possession of the Dutchess of Hamilton,) will set out more particularly the grounds that they went on. It is in the Collection: and it sets forth, "that they promised faithfully, and in the presence of God, that they would to the utmost of their power set forward the reformation of religion, according to God's word; that the true preaching of it might have a free passage through the whole kingdom; together with the administration of the sacraments. And that they, considering the misbehaviour of the French among them, and the intolerable oppression of the poor by their soldiers, maintained by the Queen Dowager, under colour of authority, together with the tyranny of their captains, and the manifest danger of becoming their conquest, to which they were then reduced by fortifications on the sea-coast, and other attempts; do promise to join with the Queen of England's army, then come in to their assistance, for driving out those their oppressors, and for recovering their ancient liberty; that so they may be ruled by the laws and customs of their country, and by the natives of the kingdom, under the obedience of the King and Queen their Sovereign. And they promise that they shall hold no private intelligence with their enemies, but by the advice of the

“ rest, or at the least of five of their number : and **BOOK**
 “ that they shall prosecute this cause as if it were the **VI.**
 “ cause of every one of them in particular, and hold all **1559.**
 “ who withstand it as their enemies ; and that they
 “ will prosecute them as such, according to the orders
 “ of the Council ; to whom they refer the direction of
 “ the whole matter, promising in all things to submit
 “ to their arbitration.”

This was first subscribed at Edinburgh on the 27th of April, in the year 1560 ; and is signed by the Duke of Chatelherault, the Earls of Aran, Huntly, Argyle, Mortoune, and some others, whose hands are not legible ; and by the Lords Salton, Ruthen, Boyd, Ogilby, Uchiltre, the Abbot of Kinloss, and the Commendator of Kilwinniny : about 140 more subscribed it. This was the bond that was signed by those who were at that time at Edinburgh : and it is probable, that many other bonds of the same nature were signed about the same time, in other parts of the kingdom ; but they have not been so carefully preserved as this has been. The Earl of Huntly, though he continued still a Papist, signing it, shows, that either the ill usage he had met with from the Queen Dowager had shaken him in his religion, or that provocation and interests were then stronger in him than his principles. But I leave my conjectures to go on with the history.

On the 2d of November, Jewel being returned from the circuit which he was ordered to make, wrote, (in a letter to Peter Martyr, to be found in the Collection,) The great progress of superstition in Queen Mary's reign. Collect. Numb. 56.
 “ that the people were much better disposed to the
 “ Gospel, than it was apprehended they could be : but
 “ he adds, that superstition had made a most extraordinary progress in Queen Mary's short reign. The
 “ people were made believe, they had in many places
 “ pieces of the true cross, and of the nails with which
 “ Christ was crucified : so that the cathedral churches

PART III. 1559. " were dens of robbers ; and none were more violent
 " and obstinate, than those who had been before of their
 " body ; as if by that they would justify their falling
 " off from them. They had turned them all out. Hard-
 " ing went away, and would not change again. Smith,
 " who had been a violent opposer of Peter Martyr in
 " Oxford, fled towards Scotland ; but was taken on the
 " borders, and brought back ; and had abjured a fifth
 " time, and was then become a violent enemy to the
 " Papists." In another letter he tells him, " Smith was
 " married ; and that, being hated and despised by all
 " sides, he was forced to keep a public house." Jewel
 wrote, " that if they had more hands matters would go
 " well : but it was hard to make a cart go without
 " horses. He was glad to hear Peter Martyr was sent
 " for. But he owns he had his fears still, that though
 " things were begun well, they would not end so well.
 " He adds, *We are islanders in all respects.* Oxford
 " wanted him extremely. The Queen was then courted
 " both by the King of Sweden, and by Charles of Aus-
 " tria." It was then given out, that Sweden was full of
 mines of gold, and only wanted skill and industry to
 work them : but he writes, " Perhaps the Queen meant
 " to marry one nearer at hand : " (he gives no other
 hint in that letter, to let it be understood of whom he
 meant : probably it was Pickering ; as appears in an-
 other letter.) He concludes, " that though religion did
 " make a quick progress in Scotland, yet that the French
 " did not despair of bringing that kingdom back to their
 " obedience, and of restoring their religion in it."

The reve-
 nues of bi-
 shops less-
 ened, that
 they may
 be more
 diligent in
 their duty.

On the same day he wrote to Simler, who had con-
 gratulated him upon the news they had of his being to
 be promoted to a bishoprick. He wrote, " that there
 " was yet nothing but a nomination of him. He adds,
 " We hope our bishops shall be pastors, labourers, and
 " watchmen. And that they may be better fitted for

"this, the great riches of bishopricks are to be diminished, and to be reduced to a certain mediocrity :
 "that so, being delivered from that king-like pomp, and
 "the noisiness of a courtly family, they may live in
 "greater tranquillity, and may have more leisure to take
 "care of Christ's flock with due attention."

On the 5th of November he wrote, "that he found
 "debates raised concerning the vestments, which he
 "calls the habit of the stage, and wishes they could be
 "freed from it. He says, they were not wanting to so
 "good a cause : but others seemed to love those things,
 "and to follow the ignorance of some priests, who were
 "stupid as logs of wood, having neither spirit, learning,
 "nor good life to commend them ; but studied to re-
 "commend themselves by that comical habit ; while no
 "care was taken of learning, or of breeding up of youth.
 "They hoped to strike the eyes of the people with those
 "ridiculous trifles. These are the relics of the Amo-
 "rites : that cannot be denied. He wishes, that, at
 "some time or other, all these may be taken away and
 "extirpated, to the very deepest roots. He complains
 "of a feebleness in the councils : they still talked of
 "bringing Martyr over ; but he feared that we looked
 "too much toward Saxony, to expect that. Some
 "among them, he says, were so much set on the matter
 "of the habits, as if the Christian religion consisted in
 "garments : but we (says he) are not called to the con-
 "sultations concerning that scenical apparel : he could
 "set no value on those fopperies. Some were crying
 "up a golden mediocrity ; he was afraid it would prove
 "a leaden one."

On the 16th of November he wrote, in a letter, to be
 found in the Collection, "that the doctrine was every
 "where purely preached. There was in many places
 "too much folly concerning ceremonies and masks.
 "The crucifix continued still in the Queen's chapel.

VOL. III.

K k

BOOK VI.

1559.

Collect. Numb. 57.

Jewel's opinion of the disputes concerning the vestments.

Collect. Numb. 58.

The Queen kept a crucifix in her chapel.

PART "They all spake freely against it, but till then without
III. "effect. There was a secret piece of worldly policy in

1559. "this, which he did not like. He complains of the
"uncertain and island-like state of their affairs: all was
"loose at present. He did not see in what they would
"settle; and did not know but he should be obliged to
"return back to Zurick again."

Bishops
consecrat-
ed.

In December and January, the consecration of the
bishops came on. But here a stop lies in my way. For
some months, the thread of the letters to Zurick, by
which I have been hitherto guided, is discontinued.

The Em-
peror pro-
poses to
the Queen
a match
with his son
Charles.
Cott. Libr.
Galba, 11.

At this time an ambassador came over from Ferdinand
the Emperor, with letters dated the 11th of February
1560, proposing a match between his son, Arch-Duke
Charles, and the Queen. He had writ of it to her be-
fore, but thought fit to follow these letters with a formal
embassy. The originals are yet extant. The Queen
wrote an answer in form, and signed it: but it seems,
that was on some considerations not thought fit to be
sent: for the original is in the Paper-Office. It will be
found in the Collection.

Collect.
Numb. 59.
She ex-
cuses her-
self.

"The Queen wrote, that, examining her own senti-
ments in that matter very carefully, she did not per-
ceive any inclination to change her solitary life; but
found herself more fixed to continue still in it. She
hoped the Emperor would favourably receive, and
rightly understand what she wrote to him. It might
indeed seem strange, considering her age and her cir-
cumstances: but this was no new resolution, nor taken
up on the sudden, but was the adhering to an old set-
tled purpose. There had been a time, in which her
accepting some honourable propositions might have
delivered her out of very great dangers and troubles:
on which she would make no other reflections, but
that neither the fear of danger, nor the desire of li-
berty, could then move her to bring her mind to

“hearken to them. She will not, by a plain refusal, BOOK
 “seem to offend him; yet she cannot give occasion, by VI.
 “any of her words, to make him think that she accepts 1560.
 “of that, to which she cannot bring her mind and will.”
 Dated the 5th of January 1559. Signed, Your Majesty’s
 good sister and cousin, *Elizabeth*: countersigned, *Rog.*
Ascham.

The first letter of Jewel’s, after his consecration, is A conference concerning the Queen’s crucifix. Collect. Numb. 60.
 on the 4th of February 1560. It is in the Collection. He tells Peter Martyr, “they were then engaged in the
 “question about the lawfulness of having images in
 “churches, (which he calls *lis crucularia*.) It could
 “scarce be believed to what a degree of folly some men,
 “who were thought to have a right judgment of things,
 “were carried in that matter. There was not one of all
 “those whom he knew, that was drawn to be of that
 “mind, besides Cox. There was to be, a conference
 “concerning it the day following. Parker and Cox on
 “the one hand, and Grindal and he on the other hand,
 “were to debate it in the hearing of some of the Coun-
 “cil: he could not but laugh within himself, when he
 “thought what grave and solid reasonings would be
 “brought out on this occasion. He was told, that it
 “was resolved on to have crucifixes of silver or tin set
 “up in all churches; and that such as would not obey
 “this, would be turned out of their bishopricks: if that
 “was true, he would be no longer a bishop. White,
 “Bishop of Winchester, Oglethorp of Carlisle, Bain of
 “Coventry and Litchfield, and Tonsal of Duresme,
 “were lately dead.” In another he writes, “that Bon-
 “ner was sent to the Tower, and that he went to see
 “some criminals that were kept there, and called them
 “his *friends* and *neighbours*: but one of them answered,
 “Go you beast into hell, and find your *friends* there;
 “for we are none of them. I killed but one man upon
 “a provocation, and do truly repent of it; but you

PART "have killed many holy persons, of all sorts, without
 III. "any provocation from them, and are hardened in your
 1560. "impenitence."

The zeal
 in singing
 psalms.

On the 5th of March he writes, "that a change ap-
 peared now more visibly among the people. Nothing
 promoted it more than the inviting the people to sing
 psalms. That was begun in one church in London,
 and did quickly spread itself not only through the
 city, but in the neighbouring places: sometimes at
 Paul's Cross there will be 6000 people singing to-
 gether. This was very grievous to the Papists: the
 children began to laugh at the priests as they passed
 in the streets; and the bishops were called hangmen
 to their faces. It was said, White died of rage. He
 commends Cecyl much."

Sands, Bi-
 shop of
 Worcester,
 much of-
 fended at
 the image
 in the
 Queen's
 chapel.
 Collect.
 Numb. 61.

Sands, Bishop of Worcester, wrote in a letter on the
 1st of April 1560, which will be found in the Collec-
 tion, "that after he returned from executing the injunc-
 tions, and preaching in the north, he was pressed to
 accept of the bishoprick of Worcester: he saw, if he
 absolutely refused it, the Queen would have been
 highly offended. He found it more truly a burden
 than an honour. The doctrine of the sacrament was
 pure, to which he and his brethren were resolved to
 adhere firmly as long as they lived. There was yet
 a question concerning images: the Queen thought
 that was not contrary to the word of God; and it
 seemed convenient to have a crucifix, with the blessed
 Virgin and St. John, still in her chapel. Some of
 them could not bear this: we had, says he, according
 to our injunctions, taken away all the images that we
 found in churches, and burned them. We see super-
 stitious people plainly worship this idol: upon this,
 he had spoken freely to the Queen; with that she was
 so displeased as to threaten to deprive him: she was
 since that time more softened, and the images were

“ removed : but the popish vestments were still used ; BOOK
 “ yet he hoped that should not last long. He laments VI.
 “ much that Peter Martyr was not sent for. It was 1560.
 “ easy to guess what it was that hindered it ; it was the
 “ pretence of unity, that gave occasion to the greatest
 “ divisions.”

Parkhurst came into England in the end of the year 1559. He went to his church of Cleve in Gloucestershire, and kept out of the way of the court. He writes, that many bishops would be glad to change conditions with him. He heard he had been named to a bishoprick, but he had dealt earnestly with some great men to spare him in that : when he came through London, both Parker and a privy-counsellor had pressed him to accept of one, but he could not resolve on being miserable.

Sampson had been with the other divines at Zurick, and was reckoned by them both a learned and a pious man : while he was coming to England with the rest, he was informed that a bishoprick was designed for him ; so he wrote while he was on his journey to Peter Martyr for his advice, as will be found in the Collection, in this, “ whether it was lawful to swear to the Queen, as Supreme Head of the Church under Christ. He thought Christ was the sole Head of the Church, and no such expression of any inferior head was found in the Scripture. He thought likewise, that the want of discipline made that a bishop could not do his duty. Many temporal pressures lay upon bishops, such as first-fruits and tenths, beside the expence of their equipage and attendance at court : so that little was left for the breeding up of youth, for the relief of the poor, and other more necessary occasions, to make their ministry acceptable. The whole method of electing bishops was totally different from the primitive institution. The consent either of the clergy

Sampson's
exceptions
at his being
made a bi-
shop.

Collect.
Numb. 62.

PART "or people was not so much as asked. Their super-
III. "stitious dress seemed likewise unbecoming. He wrote
 1560. "all this only to him, not that he expected that a
 "bishoprick should be offered him; he prayed God
 "that it might never happen. He was resolved to apply
 "himself to preach, but to avoid having any share in
 "the government till he saw a full reformation made
 "in all ecclesiastical functions, both as to doctrine and
 "discipline, and with relation to the goods of the church.
 "He desires his answer as soon as was possible."

Peter Martyr answered his letter on the 1st of November; but what it was, can only be gathered from Sampson's reply to it: he received it on the 3d of January, and answered it on the 6th, 1560. It is in the
 Collect. Numb. 63. Collection. "They were then under sad apprehensions,
 "for which he desires their prayers in a very solemn
 "manner. They were afraid lest the truth of religion
 "should either be overturned, or very much darkened
 "in England. The Bishops of Canterbury, London,
 "Ely, and Worcester, were consecrated: Pilkinton
 "was designed for Winchester; Bentham for Coven-
 "try and Litchfield; and Peter Martyr's Jewel for
 "Salisbury.

"Things still stuck with him; he could neither have
 "ingress nor egress: God knew how glad he would be
 "to find an egress; let others be bishops, he desired
 "only to be a preacher, but no bishop. There was yet
 "a general prohibition of all preaching: and there was
 "a crucifix on the altar still at court, with lights burn-
 "ing before it: and though by the Queen's order images
 "were removed out of churches all the kingdom over,
 "yet the people rejoiced to see this was still kept in the
 "Queen's chapel. Three bishops officiated at this al-
 "tar; one as priest, another as deacon, and a third as
 "sub-deacon, all before this idol, in rich copes: and
 "there was a sacrament without any sermon. He adds,

“ that injunctions were sent to preachers not to use BOOK VI.
 “ freedom in the reprovng of vice ; so he asks what 1560.
 “ both Martyr, Bullinger, and Bernardin thought of
 “ this : whether they looked on it as a thing indifferent,
 “ and what they would advise him to do, if injunctions
 “ should be sent out, requiring the like to be done in
 “ all churches ; whether they ought to be obeyed, or
 “ if the clergy ought not to suffer deprivation rather
 “ than obey ? Some among themselves thought that all
 “ this was indifferent, and so might be obeyed. He un-
 “ derstood that the Queen had a great regard to Ber-
 “ nardin Ochino ; so he desires that he would write to
 “ her, to carry on the work of God diligently. He
 “ solemnly assures them, that she was truly a child of
 “ God : but princes had not so many friends to their
 “ souls, as they had to their other concerns. He wishes
 “ they would all write to her ; for she understood both
 “ Italian, Latin, and Greek well. So they might write
 “ in any language to her : but if they wrote, they must
 “ write as of their own motion, and not as if any com-
 “ plaints had been writ over to them.”

On the 13th of May he wrote again, “ that a bishop-He refused a bishop-
rick.
 “ rick had been offered to him, but that he had refused
 “ it : and he desires Peter Martyr, to whom he wrote,
 “ not to censure this till he knew the whole state of the
 “ matter : but he rejoices that Parkhurst was made
 “ Bishop of Norwich.” And by his letter, it seems Nor-
 “ wich was the bishoprick that was offered to him. Park-
 “ hurst wrote soon after his promotion to Martyr, and as-
 “ sured him there was no danger of setting up Lutheranism
 “ in England : only he writes, “ We are fighting about
 “ ceremonies, vestments, and matters of no moment.”

Jewel wrote to Peter Martyr, on the 22d of May,
 “ that the church of Salisbury was so struck with
 “ thunder, that there was a clift all down for sixty foot :
 “ he was not got thither ; so he could not tell whether

PART III. "foolish people made judgments upon this, with relation to him, or not. He writes, that Bonner, Fecknam, Pole, Scory, and Watson, were all put in prison for railing at the changes that were made. The Queen expressed great firmness and courage in maintaining the establishment she had made in matters of religion. He tells him, that not only Cecyl and Knolls desired to be kindly remembered to him, but Petre likewise, which perhaps he did not look for."

A peace made in Scotland.

On the 17th of July he writes to him, "that there was a peace made in Scotland, and that the French were sent away. Scotland was to be governed by a council of twelve persons; only all greater matters were to be referred to a parliament. He writes, that the Duke of Holstein was come over to see the Queen, and was nobly treated by her, and made a Knight of the Garter: the King of Sweden's coming over was still talked of." After Jewel had been some time in his diocese, he wrote to Gualter on the 2d of November, 1560, "that he now felt what a load government was to him, who had led his life in the shade, and at study, and had never turned his thoughts to government; but he would make up in his diligence what might be otherwise wanting: the opposition he met with from the rage of the Papists was incredible."

On the 6th of November he wrote, that May, Dean of St. Paul's, who was designed to be Archbishop of York, was dead: it does not appear on what views that see was so long kept void, after the rest were filled. Parker was much troubled at this, and wrote very earnestly about it to Cecyl. The letter will be found in the Collection. "There were great complaints in the north: the people there were offended to see no more care had of them; and for want of instruction they were become rude: this was like to have an ill in-

Collect.
Numb. 64.
Parker's
care in the
northern
sees.

“fluence on the quiet and order of the country. It **BOOK**
 “was perhaps so long delayed for the advantage the **VI.**
 “Queen’s exchequer made by the vacancy : but if, for **1560.**
 “want of good instruction, the people should grow
 “savage like the Irish, it might run to a far greater
 “charge to reduce them. Why should any person
 “hinder the Queen’s zeal to have her people taught to
 “know and to fear God ? If those hitherto named for
 “the north were not liked, or not willing to go thither,
 “he proposed that some of those already placed might
 “be removed thither. And he named Young, Bishop
 “of Saint David’s, for York ; and the Bishop of Ro-
 “chester, Guest, for Duresme : and if any suspicions
 “were had of any of their practising to the prejudice
 “of their successors, there were precedents used in for-
 “mer times to take bishops bound to leave their churches
 “in no worse case than they found them. He had
 “pressed them formerly with relation to those vacant
 “sees ; he saw the matter was still delayed : he would
 “never give over his importunity till the thing was
 “done ; which he hoped he would instantly promote,
 “out of the zeal he bore to souls so dear to Christ.”

This he wrote on the 16th of October ; so it does not appear if the design for May was then so well fixed as Jewel apprehended. The hint in this letter of the practices of bishops, was occasioned by the ruinous leases that the popish bishops had made ; for seeing the change that was designed, they had by the law at that time so absolute a power over their estates, having no restraints laid on them but those of their own canons, that their leases, how mischievous soever to their successors, were good in law. The new bishops in many places had scarce necessary subsistence, or houses left them, and were to be supported by dignities given them *in commendam* : and it was perhaps suggested, that they, to procure a little better subsistence

The popish
bishops
made great
alienations.

PART III. to themselves, might be prevailed on to prolong, or confirm such leases.

1560.
See more
of this in
the Annals
of the Ref.
chap. 12.

Collect.
Numb. 65.

Jewel's
Apology
published.

The Archbishop's importunity had its effect : for in February thereafter, Young was removed to York ; and Pilkinton, a learned and zealous man, was made Bishop of Duresme. And thus the sees of England were filled. Jewel, in a letter soon after to Peter Martyr, in February 1560, which will be found in the Collection, " wishes " that all the remnants of former errors, with all the " rubbish, and even the dust that might yet remain, " might be taken away : he wishes they could have " obtained it. It seems by this, that their wishes had " not prevailed. The Council of Trent was then to be " opened again, but the Queen was resolved to take no " notice of it. He gives an account of his Apology, that " was then set out." This has been so often printed, and is so well known, that it is not necessary to enlarge more upon it : as it was one of the first books published in this reign, so it was written with that strength and clearness, that it, together with the defence of it, is still to this day reckoned one of our best books. In that letter he writes of the Countess of Lenox, the mother to the Lord Darnly, " that she was a more violent Papist than even Queen Mary herself. Her son was " gone to Scotland, and it was believed he might marry " the Queen of Scotland : the Earl of Hartford had a " son by the Lady Catharine Gray ; some called him a " bastard, but others affirmed that they were married. " If that was true, then, according to King Henry's " will, he must be the heir of the crown. But he " adds, *Ah ! unhappy we, that cannot know under what Prince we are to live !* He complains that schools are " forsaken, and that they were under a great want of " preachers. The few they had were every where well " received." He writes in another letter, " that in Queen " Mary's time, for want of good instruction, the Ana-

“baptists and Arians did much increase; but now they
“disappeared every where.” BOOK VI.

The popish clergy, when they saw no appearance of
any new change, did generally comply with the laws
then made; but in so untoward a manner, that they
made it very visible that what they did was against both
their heart and their conscience. This put the bishops
on receiving many into orders that were not thoroughly
well qualified; which exposed them to much censure.
They thought that, in that necessity, men of good hearts
that loved the Gospel, though not so learned as might
be wished for, were to be brought into the service of
the church: but pains was taken, and methods were
laid down, to breed up a more knowing race of men, as
soon as was possible. 1560.

I turn now to show how the affairs of religion went
on, particularly with relation to Scotland; of which
mention was made in some of Jewel's letters.

But before I open this, I will give an account of two
instruments sent me from Scotland, that came not to
my hands but since the pages 482 and 483 were printed
off; yet they are so important, that, as I have put them
in the Collection, so I will give a short account of them Collect.
Numb. 66.
here. On the 19th of April, fifteen days after the
Queen of Scotland had passed that secret fraudulent
protestation formerly mentioned, when the articles of
the marriage were mutually signed, it was not only
provided that the crown of Scotland, in case she should
die without children, should descend to the Duke of
Chatelherault and his heirs, the instrument itself being
published in the French Collection; but the Dauphin
did, on the same day, set his seal to a charter, still pre-
served at Hamilton, setting forth the faith and engage-
ments that the King his father had formerly made, to
secure to the Earl of Aran the succession to the crown
of Scotland, in case the Queen should die without chil-

PART dren; to which he promises he will pay all obedience.
 III. He confirms and ratifies that promise for himself and
 1560. his successors; promising in good faith, (*bona fide*,) that in that case he will not only suffer that lord to enjoy that crown, but that he will assist and maintain him in it.

The promise made by his father, King Henry, to which this refers, bears date the 17th day of June, anno 1549; and was sent over to Scotland, in order to the getting of Queen Mary to be sent to France. By it the King promised, in the word of a King, that in case the Queen should die without children, he would assist the Earl of Aran in the succession to the crown, against all that should oppose him. These instruments I have put in the Collection, as lasting memorials of the fidelity and sincerity of that court; to give a just precaution to posterity in future ages: by which it will appear, how little contracts, promises, and public stipulations are to be depended on, where a secret protestation, lodged in a clandestine manner, is set up to make all this void; which, I hope, will not be soon forgotten, or neglected.

But to return from this digression, which, though a little out of its place, seemed too important to be omitted.

The French
grew weary
of carrying
on the war
in Scotland.

The distraction that France was in, made it not easy to them to carry on the war of Scotland, by reason of the charge that the sending forces to so great a distance put them to: whereas it was but a short march to the English, to go to the assistance of the Lords of Scotland; so they were willing to make up matters the best they could by a treaty. Commissioners were appointed to treat on both sides. In the mean while, the Queen Regent of Scotland died; so Cecyl and Wotton, who were employed by the Queen in that treaty, apprehending the French might, upon this emergent, study

to gain more time, wrote to the Queen for positive orders. BOOK VI.

A letter was written to them on the 15th of June, 1560.
signed by five privy-counsellors; which is in the Col-
lection, taken from the original. Collect. Numb. 67. By it it appears, that
this treaty was then a secret, which they saw must soon
break out; so the persons employed in Scotland ad-
vised the acquainting King Philip with it, because they
looked on it as brought very near a total agreement. To
this the Queen's Council agreed. Those in Scotland
apprehended, that perhaps the French would, upon the
Regent's death, go away and leave the kingdom with-
out coming to any agreement. If they should do so,
they did order them to advise with the Duke of Nor-
folk, and the lords of Scotland in league with them,
how the French may be forthwith expelled the king-
dom, without any loss of time: for, by all the adver-
tisements they had, they understood that the French
intended to gain time as much as was possible. If the
French desired to have some of their colleagues in the
town, to assist them in managing the treaty, that was
by no means to be granted: but if they desired the as-
sistance of such Scottish men as were of their faction,
and if their friends in Scotland consented to it, that
seemed reasonable. The rest of the letter relates to one
Parrys, an Irishman.

The treaty, by reason of the weakness of the French It was brought to a good end.
force, was soon brought to a conclusion. The French were
to be sent away in three weeks. An assembly of the States
was to meet, and to settle the affairs of the kingdom: it
was to be governed by a council of twelve persons; of
whom the King and Queen were to name seven, and the
States to choose five: and by these, all affairs were to be
governed, they being made accountable to the parliament.
The last article was, "that the King and Queen should

PART “not use the title or arms of England and Ireland any
III. “more.”

1560.

**Collect.
Numb. 68.**

When matters were brought to a settlement in Scotland, the Scots sent up the Earls of Morton and Glencairn to the Queen. Their message will best appear from the instructions, which will be found in the Collection, copied from the original, that is still preserved, and in the possession of the Dutchess of Hamilton: by which, “the estates of parliament, considering how the “two kingdoms lay joined together, and reflecting on “the inconveniences that they and their ancestors had “suffered by continual wars, and on the advantages of “a perpetual friendship between them; therefore they “did order a proposition of marriage to be made to the “Queen of England, with the Earl of Aran; who, “after his father, in default of succession of the Queen’s “body, was the next heir of the crown of Scotland. “And they resolved, that an embassy should be appointed, to make the proposition in the honourablest “manner that could be devised. They also order “thanks to be given to the Queen for the good will “she has on all occasions expressed for their kingdom; “which she had particularly declared of late, by the “support she had given them for their relief; by the “means of which, they enjoyed their present quiet. “And they were also ordered to move the Queen, to “send strict commands to her wardens, and other officers on the borders, to suppress all broken men, and “to restrain all thefts.” These instructions were appointed to be sealed, and subscribed by six of every estate; and that was to be held as valid, as if all the estates had sealed and subscribed them.

**Signed by
the three
estates.**

This order of parliament is signed by the Archbishop of St. Andrew’s, the Bishops of Dunkeld, Galloway, Dumblane, Argyle, and the elect Bishop of the Isles:

and by as many abbots and priors; the Prior of St. Andrew's, afterwards Earl of Murray; the Abbot of Arbroth, afterwards Marquis of Hamilton; the Abbots of Newbotle and Culros; the Commendator of Kilwinning, and the Prior of Lochleven. So many of the ecclesiastical state of both ranks concurring, shows, that they rejoiced in the deliverance that they had from the servitude, under which the French had almost brought them.

These instructions are also signed by the Duke of Chatelherault, who subscribed only *James*; and by the Earls of Argyle, Athol, Morton, Crawford, and Sutherland; and by the Lords Erskine, Gordon, Salton, Hay, Uchiltry, Innermeth, Boyd, Lindsay, Gray, and some others, whose names cannot be read: and by eight provosts of boroughs. But no seals are in this noble instrument; so probably it was an authentic duplicate, that was deposited in that family, to remain as an undoubted proof of the right of succeeding to the crown of Scotland, if the Queen had left no issue of her own body.

To this an answer was given, which I have put in the Collection, from the draught of it in Cecyl's hand. Collect. Numb. 69. The Queen of England's answer to it.

"The Queen received the hearty thanks that the three estates sent her very kindly; and was glad the assistance she had given then, was so well accepted by them. She was so well satisfied with the effects it had, that if the like cause should happen, in which they might need aid from her, she assures them it shall not be wanting. The Queen did perceive the difference between the benefits bestowed by her father, on many of the nobility of that nation, which were supposed to be to the prejudice of the kingdom, and so had not the success expected; and those they had received from her, which were directed to the safety of the realm: so the diversity in the bestowing

PART III. " them, had made this diversity in the acceptation of
" them.

1560.

" She received that proposition of marriage as a
" mark of the good intention of the estates for knitting
" the kingdoms in amity ; in offering to her the best
" and choicest person that they had, though not with-
" out danger of the displeasure of the French King.
" But the Queen was not disposed presently to marry ;
" though the necessity of the kingdom might perhaps
" constrain her afterwards to it. Yet she desired, that
" the Earl of Aran might not forbear to marry on her
" account : but that the amity between the two king-
" doms might remain firm ; since it was so necessary
" to their preservation, though no marriage were made
" upon it. The Queen had heard a very good report of
" the Earl of Aran, and thought him a noble gentleman
" of great worth, and did not doubt but he would prove
" to be such. In the last place, the Queen desired the
" States would reflect on former practices among them,
" and would continue in a good agreement among
" themselves, and not fall into factions. And she con-
" cluded with a promise, that on her part no reasonable
" thing should be neglected, that might tend to the
" common defence of both the realms against any
" common enemy."

The death
of Francis
the Second.

Things went on pursuant to this treaty ; to which it
was not thought the French would have any regard,
when their affairs should be in a better condition. The
apprehensions of that were soon at an end. In Decem-
ber 1560, the union which that kingdom had with
France was totally broke by the death of Francis the
Second ; so that Mary Queen of Scotland had nothing
left but her own strength to depend upon. The treaty
of Leith being in all other points executed, the Queen
ordered both Throckmorton, her ordinary ambassador
in France, and the Earl of Bedford, whom she had sent

over extraordinary, to demand Queen Mary's ratification of that treaty : which I shall open more particularly, because, upon this occasion, that jealousy was raised between the two Queens, that ended so fatally to the one. The Queen of Scots used many shifts to excuse her not doing it.

In a letter of Throckmorton's, of the 16th of April, which is in the Collection, he tells the Queen, " that " having pressed the Queen of Scots to it ; she said, " She had not her Council about her, particularly the " Cardinal of Lorrain her uncle, by whom she was advised in all her affairs : nor had she heard from her " Council in Scotland. She promised, that when she " heard from them, and had advised with her Council " about her, she would give an answer that should satisfy the Queen. But her natural brother, the Lord " James, being come over to her, the Queen had commanded Throckmorton to demand again the confirmation of the treaty. Upon which, the ambassador " sent a gentleman to know her pleasure, when he " should wait on her, to receive it from her hand. This, " as he wrote to her, was desired by the Queen, as a " mean to make them live hereafter in all love, peace, " and amity together. And nothing could so demonstrate that Queen's intention, to entertain this as the " establishing that knot of friendship between them, " for both their quiet and comfort, which was at that " time the only refuge of them both." Of this he sent the Queen his mistress a copy.

On the 1st of May, Mr. Somer, whom the ambassador had sent to Nancy, where the Queen of Scotland was at that time, came back with her answer ; which is in the Collection ; it being the only original paper that ever I saw in her hand. Dated from Nancy, the 22d of April 1561.

VOL. III.

L 1

BOOK
VI.
1560.Collect.
Numb. 70.Collect.
Numb. 71a.

PART
III.

1561.
The Queen
of Scotland
did not
ratify the
peace.

Collect.
Numb. 72.

“ She writes, she was then leaving that place ; so she
 “ could give no answer till she came to Rheims, where
 “ she intended to be at the King’s coronation : and she
 “ says, that Lord James was only come to do his duty
 “ about her, as his Sovereign Lady, without any charge
 “ or commission whatsoever.” This Throckmorton sent
 to the Queen, together with a letter from the Cardinal
 of Lorraine to the same purpose, which he also sent her
 in a letter, which will be found in the Collection ; in
 which he writes, “ that though Somer had used the
 “ best means he could, to put the Scottish Queen in
 “ mind of the promise she had made to the Earl of
 “ Bedford, and to Throckmorton himself, yet he could
 “ get no other answer from her.” The ambassador was
 ordered by the Queen not to be present at the coro-
 nation : so he did not know when or where he should
 see her ; for it was said, she did not intend for some time
 to come into the neighbourhood of Paris : he therefore
 proposed to the Queen to send a letter of credit by Mr.
 Somer to that Queen ; and with it to order him to go
 and demand her answer. By that Queen’s discourse
 with Lord James, it seemed she did not intend to give
 a plain answer, but still to shift it off : but he thought
 the Queen insisting on it by a person sent express to
 stay for an answer, she would be able to judge from
 thence what measures she ought to take. The Queen
 of Scotland had said to the ambassador, that she in-
 tended to give Lord James a commission, with a charge
 to look to the affairs of Scotland during her absence ;
 and he, when he took leave of her, left one to bring
 that after him : but that person was come with letters
 from that Queen, but with no commission ; and he un-
 derstood by him that she had changed her mind, and
 would give no such commission, till she should come to
 Scotland herself : nor would she dispose of any thing

till then. This was easily seen to be on design to let **BOOK**
all people understand on what terms they might expect **VI.**
benefices, grants, or other favours from her. 1561.

The true reason why she would not employ Lord ^{She is} James was, because she found she could not draw him ^{jealous} from his devotion to the Queen, nor from his resolu- ^{of Lord} tion to observe the late treaty and league between Eng- ^{James.} land and Scotland: and it is added, that the Cardinal of Lorraine saw he could not draw him from his religion, though he used great persuasions to prevail on him. Upon these accounts the ambassador wrote over, " that " he saw he might be much depended on: so he advises " the Queen to consider him as one that may serve her " to good purpose, and to use him liberally and honour- " ably. He had made great acknowledgments of the " good reception he met with as he came through Lon- " don: so he on many accounts deserved to be both " well used, and much trusted. The Queen of Scot- " land had great expectations from the popish party " and from the Earl of Huntly in particular. He gives " in that letter an account of a great tumult that had " then happened at Paris, upon occasion of an assembly " of Protestants for worship in a private house, in the " suburbs. The rabble met about the house, threaten- " ing violence: upon which those within, seeing per- " suasions had no effect, fired and killed seven or eight " of them. The court of parliament sent an order to " suppress the tumult, and disperse the multitude. This " was plainly contrary to the edict lately made: but " the ambassador apprehended that greater disorders " would follow." And that I may end all this matter at once,

I find in a letter of Jewel's, that is in the Collection, ^{The Duke} that the Duke of Guise sent to the Princes of Germany, ^{of Guise} to divert them from assisting the Prince of Condé; ^{, studied to} as- ^{divert the} suring them, that he himself was very moderate in the ^{Queen} ^{from assist-}

PART points of religion, and had very favourable thoughts of
III. the Ausburg Confession : he studied also to persuade
 1561. the Queen, that the war which was then breaking out
 ing the Prince of in France was not for religion ; but was a conspiracy
 Condé. against the government : which he hoped she as a Queen
 Collect. would not assist. At the same time the Queen of Scot-
 Numb. 78. land sent the Queen a present of a diamond of value,
 with some very fine verses made by Buchanan, then in
 her court. She also in her letters vowed a perpetual
 friendship with her, and wrote, that she would pass
 But in vain. through England. Yet the Queen saw through all this,
 and was not diverted by it from assisting the Prince of
 Condé. Upon this the Duke of Guise did openly charge
 all the disorders in France on her, as the principal au-
 thor of them : by this the mask was thrown away, and
 these jealousies broke out into an open war. Jewel
 wishes the Queen had begun it sooner, and that the
 Princes of Germany would follow her example, now
 that she was engaged, and had sent one to engage them
 likewise.

By that time the Queen of Scotland had got by sea
 into her kingdom : she alone had her mass, which was
 put down all the kingdom over.

There was this year an extraordinary bad season
 through every quarter of the year, and perpetual rains.
 There was also much talk of many monstrous births,
 both by women, and beasts, hogs, mares, cows, and
 hens : some births were without heads, or heads of a
 strange form ; and some without arms or legs. Very
 probably things of that sort were magnified by those
 who reported them ; and, no doubt, they were made
 the presages of some dismal events to be looked for ; it
 being ordinary in all great changes to enlarge, and even
 to forge stories of that sort, on design to alarm people
 with the apprehensions of some signal judgments to fol-
 low after such unusual warnings. This last letter being

written some time after the great Convocation that settled our reformation, is mentioned here out of its place, BOOK VI.
 to finish a matter to which I have nothing here to 1561.
 add.

But now to return to give an account of that famous meeting of the clergy. I must first lament that here Proceedings in Convocation.
 there is another total stop in the correspondence with Zurick, that has hitherto furnished me with so many particulars. I cannot think but that there were copious accounts of the progress of matters in it given to them, if not during the Convocation, in which the bishops were no doubt much employed, yet at least soon after the prorogation, which was in the beginning of April : but in all the volume of letters that is sent me, I find not one, either during their sitting, or after it was ended, till that I mentioned last, which is of the 14th of August. Being then destitute of those authentic vouchers, I must gather up what remains I could find to give a clear account of the great transactions then on foot.

The imperfect abstract which I have often vouched, gives us but a very defective account of their proceedings. Their first session was on the 13th of January. Day Provost of Eaton preached. Parker told them, they had now in their hands an opportunity of reforming all things in the church. The Queen did earnestly desire it, and so did many of the nobility. He sent them to choose a Prolocutor, and recommended Nowel, Dean of St. Paul's, to them. They chose him upon that ; and on the 16th of January, Parker exhorted them to consider against the next session what things wanted a reformation. On the 19th, he sent for the Prolocutor, who came up, with six of the clergy. He said they had before them some sheets of matters to be offered for a reformation, which were then referred to be considered by a committee. He also said, that the Articles set forth in a synod at London, in King Edward's time, were

PART likewise before a committee to be considered; and, if
III. need was, to be corrected by them. On the 20th, the
 1562. Archbishop and Bishops were for the space of three
 hours consulting secretly about those Articles. On the
 22d, they were again for three hours considering the
 same matter. On the 25th, they were two hours. And
 on the 27th, they were for three hours more upon the
 same matter. And on the 29th of January, all in the
 Upper House agreed unanimously in settling the Arti-
 cles of Religion, and they subscribed them.

Some alter-
 ations made
 in the Ar-
 ticles of
 Religion.

The differences between these Articles, and those set
 forth by King Edward, are very particularly marked in
 the collections, added to my second volume. The most
 material is the leaving out that express declaration that
 was made against the corporal presence of Christ in
 the sacrament, which I then thought was done in com-
 pliance with the opinion prevalent among the people of
 the popish persuasion, who were strangely possessed
 with the belief of such a presence: but I am convinced,
 by the letters sent me from Zurick, that in this great
 regard was likewise had to the Lutheran churches, with
 whom a conjunction was much endeavoured by some:
 so that perhaps this was one consideration that made it
 be thought convenient to suppress the definition then
 made in this matter by the Convocation: but it does
 no way appear to me, whether these words were sup-
 pressed by the consent of the Convocation; or whether
 the Queen ordered it to be done, either by a direct com-
 mand, or by denying to give her assent to that part of
 the Article.

I must also add, that the Homily *against wilful
 Rebellion*, for that is its true title, was not drawn up
 till some years after this Convocation had settled those
 Articles; in which the title of the Homilies are set
 forth, though it is added in the manuscript to the rest,
 with the title *against Rebellion*. It is plain, both by the

body of the Homily, and by the prayer at the end of **BOOK VI.**
 it, that it was penned after the rebellion that was raised 1562.
 by the Earls of Northumberland and Westmorland,
 many years after this ; and while there were wars
 abroad on the account of religion. This I do not write
 as disagreeing in any part from the doctrine delivered
 in that Homily, but only as an historian, in order to the
 setting matters of fact in a true light.

But now I go on as the minutes, or rather the abstracts, lead me. When the great matter of the Articles was settled, the Bishops of London, Winchester, Lincoln, and Hereford, were appointed to draw articles of discipline. On the 3d of February, the Archbishop and Bishops were in a secret conference for the space of three hours. On the 5th of February, a committee was appointed to examine the Catechism. Then the Prolocutor, with six of the clergy, brought up the Articles of Religion, that had been sent by the Archbishop to the Lower House : many had already subscribed them ; but he proposed, that such as had not yet done it might be required either to subscribe them in the Lower House, or to do it in the presence of the bishops. Upon this the Upper House ordered that the names of those who had not subscribed them might be laid before them next session. On the 10th, the Prolocutor, with eight of the clergy, came up and told the bishops, that many had subscribed since their last meeting : upon that the bishops renewed their former order.

On the 13th, there was some treaty concerning the subsidy ; but on that day, and, it seems, on some days following, there were very warm debates in the Lower House, of which I shall give a particular account, from Great debates concerning some alterations in the Book of Common Prayer.
 a copy taken from the minutes of the proceedings of Collect. Numb. 74.
 the Lower House, which will be found in the Collection. On the 13th day, six articles were offered to the House, which follow ; First, "That all holy-days, except

PART III. "Sundays, and the feasts that related to Christ, should
"be abrogated. Second, That in the Common-Prayer

1562. "the minister should always turn his face towards the
"people, so as to be heard by the people, that they
"might be edified. Third, That the ceremony of the
"cross in baptism may be omitted, as tending to super-
"stition. Fourth, That forasmuch as divers communi-
"cants were not able to kneel during the time of com-
"munion, for age, sickness, and other infirmities ; and
"some also do superstitiously both kneel and knock ;
"that the order of kneeling may be left to the discre-
"tion of the ordinary within his jurisdiction. Fifth,
"That it be sufficient for the minister in time of saying
"divine service and ministering the sacraments to use
"a surplice ; and that no minister say service, or mini-
"ster the sacraments, but in a comely garment, or ha-
"bit. The sixth and last is, That the use of organs be
"removed." The words are strictly as I took them
from the copy of the Journal : but the sense of the 5th
is not clear, except we suppose the word *once* to have
come after *the minister* ; so that it was proposed that it
should be sufficient *once* to use the surplice.

A practice
common a-
mong Pa-
pists of
knocking
on their
breasts, say-
ing *Culpa
mea*, at the
elevation.

There arose great disputes concerning these propo-
sitions ; some approving, and others rejecting them :
and it was proposed by some, to refer the matter to the
Archbishop and Bishops. Many protested, that they
could in no manner consent to any one of them ; since
they were contrary to the Book of Common-Prayer,
that was ratified by an act of parliament : nor would
they admit of any alteration of the orders, rules, rites,
or regulations, already settled by that book. There
were public disputations between learned men, some
approving, and others condemning the propositions.
Thirteen persons were named as the disputants. In
conclusion, the House was divided, and counted : forty-
three voted for the propositions, and thirty-five voted

against them, and that no change should be made in **BOOK VI.** the Book of Common-Prayer then established. But **1562.** when the proxies were counted, those who were for the propositions were in all fifty-eight; and those who were against them were fifty-nine: so that they were agreed to by a majority of eight of those who were present, and who had heard the disputations; yet those were out-voted by a majority of one vote, by the proxy of an absent person. All their names are set down in the paper. One thing observable is, that in this minute it is added, that those who rejected the Articles seemed to go chiefly on this ground; that they were contrary to the authorized Book of Common-Prayer: as if this had been the assuming an authority to alter what was settled by the legislature. It is not to be imagined, but if the affirmative vote had prevailed, that it could not be intended to have any other effect, but to make an address to the parliament, to alter the book in those particulars. I have represented this matter as I found it, and will not make any judgment upon it, either on the one side, or the other; but will leave that to the reader, and go on with what remains in the abstract.

This debate in the Lower House put a stop to the business of the Convocation for six days, in which they only treated of the subsidy. On the 19th of February, some articles were communicated to the Lower House; and they were ordered to bring them back, with their observations on them. These seem to relate to benefices and dilapidations. And they were ordered to inquire how many benefices were then vacant. On the 22d, the subsidy was agreed to. On the 24th, the Prolocutor being absent, his surrogate, with the clergy, were called up; and the ingrossed bill of subsidy was read to them, and they all unanimously agreed to it.

On the 26th, a *Book of Discipline* was brought to the Upper House by the Prolocutor, with ten of the

But by one proxy it was carried, that none should be made.

A Book of Discipline offered by the Lower House.

PART clergy ; to which, as it was then said, the whole clergy
 III. did unanimously consent. This was referred to the

1562. Archbishop, with the Bishops of London, Winchester, Chichester, Hereford, and Ely. On the 1st of March, the Prolocutor brought up some additional articles, which they desired might be added to the *Book of Discipline*, that they had formerly brought up. The Archbishop gave them the book back again ; and ordered them to bring it back, together with the additions they had made to it.

On the 3d of March, the Prolocutor brought up the Catechism ; to which, he said, the House did unanimously agree : the considering of it was committed to the Bishops of Winchester, Hereford, Lincoln, and Coventry. (This seems to be the Catechism drawn by Nowel, Dean of St. Paul's.) After that, there was a conference among the bishops for the space of two hours. On the 5th of March, the Prolocutor brought up the *Book of Discipline*, with some additional chapters : one only is named, *Of Adultery*, with an &c. On the 10th, there was a conference among the bishops for two hours ; and on the 12th, for two hours more ; and on the 16th, for other two hours ; and on the 19th, for two hours more. After that, nothing is marked, but several prorogations, till the 10th of April, that the royal writ came for the prorogation. And this is all that remains of this great Convocation.

It does not appear what that *Book of Discipline* was. In one of the Zurick letters, as shall be told afterwards, it is said, that some things agreed to in this synod were afterwards suppressed. This, I suppose, relates to that *Book of Discipline* : but whether this was the reformation of the ecclesiastical laws, prepared by Cranmer, and others ; or whether it was modelled in any other manner, cannot now be certainly known.

But to this account that I have given, I will add some

other particulars, that the diligent Mr. Strype has laid together; referring my reader for a more copious account of them to his Annals.

BOOK VI.

1562.

“ It was designed to have Jewel’s Apology joined to the Articles : which Archbishop Parker intended should be in all cathedral and collegiate churches, and also in private houses. Other things prepared for the Convocation.

“ Degrees of punishment were proposed for all those who should preach, write, or speak in derogation or contempt of this book ; for the first, second, and third offence.

“ It was proposed, that all vestments, copes, and surplices should be taken away ; that none but ministers should baptize ; that the table for the sacrament should not stand altar-wise ; that organs and curious singing should be removed.

“ That godfathers and godmothers should not answer in the child’s name ; but should recite the Creed, and desire that the child may be baptized in that faith. Here on the margin Parker writes, *Let this be considered.*

“ That none should be married, but after the banns have been asked for three Sundays, or holy-days. On the margin Parker writes, *Priests solemnizing matrimony, without testimonial of banns, to suffer grievous punishment.*

“ That the Queen and parliament be prayed to renew the act for empowering thirty-two persons to gather ecclesiastical laws, and to review those appointed in King Edward’s time.

“ That all peculiar jurisdictions should be extinguished, so that the whole diocese be put under the jurisdiction of the bishop ; that no appeal shall lie in cases of correction. On the margin Parker writes, *Let this be thought on.*

PART III. "That in every cathedral a divinity lecture should
be read thrice a week.

1562. "That the apparel of the clergy should be uniform.
"That no person, not in priests orders, shall hold any
"ecclesiastical dignity above a year, if he does not take
"priests orders. Parker writes, *Too much : and let it*
"be thought on.

"That none be capable of a dispensation for a plu-
"rality of benefices with cure of souls, if he is not at
"least a master of arts, and they not beyond twelve
"miles distance. Parker writes, *Let it be considered,*
"whether this ought to be restrained to degrees.

"That if any has two cures, he shall reside con-
"stantly on one, unless at some times to go and preach
"in the other, under the pain of losing the greater
"benefice. Parker adds, *Let this be thought on.*

"That no patron sell, or assign the next advowson ;
"and that no grant be made of any benefice till it is void.

"That all incumbents or curates shall, on Sundays
"in the afternoon, offer to teach the children of the
"parish the Catechism."

The next paper is, of *Remedies for the poverty of Mini-
sters' livings* : but the *remedies*, how good soever, were
not found practicable ; so all this matter was let fall.

A further
continua-
tion of the
History, be-
yond my
former
work.

With this convocation, my design of continuing the
History of the Reformation is now concluded. And
here I once intended to have ended my work : but the
letters sent me from Zurick give me such a full and
particular account of the first unhappy breach that was
made in our church, with so many curious incidents,
that I am by these invited to set that matter out in a
clear light, since I have it before me, in the letters of
the most eminent of our bishops.

A contro-
versy about

There was a great variety of sentiments among our

reformers on this point; *Whether it was fit to retain* BOOK
an external face of things, near to what had been prac- VI.
tised in the times of popery, or not? The doing that 1564.
 made the people come easily in to the more real changes ^{the use of}
 that were made in the doctrines, when they saw the ^{things in-}
 outward appearances so little altered: so this method ^{different.}
 seemed the safer, and the readier way to wean the peo-
 ple from the fondness they had for a splendid face of
 things, by that which was still kept up. But on the
 other hand it was said, that this kept up still the incli-
 nation in the people to the former practices: they were
 by these made to think, that the reformed state of the
 church did not differ much from them; and that they
 imitated them. And they apprehended, that this out-
 ward resemblance made the old root of popery to live
 still in their thoughts; so that if it made them conform
 at present more easily to the change that was now
 made, it would make it still much the easier for them
 to fall back to popery: so, for this very reason, they
 stood upon it; and thought it better to put matters in
 as great an opposition to the practices of popery as was
 possible, or convenient.

The Queen had, in her first injunctions, ordered the
 clergy to wear seemly garments, and square caps; add-
 ing, that this was only for decency, and not to ascribe
 any worthiness to the garments: but when the *Act of*
Uniformity was settled, whereas in the Liturgy passed in
 the second year of King Edward, *cofes* and other gar-
 ments were ordered to be used; but in the second book,
 passed in the 6th year of that King, all was laid aside,
 except the *surplice*; yet the Queen, who loved magni-
 ficence in every thing, returned back to the rules in
 King Edward's first book, till other order should be
 taken therein by the Queen. There was likewise a
 clause put in the *Act of Uniformity*, empowering the
 Queen to *ordain and publish such further ceremonies*

PART *and rites, as might be for the advancement of God's*
III. *glory, the edifying of his church, and the due reverence*
 1564. *of Christ's holy mysteries and sacraments.*

Great diver-
sity in prac-
tice.

The matter being thus settled, there followed a great diversity in practice; many conforming themselves in all points to the law; while others did not use either the surplice, or the square caps and hoods, according to their degree. This visible difference began to give great offence, and to state two parties in the church. The people observed it, and run into parties upon it. Many forsook their churches of both sides: some, because those habits were used; and some, because they were not used. It is likewise suggested, that the Papists insulted, upon this division among the Protestants; and said, it was impossible it should be otherwise, till all returned to come under one absolute obedience.

The Queen
wrote to
the Arch-
bishop of
Canterbury
to bring all
to an uni-
formity.

Upon this, the Queen, in January 1564, wrote to the Archbishop of Canterbury, "reflecting (not without some acrimony of style) on these diversities; as if they were the effect of some remissness in him, and in the other bishops: requiring him, that, with the assistance of other bishops, commissioned by her for causes ecclesiastical, he should give strict orders, that all diversities and varieties, both among the clergy and people, might be reformed and repressed; and that all should be brought to one manner of uniformity through the whole kingdom, that so the people might quietly honour and serve God."

Upon that, some of the bishops met; six in all. Of these, four were upon the ecclesiastical commission; the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishops of London, Ely, and Rochester: and with these joined the Bishops of Winchester and Lincoln. They agreed on some rules and orders meet to be observed, not as equivalent to the word of God, nor as laws that did bind the conscience, from the nature of the things considered in themselves;

or, as that they did add any efficacy, or more holiness BOOK VI.
to the public prayers and sacraments ; but as temporary 1564.
orders, merely ecclesiastic, and as rules concerning decency, distinction, and order for the time.

They begun with articles of doctrine and preaching : Orders set out by the bishops.
“ That all preachers should study to preach to edification, and handle matters of controversy with sobriety
“ and discretion ; exhorting people to receive the sacrament frequently, and to continue in all obedience to
“ the laws, and to the Queen’s injunctions. All former licences are declared void ; but are to be renewed to
“ such as the bishop thought meet for the office ; they
“ paying only a groat for the writing. If any should
“ preach unsound doctrine, they were to be denounced
“ to the bishop, but not to be contradicted in the
“ church. All were to be required to preach once in
“ three months, either in person, or by one in their
“ stead. Such as were not licensed to preach, were to
“ read the Homilies, or such other necessary doctrine
“ as should be prescribed. In the sacrament, the principal minister was to wear a cope ; but at all other
“ prayers, only surplices. That deans and prebendaries
“ should wear a hood in the choir, and preach with
“ their hood : all communicants were to receive the sacrament kneeling. Then follow rules about tolling the
“ bell when people die ; about the altar, the font, and
“ who may be godfathers in baptism. That no shops
“ be opened on Sundays. That bishops shall give notice against the day of giving orders, that all men
“ may except against such as are unworthy. That
“ none be ordained, but within their own diocese, except those who have degrees in the University. Rules
“ follow for licences, for archdeacons to appoint curates
“ to get some texts of the New Testament by heart ;
“ and at the next synod to hear them rehearse them.
“ Ordinaries were to guard against simoniacal practices,

PART “and none were to marry within the Levitical degrees.
III. “Then follow rules of their wearing apparel, gowns,
 1564. “and caps; they were to wear no hats but in travel-
 “ing: but those who were deprived, might not wear
 “them. To this they added a form of subscription to
 “be required of all that were to be admitted to any
 “office or cure in the church, to this effect; that they
 “should not preach but by the bishop’s special licence;
 “that they should read the service distinctly and audi-
 “bly; that they should keep a register book, and use
 “such apparel, specially at prayers, as was appointed;
 “that they should endeavour to keep peace and quiet
 “in their parishes. That they should every day read a
 “chapter in the Old and New Testament, considering
 “it well, to the increase of their knowledge; and in
 “conclusion, that they should exercise their office to
 “the honour of God, and the quiet of the Queen’s sub-
 “jects, and observe an uniformity in all laws and or-
 “ders already established; and that they should use
 “no sort of trade, if their living amounted to twenty
 “nobles, or upwards.”

The proceedings here in England are fully collected by Mr. Strype; so, as to these, I refer my reader to the account given by him, which is both full and impartial. I shall only give the abstracts of the letters that passed in this matter between our bishops and Bullinger, Gualter, and the other divines in Zurich. These foreign divines did not officiously, nor of their own motion, intermeddle in this matter. It began in January 1564; for then the Queen wrote to the Archbishop, and in March the order was settled by the Archbishop and Bishops: but when the Bishops saw the opposition that many were making to this, Sampson and Humphreys being the most eminent of those who opposed it, who were in great reputation, particularly in the university of Oxford, where the one was Dean of Christ’s-

Church, and the other was President of Magdalen's, and Divinity Professor ; and they were much distinguished for their learning, piety, and zeal in religion : upon this, Horn, Bishop of Winchester, wrote on the 16th of July to Gualter, and stated the matter clearly to him. I have put his letter in the Collection, though it is already printed : but I thought it convenient to insert it, since the letters that are to follow depend upon it.

BOOK VI.

1565.

Horn Bishop of Winchester writes to Zurick upon these diversities in practice. Collect. Numb. 75.

After he had mentioned some of Gualter's works, he commends those of Zurick for not being imposed on by the artifices of the French ; in which he hopes those of Bern would follow the example that they had set them. He comes to the affairs of England, " where they were " still in fear of the snares of the Papists, who took " great advantage, from a question lately raised about " vestments, to say Protestants could never agree together. The act of parliament was made before they " were in office ; so that they had no hand in making " it : by it the vestments were enacted, but without " any superstitious conceit about them, the contrary " being expressly declared. What was once enacted " in parliament could not be altered, but by the same " authority. The bishops had obeyed the law, thinking " the matter to be of its nature indifferent : and they " had reason to apprehend, that if they had deserted " their stations upon that account, their enemies might " have come into their places. Yet upon this there " was a division formed among them : some thought " they ought to suffer themselves to be put from their " ministry rather than obey the law ; others were of a " different mind. He desires that he would write his " opinion of this matter as soon as was possible. They " were in hope to procure an alteration of the act in the " next parliament : but he apprehended there would be " a great difficulty in obtaining it, by reason of the opposition the Papists would give them ; for they hoped

VOL. III.

M m

PART III. "that if many should leave their stations; they might
 "find occasions to insinuate themselves again into the
 1565. "Queen's favour."

Collect.
 Numb. 76.
 Answers
 from
 thence,
 justifying
 those who
 obeyed the
 laws.

It seems he wrote a letter in the same strain to Bullinger, as will appear by his answer of the 3d of November, which will be found in the Collection. "He writes, that he had heard of the division among them from others; but not knowing the whole state of the question, he was not forward to give his opinion till he had his letter. He laments this unhappy breach among them: he approves their zeal, who wished to have the church purged from all the dregs of popery: on the other hand, he commends their prudence, who would not have the church to be forsaken, because of the vestments. The great end of the ministry was edification; and that was not to be abandoned but upon very good grounds: especially when the deserting their stations was like to make way for much worse things: and that they saw either Papists or Lutherans would be put in their places, and then ceremonies would be out of measure increased. No doubt, they had brought many persons of all sorts to love the purity of doctrine; but what a prejudice would it be to these to open such a door, by which swarms of abuses might creep in among them: this they ought carefully to prevent. As for those who first made those laws, or were zealous maintainers of them, he confesses he is not pleased with them. They acted unwisely, if they were truly of the reformed side; but if they were only disguised enemies, they were laying snares with ill designs: yet he thinks every thing of that sort ought to be submitted to, rather than that they should forsake their ministry: and since it was declared that those vestments were to be used without any superstitious conceit, he thinks that ought to satisfy men's consciences. But in the

“ mean while he proposes to them, to press the Queen **BOOK VI.**
 “ and the nobility to go on and complete a reformation, **1565.**
 “ that was so gloriously begun. He knew that in many
 “ places questions were at that time moved concerning
 “ the extent of the magistrate’s authority ; he wishes
 “ these might be every where let alone : certainly mat-
 “ ters of that nature ought not to be meddled with in
 “ sermons : there may be an occasion to debate about
 “ them in parliament, and it may be proper to speak to
 “ the Queen, and to her counsellors, in private about
 “ them. Upon the whole matter he concludes, that as
 “ on the one hand he would be tender in dealing with
 “ men of weak consciences ; so on the other hand he
 “ proposes St. Paul’s rule in such cases, of *becoming all*
 “ *things to all men* : he circumcised Timothy, that he
 “ might not give offence to the Jews ; though at the
 “ same time he condemns those who were imposing the
 “ yoke of the Judaical law, as necessary in the begin-
 “ nings of Christianity.”

When Sampson and Humphreys understood in what Bullinger
 a strain Bullinger and Gualter had written concerning Bullinger writes to those who would not obey them.
 the vestments, they wrote, on the 16th of February, a
 copious account of the grounds on which they founded
 their refusal to obey these orders. Their letters came
 to Bullinger on the 26th of April ; and he answered
 them on the 1st of May. This will be found in the
 Collection. “ He puts them in mind of Peter Martyr’s Collect. Numb. 77.
 “ opinion in a like matter, when he was at Oxford ; to
 “ which he could add nothing. He could not approve
 “ of any persons officiating at an altar, on which there
 “ was a crucifix ; and in a cope, on the back of which
 “ there was a crucifix. He tells them how both he and
 “ Gualter had answered Horn’s letter on the subject :
 “ and he sent them copies of these letters. He would
 “ be extreme sorry, if these did not give them satis-
 “ faction. He prayed earnestly to God for them. He

PART III. " had a great dislike to all controversies of that sort ;
 1565. " and did not willingly meddle in them : he did think
 " that laws might be made prescribing decent habits to
 " the clergy, which may be reduced to that branch of
 " St. Paul's character of a bishop, that he ought to be
 " *κοσμίος*, which may be rendered decent, as well as we
 " have it of *good behaviour*. Nor was this the reviving
 " the Levitical law. Every thing is not to be called
 " Levitical, because it was practised by the Jews. The
 " Apostles commanded the converts to Christianity to
 " abstain from things strangled, and from blood. The
 " maintaining the clergy by the tithes, came from laws
 " given to Jews ; and from them we have the singing
 " of psalms among us : so things are not to be rejected
 " because of some conformity to the Mosaical institu-
 " tion. Nor can this be called a conformity to popery :
 " nor is every thing practised among them to be rejected
 " on that account ; otherwise we must not use their
 " churches, nor pronounce the Creed ; nor use the
 " Lord's Prayer ; since all these are used by them. It
 " was in this case expressed, in the orders set out lately
 " by them, that the habits were not enjoined on the
 " superstitious conceits of the Papists : they were only
 " to be used in obedience to the law. It savours too
 " much of a Jewish, or of a monastic temper, to put re-
 " ligion in such matters. If it is pretended, that the
 " obeying laws in matters indifferent was the giving up
 " our Christian liberty ; that would go a great way to
 " the denying all obedience, and might provoke the
 " magistrate to lay yet heavier loads on them. Habits
 " peculiar to the clergy was an ancients practice than
 " popery itself : St. John is said to have carried on his
 " head somewhat like a mitre ; and mention is made of
 " St. Cyprian's having a peculiar garment, called a
 " *dalmatica*. St. Chrysostom speaks of their white
 " garments. Tertullian tells us, that the heathens con-

“ verted to Christianity, quitted their *toga*, the Ro- BOOK
 “ man upper garment, and used the *pallium*, or cloak. VI.
 “ He wishes there were no impositions on the clergy 1565.
 “ in such matters : yet since this was an ancient habit,
 “ and was now enjoined, without making it a matter of
 “ religion ; he wishes they would not set too great a
 “ value upon it, but yield somewhat to the present
 “ time ; and that they would consider it as a thing in-
 “ different, and not affect to dispute too subtilly about
 “ it ; but to behave themselves modestly. They had
 “ put a question to him, Whether any thing may be
 “ prescribed that is not expressed in Scripture ? He did
 “ not approve of laying on a load of such things on
 “ people’s necks ; but some things might be appointed
 “ for order and discipline. Christ kept the feast of the
 “ dedication, though appointed by no law of God. If
 “ it is said, the things commanded are not necessary,
 “ and are of no use, yet they are not for that to be con-
 “ demned, nor are schisms to be raised on that account.
 “ Many things are again repeated in this letter, that
 “ were in his letter to Horn.”

A copy of this was sent to Horn ; and both Grindal That letter was printed in England.
 and he, apprehending the good effect that the printing it
 might have, in settling the minds of many that were
 much shaken by the opposition that was made to the
 orders that had been set out, printed it here. So that it
 was not necessary for me to put it in the Collection, if
 I did not intend to lay the chief papers relating to this
 matter so together, as to set it all in a clear light.

Upon this Sampson and Humphreys wrote over to
 Zurick, complaining of the printing of their letter, and
 carrying their complaints against the constitution of
 the church much further than to the matter of the
 vestments : they complain of the music and organs ; of
 making sponsors in baptism answer in the child’s name ;
 of the cross in baptism ; of the court of faculties ; and

PART
III.1565.
Collect.
Numb. 78.

the paying for dispensations; all which will appear fully in a letter of theirs in the Collection, which they wrote to them in July. "They acknowledge their letter had not fully satisfied them: they do not think the prescribing habits to the clergy merely a civil thing; they think St. Paul's *κοσμίος* belongs to the ornaments of the mind. And add, How can that habit be thought decent, that was brought in to dress up the theatrical pomp of popery? The Papists gloried in this our imitation of them. They do approve of setting rules concerning order, but that ought not to be applied to this, that overturns the peace and quiet of the church, in things that are not either necessary, or useful; that do not tend to any edification, but serve to recommend those forms, which all do now abhor. The Papists themselves glory in this, that these habits were brought in by them; for which they vouch Otho's Constitution, and the Roman Pontifical. They were not against the retaining any thing that was good, because it had been abused in popery.

"They affirm, that in King Edward's time the surplice was not universally used, nor pressed; and the copes, then taken away, are now to be restored. This is not to extirpate popery, but to plant it again; and, instead of going forward, is to go back. It was known, how much virtue and religion the Papists put in the surplice; and at this day it is held in as great esteem, as the monks' habits were wont to be. The use of it may by degrees bring back the same superstition. They did not put religion in habits; they only opposed those that did: and they thought that it gave some authority to servitude, to depart from their liberty. They hated contention, and were ready to enter into friendly conferences about this matter. They do not desert their churches, and leave them exposed to wolves; but, to their great grief, they are

“ driven from them. They leave their brethren to
 “ stand and fall to their own masters ; and desire the
 “ same favourable forbearance from them, though in
 “ vain hitherto. It was by other men’s persuasion
 “ that the Queen was irritated against them : and now,
 “ to support these orders, all that is pretended is, that
 “ they are not unlawful ; it is not pretended that there
 “ is any thing good or expedient in the habits. The
 “ habits of the clergy are visible marks of their profes-
 “ sion ; and these ought not to be taken from their
 “ enemies. The ancient fathers had their habits ; but
 “ not peculiar to bishops, nor distinct from the laity.
 “ The instances of St. John, and Cyprian, are singular.
 “ In Tertullian’s time, the *pallium* was the common ha-
 “ bit of all Christians. Chrysostom speaks of *white*
 “ *garments*, but with no approbation : he rather finds
 “ fault with them. They had cited Bucer ; but he
 “ thought that the orders concerning habits, by reason
 “ of the abuse of them in the Church of England, ought
 “ to be taken away, for a fuller declaration of their abhor-
 “ rence of Antichrist, for asserting the Christian liberty,
 “ and for removing all occasions of contention. They
 “ were far from any design of making a schism, or of
 “ quarreling. They will not condemn things indif-
 “ ferent as unlawful : they wish the occasion of the
 “ contention were removed, that the remembrance of
 “ it might be for ever buried. They, who condemned
 “ the Papal pride, could not like a tyranny in a free
 “ church. They wish there might be a free synod to
 “ settle this matter ; in which things should not be car-
 “ ried according to the mind of one or two persons.
 “ The matter now in debate had never been settled by
 “ any general decree of a council, or of any reformed
 “ church. They acknowledge the doctrine of this
 “ church was now pure ; and why should there be any
 “ defect in any part of our worship ? Why should we

BOOK
VI.
1565.

PART “borrow any thing from Popery? Why should they
III. “not agree in rites, as well as in doctrine, with the

1565. “other reformed churches? They had a good opinion
 “of their bishops, and bore with their state and pomp;
 “they once bore the same cross with them, and preached
 “the same Christ with them: why are they now turned
 “out of their benefices, and some put in prison, only
 “for habits? Why are they publicly defamed? The
 “bishops had printed the private letter that they had
 “written to them, without their knowledge or consent.
 “The bishops do now stand upon it, as if the cause
 “were their own. But to let them see that the dis-
 “pute was not only about a cap, they sent them an
 “abstract of some other things, to which they wish
Collect. “some remedy could be found;” (which is in the Col-
Numb. 79. **lection;**) “and conclude with some prayers to God, to
 “quiet those dissensions, and to send forth labourers
 “into his vineyard.”

Collect. To this I have joined the answer that Bullinger and
Numb. 80. Gualter wrote to them. In it they tell them, “that
Bullinger’s “they did not expect that their letters should fully
answer to “satisfy them: they only wrote their opinion to them,
Sampson. “because they desired it. They were heartily sorry to
 “find, that they could not acquiesce in it. They would
 “engage no further in that matter: they could answer
 “their arguments, but they would give no occasion to
 “endless disputations. They thought it would be more
 “expedient to submit to those habits, and to continue
 “in the church, than, by refusing to use them, to be
 “forced to leave their churches. They went no further,
 “and did not approve of any popish defilements or
 “superstitions. Nor did they in any sort enter into
 “those other matters, of which they do now complain,
 “and of which they knew nothing before. These were
 “matters of much greater consequence than either the
 “surplices or the copes: so that it was to be hoped,

“ that the letter they had written about the habits BOOK VI.
 “ could not be stretched to these matters. There was 1565.
 “ nothing left to them, but to commend them to God,
 “ and to pray that he would quiet this unhappy dissen-
 “ sion among them, and give his church the blessings
 “ of peace. They only desire them to remember, that
 “ the ministers of the Gospel ought not only to hold
 “ fast the truth, but likewise to be prudent stewards,
 “ having a due regard to the times, bearing many things
 “ with patience and charity, and so maintain the peace
 “ of the church : and not to prejudice it by an over-eager
 “ or morose temper ; nor think it enough, that they had
 “ a good design ; but they must pursue it by prudent
 “ methods.”

Bullinger and Gualter, seeing the division like to be They wrote to the Earl of Bedford.
 carried much further than the matter of the vestments,
 thought the best office that they could do their friends,
 was, to write to the Earl of Bedford ; being well assured
 of his zeal in the matters of religion. They wrote to
 him on the 11th of September that year : the letter will
 be found in the Collection. They tell him, “ that Collect. Numb. 81.
 “ when they first heard of the contention raised about
 “ the vestments, they were afraid it might have a further
 “ progress. They, being desired, did give their opinion
 “ freely in the matter ; and thought, that, for things of
 “ so little importance, it was not fit for the clergy to
 “ desert their stations, and to leave them to be filled,
 “ perhaps, by wolves and deceivers. They were sorry
 “ to find, that their fears of the mischief that might fol-
 “ low on this contention were but too well grounded.
 “ They hear, that not only the vestments are com-
 “ plained of, but that many other things are excepted
 “ to, that plainly savour of popery. They are also
 “ sorry, that the private letter which they wrote should
 “ have been printed ; and that their judgment of the
 “ vestments was extended to other things, of which they

PART " could in no sort approve : so that their opinion in one
 III. " particular is made use of, to cast a load on persons,
 1565. " for whom they should rather have compassion in their
 " sufferings, than study to aggravate them. It gave
 " them a very sensible grief, to see the Church of Eng-
 " land scarce got out of the hands of their bloody ene-
 " mies, now like to be pulled down by their intestine
 " broils. So, having an entire confidence in his good
 " affection to the Gospel, they pray him to intercede
 " with the Queen and the nobility, in the parliament
 " that was soon to meet, for their brethren that were
 " then suffering ; who deserved that great regard should
 " be had to them, and that their faults should be for-
 " given them. It had appeared, what true zeal they
 " had for religion ; since the only thing, about which
 " they were so solicitous, was, that religion should be
 " purged from all the dregs of popery. This cause in
 " general was such, that those who promoted it proved
 " themselves to be worthy of the highest dignity.
 " Princes were to be nursing fathers to the church :
 " then they perform that office truly, when they not
 " only rescue her out of the hands of her enemies, but
 " take care that the spouse of Christ be not any way
 " stained with the false paint of superstition, or render
 " herself suspected, by having any rites unbecoming
 " the Christian simplicity. They do therefore earnestly
 " pray him, that as he has hitherto showed his zeal in
 " the cause of the Gospel, so he will at this time exert
 " himself ; and employ all the interest he has in the
 " Queen, and in the nobility, that the Church of Eng-
 " land, so happily reformed, to the admiration of the
 " whole world, may not be stained with any of the de-
 " filements or remnants of popery. This will look like
 " a giddiness in them : it will offend the weak among
 " them, and give great scandal to their neighbours,
 " both in France and in Scotland, who are yet under

“ the cross. The very Papists will justify their tyrannical impositions, by what is done now among them. ” BOOK VI.
 “ They lay all this before him with the more confidence, ” 1566.
 “ knowing his zeal, as they do.” They also wrote in the same strain to Grindal and Horn, as will be found in the Collection.

Collect.
Numb. 82.

When Grindal and Horn understood that those of Zurick were not pleased with the printing of their letter; of which they wrote to them, and sent with it the paper, in which were put the heads of those other things in the constitution of this church, to which they excepted; they both, jointly, wrote answer to them, in one letter to Bullinger and Gualter, on the 6th of February; which will be found in the Collection.

Collect.
Numb. 83.

“ They tell them, they had printed their letter, but
 “ had suppressed the names of those to whom it was
 “ directed. It had the good effect that they expected
 “ from it: for it had satisfied and settled the minds of
 “ many, who were upon the point of leaving their
 “ churches; and even the most troublesome were so
 “ far wrought on by it, that they were silent, and less
 “ violent in their opposition than they had formerly
 “ been. Some few were turned out, but they were not
 “ of the more learned sort; except Sampson, who, they
 “ acknowledge, was both pious and learned. Humphreys, and other learned men, were still continued
 “ in their stations. The letter that they had printed
 “ related only to that particular upon which it was
 “ written, and could not be applied to any thing else:
 “ nor was there any other question then on foot: so
 “ that it was a calumny to say, that their opinion was
 “ asked about any other matter. The noise and the
 “ complaints, that some had made, had very much provoked the Queen and many of the nobility against
 “ them. The Papists triumphed upon it, and hoped to
 “ come in again, and to fill the places, which were made

Grindal
and Horn's
letter,
showing
their uneasiness
in many
things.

PART " void upon their deserting their stations. They do

III. " solemnly attest the great God, that this dissension

1566. " was not raised by any fault of theirs ; and that it did
 " not lie at their door that those vestments were not
 " quite taken away. They may take their oaths upon
 " it, that they had used all possible means in that mat-
 " ter ; and had, with the utmost earnestness, and the
 " most sincere diligence, laboured to obtain that which
 " their brethren desired, and which they themselves
 " wished for. But since they could not do what wil-
 " lingly they would do, they must be content with
 " doing what they could do.

" As to the other particulars complained of, they
 " plainly write, they did not approve of that figured
 " music, together with the use of organs, that was con-
 " tinued in cathedrals. They enlarge on many other
 " particulars, and set forth the method of convocations.
 " They did in no sort approve of women's baptizing.
 " They gave way, till God should send better times, to
 " the form of making the sponsors in baptism answer
 " in the child's name ; for which St. Austin's authority
 " was pretended : but they did openly declare, that
 " they thought it was not convenient. Nor did they
 " approve of using the cross in baptism ; though the
 " words spoken when it was made did plainly show,
 " there was no superstitious conceit kept up by the use
 " of it. They also suffered the posture of kneeling in
 " the sacrament, with the due caution with which it
 " was enjoined, that was set down in King Edward's
 " book, declaring the reason for which that posture
 " was still continued. For the abuses of their courts,
 " though they cannot correct them entirely, yet they
 " did openly inveigh against them ; which they would
 " continue still to do, till they should be sent back to
 " hell, from whence they came. Every man had full
 " freedom to declare his mind as to all these abuses :

“ they had laboured in the last parliament all they BOOK
 “ could to purge out all errors and abuses ; which, VI.
 “ though it had not then the desired effect, yet they 1566.
 “ would not give over their endeavours to bring it to a
 “ happy conclusion : and this they would do, as they
 “ desired the continuance of their friendship and brotherly love.”

The others still insisted ; and Sampson in a letter from Oxford the 9th of February, 156 $\frac{1}{2}$, to Bullinger, reduces the questions concerning the habits to seven heads. First, If a habit different in form and colour from the laity ought to be enjoined to the clergy ? Secondly, If the Mosaical ceremonies may be brought into the Christian church ? Thirdly, If it is lawful to conform to Papists in habits and outward rites, and if it is fitting to borrow ceremonies from that corrupt church ? Fourthly, If the using a peculiar priestly habit is merely a civil matter, and if it does not savour of monkery, popery, and judaism ? Fifthly, If those who have hitherto used their liberty, may with a good conscience, upon the account of the Queen’s mandate, involve themselves and the church again in a yoke of bondage ? Sixthly, If the popish clerical habit can be called a thing that is indifferent ? And the seventh is, If they ought to use these habits, rather than desert their stations ? To these he begs him to send as soon as may be a full and copious answer.

A few days after this, Jewel wrote to Bullinger, (in Collect. Numb. 84. the letter that is in the Collection,) “ that he was so Jewel’s sense of those matters.
 “ attacked by many different hands, that it took him
 “ wholly up to prepare answers to them. He was not
 “ in the House of Lords during the last parliament, in
 “ which there was great heat for a whole month concerning the succession to the crown : but the Queen
 “ would suffer no declaration to be made in that matter,
 “ though it was most vehemently pressed, there appear-

PART "ing on both sides a great deal of earnestness. The
III. "Queen thought any such declaration would turn the
1566. "eyes of the nation too much towards the rising sun.
 "He says, the controversy about the vestments had
 "raised great heats. The Queen was fixed, and could
 "not be wrought on to let any change be made. Some
 "of their brethren were so eager in disputing about
 "that matter, as if the whole business of religion was
 "concerned in it. They leave their stations and
 "churches, rather than yield a little. Nor were they
 "at all moved from their stiffness by the most learned
 "letters that he and Gualter had written to them on
 "that subject; nor by all the advices of their friends.
 "He thanks God that they had no other, nor more im-
 "portant debates then among them. Cheyney, Bishop
 "of Gloucester, did indeed in parliament profess him-
 "self openly to be a Lutheran; but he was not like to
 "have many followers."

Collect.
 Numb. 85.

In a letter of his, that is also in the Collection, writ-
 ten to Bullinger on the 1st of March, 1565, he writes,
 "that he was overwhelmed with the books that the
 "Papists had written against him, and was by that
 "means engaged in a profound course of study. He
 "tells him how Cardinal Grandvell had intended to
 "cut off the intercourse between England and the Ne-
 "therlands; hoping by that means to provoke the Eng-
 "lish to break out into tumults: but the design turned
 "upon himself; for the English resolving to settle their
 "trade and staple at Embden, the people of Flanders
 "could not bear that. The Pope had sent one to Ire-
 "land to raise a flame in that island. But the Pope's
 "agent, who was an Irishman, was taken, and sent
 "over a prisoner to England. In Scotland the Queen
 "only had her mass, all the nation being averse to
 "it."

Reflections
 on this
 matter.

By Grindal and Horn's letters it appears, that they

had no other zeal in this matter, but to preserve the church in the Queen's favour, and in obedience to the laws: yet in letters that were upon this occasion written to Zurick, (a part of one is in the Collection,) by some others that adhered to Sampson, they let them know, that both Parker the Archbishop, and Grindal and Horn, were too much sharpened in this matter; therefore they pray them to use their endeavours to soften them more towards their brethren: but they acknowledge that Pilkinton of Duresme, Sands of Worcester, and Parkhurst of Norwich, had by their moderation made good all their promises; so they deserved that thanks should be given them: they desire further, that they would write to them all to proceed more mildly, and to endeavour to get those dregs of Popery to be removed; and that they would tolerate, at least connive at, those who did not approve them. I find Pilkinton complains in a letter to Gualter, "that the disputes which began about the vestments, were carried much farther, even to the whole constitution. Pious persons lamented this; Atheists laughed at it; and the Papists blew the coals, and were full of hopes upon it. The blame of all was cast on the bishops. He adds, I confess we suffer many things against our hearts, groaning under them: we cannot take them away, though we were ever so much set on it. We are under authority, and can innovate nothing without the Queen; nor can we alter the laws: the only thing that is left to our choice is, whether we will bear these things, or break the peace of the church."

Parkhurst in one letter writes, "Many good people are pleased with all that is done; but there are some things that do not please me." And in another he writes, "Matters of religion go on well: there are but a very few things that I dare find fault with. That which grieved him most was, that the lives of those

BOOK
VI.
1566.
Collect.
Numb. 86.

Other letters written
to Zurick
by some
bishops.

PART III. “ who professed the Gospel were so very contrary to it.
1566. “ The Gospel was never preached among them more
 “ faithfully, and with more zeal: he prays, God grant
 “ us his Spirit that we may walk in the Spirit, and
 “ mortify the works of the flesh.” The last letter that
 those of Zurich wrote on this subject was on the 26th
 of August, 1567, directed to the Bishops of London,
 Winchester, and Norwich. “ They express their grief
 “ that some learned men were deprived: they hear
 “ daily that some of those that had given good proofs of
 “ themselves in the Marian persecution were now not
 “ only turned out, but imprisoned: they hear that in
 “ Ireland many that have the same scruples, are yet kept
 “ out of all trouble by the Queen’s order, upon the in-
 “ tercession of their bishops: which makes it probable,
 “ that the like favour might be obtained in England, if
 “ the bishops would intercede with her Majesty for it;
 “ which may the rather be expected, since the bishops
 “ themselves acknowledge, that it were better for the
 “ church that these ceremonies were all laid aside; and
 “ affirm, that they had often moved in parliament that
 “ they might be taken away, that so the church might
 “ be more pure and less burdened. Therefore they do
 “ not doubt but that they, out of their piety, will en-
 “ deavour to procure favour to their brethren, to which
 “ they do very earnestly, but yet decently and mo-
 “ destly, press them.” Cox Bishop of Ely, who I do
 not find meddled much in these controversies, has in a
 letter to Gualter some very sad expressions; for which
 there is too much occasion at all times. “ When I
 “ consider the sins that do every where abound, and
 “ the neglect and contempt of the word of God, I am
 “ struck with horror, and tremble to think what God
 “ will do with us. We have some discipline among us
 “ with relation to men’s lives, such as it is; but if any
 “ man would go about to persuade our nobility to sub-

Collect.
Numb. 87.

“ mit their necks to that yoke, he may as well venture
 “ to pull the hairs out of a lion’s beard.”

BOOK
 VI.

Sands was of the same mind : he lamented the occa- 1566.
 sion of this dispute, and hoped to see an end put to it.
 In a letter to Bullinger from Worcester, dated the 3d
 of January 1566, he writes thus : “ The true religion of
 “ Christ is now settled among us, which is the most
 “ valuable of all things. The Gospel is no more shut
 “ up, but is freely preached ; and for other things, we
 “ need not be much concerned about them. There is
 “ some small dispute concerning the Popish vestments,
 “ whether they ought to be used or not ? But God will
 “ put an end to these things.”

*Contenditur
 aliquantu-
 lum de ves-
 titibus Papis-
 ticis utendis
 vel non uten-
 dis dabit
 Deus hic
 quoque s-
 nem.*

A few days after that, Jewel, in a letter, dated the 8th
 of February 1566, to Bullinger, (a part of it is in the
 Collection, the rest of it relates to the books he was
 then writing in defence of his Apology,) tells him, “ that
 “ the Queen seemed fixed in her resolution not to
 “ marry : he expresses his great concern that the heat
 “ raised on the account of the *surplice* was not extin-
 “ guished. He writes, that the affairs of Scotland were
 “ not in a quiet state : some of the chief of the nobility
 “ had retired into England ; others fortified themselves
 “ in their castles, and were as in a state of war with the
 “ Papists. The Queen, though an obstinate Papist, yet
 “ does not seem resolved what course she had best take ;
 “ for in matters of religion the greatest part both of the
 “ nobility and people were against her ; and their num-
 “ ber did daily increase. The King of Spain sent lately
 “ an Italian abbot thither with Spanish gold. He was
 “ a subtle and crafty man, and did so far gain not only
 “ on the Queen, but on the King, that though he had
 “ hitherto gone to sermons, and had no mass, yet upon
 “ the assurance of a rich ship that was expected within
 “ a day, he presently ordered mass to be said in his
 “ church ; while Knox in the very next church was

Of the af-
 fairs of
 Scotland.
 Collect.
 Numb. 88.

VOL. III.

N N

PART III. "preaching against idolatry, and the whole Papal tyr-
 1566. "ranny, with greater zeal than ordinary : but the Span-
 "ish ship was furiously shattered by a storm, and was
 "cast on the coast of England ; so that weak King
 "would find what he had gained by his going to mass."
 Sampson and Humphreys wrote a long and particular
 answer to the letter that Grindal and Horn wrote to
 Bullinger ; but that runs into a tedious controversy, with
 which the divines of Zurick wrote that they would med-
 dle no more in those matters : so I do not think fit to
 insert it.

"They complain that the Archbishop had contri-
 "buted to buy an organ for Canterbury, which was no
 "sign of his disliking it. They complain that many
 "were put in prison because they would not provide
 "godfathers and godmothers for baptizing their chil-
 "dren : they say the Convocation signified little ; for
 "many things were agreed to in the Convocation in
 "the year 1562, that would have tended to the great
 "good of the church, but were suppressed : for nothing
 "was of force but as the Queen and the Archbishop
 "consented. And in the last Convocation, a very
 "learned man that belonged to the Bishop of Norwich
 "proposed somewhat relating to the vestments : to
 "whom a bishop said, What have you to do in those
 "matters ? We began them, and we will end them. He
 "answered the bishop, This matter has been hitherto
 "laid wholly on the Queen, but now you take it on
 "yourselves. They also in another paper set forth, that
 "in Queen Mary's days, when the Church of England
 "was broken and dispersed, a body of Protestants
 "formed themselves into a church at London, and had
 "their ministers and deacons, and continued through
 "all her reign, though many of them were burned :
 "but that, after Queen Mary's death, the exiles were
 "recalled, and the prisoners were set at liberty ; only

“ this church that had continued all the while in the BOOK
 “ midst of the flame was now extinguished. In an- VI.
 “ other letter he assures Simler there was no danger of 1566.
 “ Lutheranism ; only we are now fighting among our-
 “ selves about ceremonies, vestments, and matters of
 “ no importance. That matter has somewhat shaken
 “ men of weak minds : I wish that all, even the smallest
 “ remnants of popery could be wholly put, not only out
 “ of our churches, but chiefly out of the minds of all
 “ people ; but the Queen at this time cannot bear any
 “ alteration in religion.”

I shall carry this matter no farther, having gone beyond what I had at first proposed by the importance of these papers, that give so clear and so true an account of the beginnings of those unhappy disputes, of which we have seen and do still feel the unhappy consequences. In these we clearly see what was the sense of the most eminent and the most learned of our reformers in those matters. They continued their correspondence with Zurick as long as those great men lived with whom they had lodged in their great distress, and to whom they had been so singularly obliged, that they were ready always to acknowledge it, and were often sending presents to them.

In Scotland things were running into great disorder. The Queen of Scots marries the Lord Darnley.
 The Queen, as she liked the person of the Lord Darnley, and perhaps the better, because he seemed to be of a soft and gentle temper, and easy to be governed ; so her faithfulest counsellors concurred in advising the marriage. He was the next heir to the crown of England after the Queen : for though the Queen Dowager of Scotland, that was Henry the Eighth's sister, having married the Earl of Angus, after King James the Fourth was killed ; but falling to be in ill terms with him, either found or suborned witnesses (as it was given out) to prove upon him a precontract in words of the present

PART time, by which she obtained a sentence dissolving that
 III. marriage: yet the daughter she had born to him was
 1566. declared legitimate, in the bull that confirmed the sen-
 tence, declaring that marriage dissolved, the original of
 which I saw: the reason given is, because she was born
 of the mother's part *bona fide*. Lord Darnley being thus
 descended, and born within the kingdom of England,
 might have been a dangerous competitor for that crown,
 especially if he should fortify himself by a prudent
 marriage, and a good conduct in England: so it was
 certainly good advice given the Queen, since she liked
 his person, to secure her right to that succession by this
 marriage. When she married him she declared him
 King, and put his name on the coin after her own.
 The qualities of his mind did not answer the graceful-
 ness of his person: for sometimes he was in all things
 compliant to the Queen; but that lasted not long. She
 had such an affable and obliging air, which her educa-
 tion in the court of France had much improved, that it
 was not easy to resist it. At first she seemed so indif-
 ferent as to the matters of religion, that the minds of
 the nation were much quieted, when they concluded
 that she continued to be a Papist more from principles
 of honour and interest than from her own persuasion.

She shows
 more zeal
 in her re-
 ligion.

But they came to have other thoughts of her when
 she began to express more zeal in those matters. Her
 kindred by her mother pushed her on; and she was ani-
 mated both from the court of France, and from Rome,
 to restore the Popish religion: on these hopes she set
 her gates open to all that desired to come to her mass,
 and had many masses every day in her chapel. The
 body of the Scottish nation did not easily bear with the
 mass, which the Queen had at first privately in her
 court for herself, and for a very small number of ser-
 vants, who were of her own religion. In the parliament
 in the year 1563, a petition was offered by the noble-

men, and the superintendents, and ministers of the re-
 BOOK VI.
 formed religion, which will be found in the Collection, 1566.
 setting forth, That whereas in the last convention of the Collect.
 Kirk, that was held at Edinburgh in June last, some Numb. 89.
 were sent to the Queen with certain articles, to which
 they desired answer; and though the Queen had an-
 swered them in part, yet she referred the farther answer
 to the present parliament: so a full answer was now
 prayed. And whereas in the parliament held in July
 1560, it was enacted, that the mass, and all papistry
 should be put out of the realm, and Christ's religion
 should be universally received; and that the Queen, by
 divers proclamations, has approved Christ's religion,
 which she found publicly received at her arrival, in
 particular at Dundee, on the 15th of September last, in
 which the King and Queen did, both by act of Council
 and by proclamation, promise, that in this present par-
 liament she would establish the religion of Christ, and
 abolish all laws and constitutions contrary to the same;
 upon which they desired, that the premises might be
 considered: and so they laid before the parliament the
 articles which they had laid before the Queen and her
 Council, together with her answer, and the reply made
 to it by the Kirk.

In the articles they demand first, That the papistical
 mass, with all idolatry, and the Pope's jurisdiction, might
 be abolished, not only in the subjects, but in the Queen's
 own person: and that the true religion might be rati-
 fied through the whole kingdom, as well in the Queen's
 person, as in the subjects: and that the people might
 be required to resort on Sundays to prayers and preach-
 ing, as they were before to the idolatrous mass. Se-
 condly, that provision may be made for the ministers'
 maintenance; and that such as are admitted into the
 ministry may have their livings assigned them where
 they labour, or in parts adjacent; and that they may

PART not be put to crave them of others: and that the benefices then vacant, or that have been vacant since March
III.
 1566.] anno 1558, or that shall become vacant, be given to learned persons, able to preach God's word, upon their trial and admission by the superintendents. And that no bishoprick, abbey, or other ecclesiastical benefice, having many churches annexed to it, be given to any one man: but that the churches may be severally disposed of, so that every man may serve at his own church; and that glebes and manses be assigned to them, that they may reside at their churches, and discharge their consciences in them; and that the churches may be kept in due repair. Thirdly, That none may have charge of souls, or be put in colleges or universities, or publicly instruct the youth, but such as are tried by the superintendents and the visitors of the churches, and are admitted by them. Fourthly, That lands founded for hospitals may be restored to the use of the poor; and that all rents and profits belonging to any order of friars be applied to the poor, and for schools in towns. Fifthly, that horrid crimes, blasphemy, sorcery, adultery, incest, and murder, with many other crimes that are reckoned up, may be severely punished; and that some order may be taken for the ease of the labourers of the ground, concerning the reasonable payment of their tithes, and in the letting of them.

The
 Queen's
 answer to
 them.

To this the Queen answered, " That as she did not
 " think that there was any impiety in the mass; so she
 " hoped her subjects would not press her to receive any
 " religion against her own conscience, which would
 " throw her into a perpetual unquietness, by the remorse of her conscience. She would never leave the
 " religion in which she had been brought up. And it
 " would be further a great prejudice to her, in that, by
 " her so doing, she should lose the friendship of the

“ King of France, the ancient ally of this kingdom, and
 “ of other Princes, from whom she may find great sup-
 “ ports : so she will not in an instant put herself in
 “ hazard of losing all her friends. And since she has
 “ not yet pressed, nor means she hereafter to press, the
 “ conscience of any man, but leaves them to worship
 “ God according to their persuasion, she hopes they
 “ will not press her to offend her own conscience. But
 “ when the parliament meets, her Majesty will consent
 “ to every thing that the three estates shall agree upon ;
 “ and she renews the assurance she had given, that
 “ men’s lives or estates shall be in no hazard for any
 “ cause of religion.”

As to the second article, “ The Queen thought it not
 “ reasonable that she should deprive herself of so great
 “ a part of the patrimony of the crown, by putting the
 “ patronage of benefices out of her hands ; for her own
 “ necessity required the keeping them in her own
 “ hands : yet she was contented to assign what might
 “ serve for the reasonable sustentation of the mini-
 “ sters. She referred the other articles to the parlia-
 “ ment.”

To this answer the Kirk replied, “ That the firmness
 “ she expressed to the mass gave no small grief to her
 “ good subjects. Their religion was no other than that
 “ which Christ revealed, and his Apostles preached ;
 “ which differed from the impiety of the Turks, the
 “ blasphemy of the Jews, and the vain superstition of
 “ the Papists.” And upon that, as they run out into a
 high commendation of their religion, so “ they require
 “ the Queen, in the name of God, to embrace the means
 “ by which she may be persuaded to the truth : which
 “ they offered presently to her, by the preaching of
 “ God’s word, and by public disputation against the ad-
 “ versaries of it, whensoever she thought it expedient.
 “ And as for the mass, they undertook to prove it to be

PART " a mass of impiety, from the beginning to the end.
III. " As for the prejudice that the Queen thinks would fol-
 1566. " low on her changing her religion, by dissolving the
 " alliance she is in with the King of France, and other
 " foreign princes; they answer, that the true religion
 " is the undoubted means to keep up a perfect confede-
 " racy with him, who is the *King of Kings*, and who
 " has the hearts of all princes in his hands; which
 " ought to be more valued than all other confederacies
 " whatsoever."

As to the second article; " They did not intend to
 " defraud her of the patronages; but only, that persons
 " presented to benefices should be tried and examined
 " by the learned men of the Kirk, or the superintend-
 " ents appointed for that end. But as the presentations
 " belong to her, so collation upon them belongs to the
 " church; and the patrons may not present without
 " trial and examination: which if they might do, must
 " bring great ignorance and disorder into the church.
 " And it was far against all good conscience for the
 " Queen to retain a good part of the benefices in her
 " own hands. This was so contrary both to all divine
 " and human laws, that they were unwilling to open up
 " that whole matter to her. And therefore they beg
 " she would consider, that though the patronage of
 " benefices belonged to her, yet the retention of them
 " in her own hands, and the not giving them to quali-
 " fied persons, is ungodly, and contrary to all order,
 " and ruinous to the souls of the people. They were
 " desirous to have her necessities relieved: but they
 " add, that the tithes are the patrimony of the church;
 " out of which, in the first place, those who serve in
 " the ministry ought to be relieved, the churches ought
 " to be repaired, and the youth instructed. They con-
 " cluded with thanks for her willingness to have the
 " ministers provided for: and they pray, that a spe-

“ cial condescending on particulars may be thought
“ on.”

BOOK VI.

But all these petitions were still put off: and the
Queen, by her practice among the nobility, began to
divide them into factions; and plainly said, when these
petitions were read to her, that *she would do nothing in* ^{1566.} *Spotswood.*
prejudice of the religion that she professed: and in
wrath told them, *She hoped, before a year was expired,*
to have the mass, and the Catholic religion professed
through the whole kingdom. And she managed the
parliament so dexterously, that neither was the treaty
of Leith, nor the settlement of religion made in the
parliament 1560, so much as named, much less con-
firmed. In this parliament, some small provision was
made for the ministers; and acts were made against
sorcery and adultery, that they should be punished by
death. There was indeed an act of oblivion passed
for all that was done from the 6th of March 1558, to
the 1st of September 1561: but the parliament of the
year 1560 came to be looked on as an illegal assembly:
so that upon this a great alarm was given to the whole
body of the reformed in that kingdom; and the jealousy
was increased by the Queen's marrying the Lord
Darnley. He had been bred up a strict Papist, but now
pretended to be a Protestant; yet as he was all the
while suspected of favouring the religion he was bred
up in, so he quickly returned to the open profession of
it. This gave occasion to another petition in a bolder
strain, in which the body of the reformed set forth,
“ that the true religion was established in that nation;
“ that the mass, and all the idolatry and tyrannical
“ usurpations of the Pope, were suppressed, and that
“ they were going on to a perfect reformation: but that
“ all had been stopped now for the space of four years.
“ That upon her arrival, that idol the mass was again
“ set up, and men were put in offices, to which they

PART III. 1566. " had no right. From such beginnings, they saw what
 " they might look for: yet, in hope that God would
 " mollify the Queen's heart, and out of their desire to
 " maintain the public peace, they had long expected to
 " see what answer would be made to their petitions.
 " But they saw things grew daily worse and worse.
 " The Queen's gates were then set open, in contempt
 " of proclamations set out by herself to the contrary.
 " The patrimony of the church was bestowed on un-
 " worthy persons: their ministers were reduced to
 " great poverty, and put to much trouble. Vices of all
 " sorts abounded universally: they therefore prayed the
 " Queen to think of redressing these matters, and to
 " answer their other petitions; assuring her of all due
 " obedience to her laws and authority. They also
 " pray, that she would give them no occasion to think
 " that she intended the subversion of the true religion,
 " and the destruction of those who professed it: for
 " they assure her, they would never be subject to that
 " Roman Antichrist, nor suffer (as far as it lay in their
 " power to hinder it) any branches of his usurped au-
 " thority to have place within the realm." This, which
 Collect. Numb. 90. is in the Collection, prevailed no more than their
 other petitions had done.

I will add to this a few particulars relating to the af-
 fairs of Scotland, as they are set forth in some of these
 letters that were sent me from Zurick. Parkhurst, Bi-
 shop of Norwich, in a letter to Bullinger, (which is in
 Collect. Numb. 91. the Collection,) writes in the year 1566, " that in March
 " last, an Italian, called Signior David, (whom he
 " charges as skilled in necromancy,) who was in great
 " favour with the Queen, was dragged out of her room,
 " and stabbed by many hands. And adds, that an
 " abbot was then so wounded, that though he escaped,
 " yet he died of his wounds soon after: and that one
 " Black, a Dominican, in great esteem among the Pa-

" pists, was also killed in the court. And upon all **BOOK**
 " that disorder, while the Privy-Council was sitting, **VI.**
 " the Lords escaped with their lives. Since that time, **1566.**
 " the Queen had brought forth a Prince; she was re-
 " conciled to her husband, and had called home her
 " brother, and the Lords that were of the reformed
 " side: but though the Queen had born her son ten
 " weeks before he wrote, yet all that while he was not
 " baptized; for she intended to do it with pomp, and
 " many masses in the great church, though the inha-
 " bitants of Edinburgh were resolved to hinder that:
 " they apprehended she would bring over a force from
 " France: he concludes with a prayer, not very evan-
 " gelical, that *God would either convert, or confound*
 " *her*. There are circumstances in this letter, of some
 " others killed with Signior David, that I have found
 " no where else."

About the same time, Grindal wrote likewise a letter
 to Bullinger, which is also in the Collection; in which **Collect.**
 he thanks him for the letters he had written over **Numb. 92.**
 concerning the controversy about the habits. He writes,
 " that it was not credible that a question about things
 " of no moment should have raised so great a disturb-
 " ance as this had done: many, both of the ministers
 " and the people, were designing to withdraw from
 " them, and to set up separate meetings; but most of
 " them were now come to a better mind. He acknow-
 " ledges their wise and good letters had contributed
 " much towards that: yet some continued still in their
 " former resolutions. It were an easy thing to recon-
 " cile them to the Queen, if they could be brought to
 " change their mind: but till that was done, it was not
 " in their power to effect it. The bishops upon their
 " return, and before they were consecrated, had endea-
 " voured all they could to get those things removed
 " that gave occasion to the present dispute: but in that

PART “ they could not prevail, neither with the Queen, nor
III. “ with the parliament. So they, upon consulting among

1566. “ themselves, came to a resolution, not to desert their
 “ churches for the sake of a few rites that were not un-
 “ lawful, since the doctrine was entire and pure ; in
 “ which they agreed in all things with them of Zurick.
 “ They saw the good effects of these their resolutions :
 “ and those unseasonable contentions about things in-
 “ different did not edify, but tear the churches.

“ From their own affairs he turns to those of Scot-
 “ land ; where, he writes, things were in no good state.
 “ They still retained the profession of the truth ; but
 “ the Queen endeavoured by all means to extirpate it :
 “ she had lately ordered six or seven masses to be said
 “ every day in her chapel, and admitted all that pleased
 “ to come to them : whereas at first she was contented
 “ with one private mass, to which no Scotchman was
 “ admitted. And whereas it was provided that the mini-
 “ sters should be maintained out of the revenues of the
 “ church ; she had now for three years stopped all pay-
 “ ments. There were no public changes yet made ; both
 “ the nobility and the people continued very firm ; of
 “ whom he reckons the Earl of Murray the chief. He
 “ understood that the Queen was in very ill terms with
 “ her husband on this account. There was one David,
 “ an Italian, recommended to her by the Cardinal of
 “ Lorrain, who governed all the councils there, and
 “ was Secretary of State. The King, finding he had
 “ no regard to him, grew uneasy at it ; and being young
 “ and rash, he entered into a conspiracy with some of
 “ the nobility, and some of his court : so the Italian
 “ was dragged out of the Queen’s presence, notwith-
 “ standing her earnest intreaties to save him ; and he
 “ was no sooner out, than many run their daggers into
 “ him : so he was murdered without any cause declared.
 “ This horrid crime stuck deep in the Queen’s heart ;

“ so that, though she had born a son to him, she could
 “ never forgive him.”

BOOK
 VI.

The dismal fate of that unfortunate Queen is so tender a point, that I will say nothing of it, but in the words of others. There is a letter of Grindal's to Bullinger, dated the 21st of June, 1567. All in that letter which relates to this matter is in the Collection; in which these words will be found: “ Scotland is fallen
 “ into new troubles; for their late King Henry, on the
 “ 10th of February, was found dead in a garden near
 “ his lodgings. It is not yet agreed how he died. Some
 “ say, that a few barrels of gunpowder, being on design
 “ laid under the chamber in which he lay, these being
 “ kindled, the house was blown up, and so he was
 “ thrown out into that garden. Others say, that in the
 “ night he was dragged out of his chamber and strangled,
 “ and that then the house was blown up. The Earl of
 “ Bothwel was generally thought the author of this
 “ murder. He also procured, by the authority of the
 “ Archbishop of St. Andrew's, a divorce from his lawful
 “ wife: and on the 15th of May last, the Queen had
 “ married him, and created him Duke of Orkney. Almost all the nobility had left the court before this
 “ marriage, when they saw that no inquiry was made
 “ into the King's murder: they had a meeting at Stirling, where it appeared, by clear evidences, that the
 “ murder was committed by Bothwel: so an army was
 “ brought together on design to seize on him, but he
 “ made his escape; and it was not then known whither
 “ he was gone. Some say, the Queen was besieged in
 “ a certain castle; and others say, she was made a prisoner in the castle of Edinburgh, as having been
 “ conscious to the murder of her husband. But whatever
 “ ever may be in this, that infamous marriage must
 “ end tragically. With this he concludes that matter,

1567.

Collect.
 Numb. 92.

PART "promising him a more particular account when the
 III. "certainty of it was better understood."

1567. To this I will add another relation, that may be more certainly depended on. Cardinal Laurea, whom the Pope had sent to be his nuncio in Scotland, may be supposed to have had the best information that he could procure from those of her party, and of her religion, and he would certainly have put the best face possible on that matter; especially after her tragical fate, which raised an universal disposition in all people to think as well of her as was possible; but chiefly among those of that religion: so that I know no relation of that affair that can be so certainly depended on, (making still some allowances for the softenings of a partial writer,) as that which we find in that Cardinal's Life, which was written by the Abbot of Piggerol, and was printed at Bologna in the year 1599; in which he gives this account of this whole matter.

Pope Pius the Fifth sent Laurea to be his nuncio in Scotland, to assist and encourage the Queen in her zeal: he sent by him 20,000 crowns to her, as an earnest of further supplies; and wrote to her with his own hand, recommending his nuncio to her. The nuncio came to Paris in the dog-days, and brought him who writes his life along with him to be his secretary. He received letters from the Queen of Scots by the hands of the Archbishop of Glasgow, who was then her ambassador in France: by these she expressed her desires that he might come to Scotland as soon as might be; but wished him to delay coming till he should hear from her once more, that she might have all things prepared for his reception. He upon that wrote to her in a very vehement style, pressing her to zeal and fortitude of mind, in carrying on the restoring the catholic religion in her kingdom: with that he sent her over 4,000

crowns, and sent one Edmund Hay, a Jesuit, and a BOOK
 man of a cunning and penetrating temper, to be a se- VI.
 cret assistant to her: in particular, he pressed her 1567.
 either to punish, or at least to disgrace Lethington, who
 he believed set on all the tumults, and was a deter-
 mined heretic, and a favourer of the Earl of Murray.

Con has printed these letters. Pius the Fifth's letter Life of Queen Mary, printed at Rome, an. 1624.
 bears date the 16th of June, 1566. In it "he recom-
 mends his nuncio to her confidence, who was then
 Bishop of Mondovi, (Montis Regalis,) and promises
 all possible assistance to her, in her design of bring-
 ing back her kingdom to the obedience of the holy
 see." Queen Mary's answer bears date the 9th of
 October that year, from Edinburgh: "she in it ac-
 knowledges the Pope's favour and bounty to her; she
 adds some high expressions of her sense of the Pope's
 zeal and piety, and promises to treat his nuncio with
 all respect and confidence. She tells him, that she
 had born a son; and that she had brought her no-
 bility, though not without much difficulty, to consent
 that he should be publicly baptized after the manner
 of the catholic church. She promises to bring him
 up in that religion: and she hoped this should prove
 a good beginning of restoring the right use of the
 sacraments in her dominions." The Pope seemed
 much pleased with this beginning of his pontificate;
 and in his answer, on the 22d of January following,
 he congratulates the birth and baptism of her son,
 and prays that it may have a good effect."

Three months passed before Laurea had any intima-
 tion from the Queen concerning his coming over: upon
 which he sent the Bishop of Dunblane, who was then
 at Paris, with copious advices to that Queen, and con-
 tinued to press her very earnestly by his letters to ad-
 mit of his coming over: the substance of all which is
 set forth in his Life. He tells us further, "that the

PART III. " Queen held a convention of the estates, and had obtained two things of them, not without difficulty :

1567. " the one was, that her child should be baptized according to the rites of the Roman church ; and the other was, that the Pope's nuncio should be admitted " with due respect." Upon this the nuncio designed to go to Antwerp, thinking that the navigation would be safer from thence than from Calais. But then he adds, " that such a barbarous and impious crime was committed in Scotland, that it gave a horror to think " of it, much more to write of it." Of what follows in that Life I will add a verbal translation.

" The King, as was said, had the small-pox ; upon which, that the contagion might not endanger the Queen, he retired to a house at some distance from the palace. As he began to recover, he was often visited by her : one day they supped together, and after much discourse, and that they had diverted themselves till it was late, the Queen pretended she could not stay with him all night, for one of her maids of honour being married that day, she must, according to the custom of former Queens, see the bride put to bed. She was scarce gone, when some gun-powder, that was secretly laid under the house, was fired, so that the whole house was blown up, and the King killed : though some said, that he was not blown up ; but that, hearing some noise of armed men, he had got out by a back door into a neighbouring garden, and that he, and one of his servants, were strangled before the house was blown up. It is certain that the King's dead body was found in that garden, with no other hurt, but that about his neck a blackness appeared all round it. When this base murder was known, all people were struck with horror : some spoke severely of the Queen herself ; libels were published upon it ; and some having discovered

“ that Bothwel was the author of this horrid murder, BOOK
 “ they charged him, as being not only an assassinate, VI.
 “ but a cruel hangman. It being on such occasions 1567.
 “ ordinary for people to search into, and to discover
 “ such things.

“ Bothwel, though a heretic, had been always zealous
 “ for the Queen, and faithful to her; and he had lately
 “ with great courage rescued her out of a danger she
 “ was in from a very great sedition: besides that, the
 “ Queen loved him *desperately*; therefore he, in hope
 “ to be married to the Queen, first divorced his wife, as
 “ if upon adultery that might be so done, that he might
 “ marry another wife, and then he cruelly contrived
 “ the murdering the King. The Queen, after she had
 “ borne down some very wicked reports concerning her-
 “ self and Bothwel, being afraid of some tumult, that
 “ might have been fatal to them, thought fit to leave
 “ Edinburgh. So she carried her son with her to
 “ Stirling, a place of defence; having laid (as is proba-
 “ ble) a design with Bothwel how matters were to be
 “ managed. A few days after, she pretended to go out
 “ a hunting; then Bothwel with 200 horse seemed to
 “ surprise her, and to seize her by force. But the
 “ Queen coming back with him to the Castle, presently
 “ made him Duke of Orkney, and declared him her
 “ husband. That marriage did neither prove happy,
 “ nor lasting; it being a conjunction that had nothing
 “ of the matrimonial dignity in it, but had sprung from
 “ a partnership in an unworthy crime. Murray was
 “ then out of Scotland; but he had left Ledington among
 “ others behind him, who were to raise new quarrels
 “ and tumults upon every occasion. It was easy to
 “ Ledington to work up the minds of the people, who
 “ were universally enraged against the Queen and
 “ Bothwel, to a great flame: therefore a tumultuary
 “ army being in haste brought together at Edinburgh,

PART III. 1567. " they marched towards Stirling. But when the Queen
 " heard that, she, with a few women, and some of her
 " court, went to them. They received her with due
 " respect: and being asked, why they came thither
 " armed; they answered, they came only to punish
 " Bothwel for the crimes committed by him, both in
 " the base and cruel murder of the King, and in the
 " force he had put on her person. The Queen justified
 " Bothwel; and said, he had done nothing but by
 " her consent. This did provoke them to such a degree
 " of indignation, that they cried all out with one voice,
 " *Then, Madam, you shall be our prisoner*: and without
 " more delay, they imprisoned her in a castle within an
 " island in Lochleven; appointing only one footman
 " and two ordinary women to attend upon her."

Thus the Pope's nuncio understood this matter. There are some inconsiderable circumstances in this relation wrong told; yet the main of the story agreeing with other relations, shows how falsely this matter has been since that time represented, not only by writers in the church of Rome, but by many among ourselves, to put better colours on this odious business. To this (that I may end all this unhappy matter at once, without adding any reflections on it, or telling what were the censures that passed on this occasion; of which I have a great variety on both sides by me, in books printed very near that time) I shall only add another very important passage, that is in the Life of that Cardinal, relating to the testament which that Queen wrote with her own hand in French, the day before she was beheaded. In it, " she expressed her constant zeal for
 " the catholic religion; and provided, that, if the Prince
 " her son did not renounce the false and heretical persuasion which he had drunk in, the inheritance of the
 " crown of England should never descend to him; but
 " should devolve from him to Philip King of Spain.

P. 72.

“ When this original will was brought to the Cardinal, BOOK
 “ he examined it with great care ; that so it might ap- VI.
 “ pear that it was truly her last will, and that it ought 1567.
 “ to be acknowledged as such. He compared it with
 “ the letters he had formerly received from that Queen :
 “ and not only he himself, but one Lewis Owen, an
 “ Englishman, (Bishop of Casana,) then at Rome, whom
 “ the writer calls a pious and a most honest man, signed
 “ and attested it. The will being thus confirmed, and
 “ as it were fortified by a public authority, he delivered
 “ it to the Count of Olivares, the King of Spain’s am-
 “ bassador, that it might be faithfully transmitted to
 “ that King himself.” I have put the words of the
 author of that life, in the language in which he wrote
 it, in the Collection ; so that the reader may compare Collect.
 the translation I have given with the original. I leave Numb. 94.
 this dismal relation as I found it in these vouchers,
 without any further canvassing of that black affair ;
 which was followed by a train of very extraordinary
 transactions.

The Scottish nation, both Papists and Protestants,
 concurred in the new settlement ; of which I shall give
 a particular account from an authentic proof lately found
 in Scotland, and now kept in the library of the college
 of Glasgow : it is the first bond of association that was
 entered into, upon the resignation of the crown, which
 the Queen was prevailed on to make ; (by force, as she
 afterwards declared, when she made her escape out of
 the prison, with which she was threatened :) she sent
 it by the Lord Lindsay (ancestor to the Earl of Craw-
 ford) and the Lord Ruthven, afterwards made Earl of
 Gowry. This bears date at Edinburgh the 24th of
 July, 1567. By it, she resigned the crown to her son ;
 and during his infancy she named the Earl of Murray
 to be Regent, who was then in France, and did not
 come to Scotland, at least he did not sign this bond be-

PART fore the 22d of August. But in the Council-book, on
III. the 25th of July, the bond itself is entered on record :

1567.

Collect.
Numb. 95.

and the Council removing to Stirling on the 29th of July, the Queen's resignation was presented, and received by the Earls of Morton, Athol, Glencairn, Mar, Monteith, the Master of Grame, the Lord Home, and the Bishop of Orkney, in the name of the three estates : and the Earl of Morton taking the coronation oath in the name of the Prince, he was anointed and crowned by the Bishop of Orkney : who did indeed little honour to this ceremony ; for he, a few days before, had performed the nuptial ceremonies between the Queen and the Earl of Bothwel. Upon all this, the bond (which is in the Collection) was made to this purpose ; " That
 " whereas the Queen, being weary of the pains and travail of government, and desiring that in her life-time
 " her son might be placed in the kingdom, and be
 " obeyed by all her subjects, had resigned the crown
 " in favour of her son : they therefore promised, and
 " bound themselves to assist their King, in setting him
 " on the throne, and putting the crown on his head ;
 " and that they should give their oaths of homage,
 " with all dutiful obedience, to him, as became true
 " subjects, and should concur in establishing him in
 " his kingdom, and resist all such as should oppose it."

This was made up in some sheets of vellum ; and there are above two hundred hands of the most eminent families of that kingdom set to that bond. Twenty-five of these were then earls and lords ; and there are fifteen others, whose families are since that time advanced to be of the nobility. The noblemen are, the Earl of Murray, (who signs *James Regent*,) the Earls of Huntley, Argyle, Athol, Morton, Mar, Glencairn, Errol, Buchan ; the Lords Graham, Home, Ruthen, Sanquar, Glams, Lindsay, Carlisle, Borthwick, Innermaith, Uchiltry, Sempil, Methyen, Cathcart, Grey, Ross, Lovat, and the

Master of Montross : for earls' sons were then so de-BOOK
signed. The noble families, whose ancestors signed VI.
this bond, are, Buccleugh, Queensberry, Athol, Rox- 1567.
burgh, Anandale, Galloway, Findlater, Panmur, Dal-
housy, Leven, Stair, Kenmore, Jedburgh, Cranston,
Kircudbright.

Besides those who subscribed the first bond, there was a second bond (that is likewise in the Collection) Collect.
entered into in April 1569; "by which they did not Numb. 96.
"only acknowledge the King's authority, but likewise
" (during the King's minority) the authority of the
" Earl of Murray, as Regent; renouncing all other au-
" thority. And they swear to observe this bond; in
" which if they failed, they are contented to be counted
" false, perjured, and defamed for ever." This, besides
many of those who signed the former bond, was signed
by the Earls of Crawford and Cassilis, and the Lords
Salton, Ogilby, Oliphant, and the ancestors of the
Earls of Seaforth and Southesk, and of the Lord Duffus.
And in a subsequent bond, signed to the Earl of Mor-
ton when he was Regent, there are five other lords
who signed it: the Earl of Angus, ancestor to the Duke
of Douglas, the Lords Levingston, Drummond, Boyd,
and Hoy of Yester, the ancestors of the Earls of Lin-
lithgow, Perth, and Kilmarnock, and of the Marquis of
Tweeddale.

These were for the greatest part Protestants: but Papists
there were many Papists that joined with them. The joined with
Earl of Huntley, ancestor to the present Duke of Gor- Protestants.
don, was the head of the Popish party. The Earl of
Athol, whose name was Stuart, and whose family is
since extinct in the male line, protested against the re-
formation in parliament, and had assisted at the bap-
tism of the young King, in the Popish manner. And
besides these, the Lords Oliphant, Grey, Sempil, Max-
well, and Borthwick, were still Papists. Thus, as the

PART war against the Queen Regent (eight years before) was
III. engaged in on national grounds, this great revolution of
 1567. that kingdom seems to have proceeded, as to the civil
 part, upon the same principles. So that whatsoever
 was done in this matter, was done, not upon the
 grounds of the Reformation, but upon national grounds,
 and pretended precedents and laws: in all which the
 Queen of England had secretly a great hand, how much
 soever it was disguised or denied.

The rea-
 sons that
 moved
 Queen E-
 lizabeth to
 be jealous
 of the
 King of
 Scotland.

The interest of state was clearly of her side: for the
 house of Guise, that began to form great projects in
 France, laid a main part of their scheme in the design
 of advancing the unfortunate Queen of Scotland to the
 crown of England: and in the view of that succession,
 many plots were formed to destroy that glorious Queen.
 They also practised upon the King her son, as soon as
 he was capable of being wrought on, by the Duke of
 Lenox, and others; whom they employed about him,
 to keep him in a dependance on them. They assured
 him, he should still be King of Scotland; their design
 being, that if their practices against Queen Elizabeth
 had succeeded, his mother should have left Scotland to
 him, when she was advanced to the crown of England.
 They did likewise engage him to continue unmarried:
 though he, being the only person of his family, it was
 otherwise very reasonable to marry him soon. Yet
 they durst not venture on a Popish match till their
 great design on the crown of France had succeeded:
 and they would by no means suffer him to marry into
 a Protestant family.

They kept him so much in their management, that
 the Queen of England, and her wise Council, under-
 standing all this practice, raised those jealousies of his
 religion, and made such discoveries of that secret cor-
 respondence he was in with the house of Guise, that
 to this all the troubles that the Kirk gave him were

chiefly owing. The leaders among them knew, from BOOK VI. the intelligence sent them by the court of England, 1567. more than they thought fit to own, or than could be well proved. This was the true cause of all that peevish The effects that this had. opposition that he met with from the ministers there; which is copiously set forth by Archbishop Spotswood. But either he knew not, or did not think fit to set that out, as the effect of the jealousy raised by the court of England, on the account of the confidence, in which he was engaged with the house of Guise.

But as these practices had a fatal conclusion with relation to the unfortunate Queen Mary, after her long imprisonment, so when upon the murder of the Duke of Guise, and the successes in the beginning of Henry the Fourth of France's reign, all those projects of that ambitious and persecuting house were at an end; the King of Scotland married to a daughter of Denmark, and continued still after that in a confidence with the Queen of England, which secured to him the succession to that crown.

In giving this short view, which I thought important, and in which I was instructed by many papers that I have seen, I have run a great way beyond my design; which was only to open the first settlement of the Reformation in the isle of Great Britain, now happily by her late Majesty united into one kingdom: so that nothing remains to be written in pursuance of that. Only, since upon some public occasions, I have referred to a declaration of Queen Elizabeth's, (by which she owned and justified the assistance that she gave to the subjects, both of Scotland, and in the Netherlands, in the necessary defence, to which the illegal cruelty of their governors forced them;) and since I have been challenged to publish it, not without insinuations that it was a forgery; I have thought it proper to conclude my Collect. Numb. 97. Collection of Records with that declaration; that so a paper

PART of such importance may be preserved, and may be more
 III. generally read.

1567.

The conclusion.

I now conclude this work ; in which, as I have faithfully set out every thing, according to the materials and vouchers with which I was furnished, so I have used all proper means to procure the best information that I could. It remains, that I leave this to posterity, as the authentic history of a series of great transactions, honestly (though often feebly) conducted, with good intentions, and happy beginnings, though not carried on to the perfection that was designed and wished for.

The *proviso* that had passed in King Henry the Eighth's time, that continued all the canon-law then received in England, till a code of ecclesiastical laws was prepared, which though attempted, and well composed, was never settled ; has fixed among us many gross abuses, besides the dilatory forms of those courts, which make all proceedings in them both slow and chargeable. This has in a great measure enervated all church-discipline. A faint wish, that is read on Ash-Wednesday, intimates a desire of reviving the ancient discipline ; yet no progress has been made to render that more effectual.

The exemptions settled by the Papal authority do put many parts of this church in a very disjointed state ; while in some places the laity, and in many others presbyters, exercise episcopal jurisdiction, independent on their bishops ; in contradiction to their principles, while they assert a divine right for settling the government of the church in bishops, and yet practise episcopal authority in the virtue of an act of parliament, that provisionally confirmed those papal invasions of the episcopal power ; which is plainly that, which by a modern name is called Erastianism, and is so severely censured by some who yet practise it ; since whatsoever

is done under the pretence of law, against the divine appointment, can go under no better name, than the highest and worst degree of Erastianism.

BOOK
VI.
1567.

The abbots, with the devouring monasteries, had swallowed up a great part of that which was the true patrimony of the church : these houses being suppressed, unlimited grants were made of their lands, without reserved provisions for the subsistence of those who were to serve at the altar ; this has put a great part of our clergy under crying necessities ; and though the noble bounty of the late Queen has settled funds for their relief, the good effect of that comes on but slowly : yet it is some comfort to think, that within an age there will be an ample provision for all that serve in the church ; and upon that prospect we may hope that many abuses will be then quite abolished.

But with all these defects, we must rejoice in this, that our doctrine is pure and uncorrupted ; that our worship is truly a *reasonable service*, freed from idolatry and superstition ; and that the main lines of our church government agree to the first constitution of the churches by the Apostles : so that, upon the grounds laid down by St. John, all may hold fellowship with us, since we hold fellowship with the Father, and with the Son Jesus Christ.

May we all adhere firmly to the doctrine of the Apostles, and continue in their fellowship, in sacraments and prayers, suitably to the rules laid down by them ; contending earnestly for the faith delivered by them to the saints, the first Christians ! And may all who believe in God be careful to maintain good works for necessary uses ; which are both good and profitable unto men ; avoiding foolish questions and contentions, for they are unprofitable and vain !

May we all continue to recommend our doctrine and church by a holy and exemplary deportment, shining

PART *as lights, and walking worthy of God, who has called us*
III. *to his kingdom and glory ; improving all the advantages*
1567. *that we have, and bearing with all the defects that we*
labour under, using our best endeavours to have them
redressed ; yet still keeping the unity of the Spirit in
the bond of peace ; waiting for such a glorious conjunc-
ture, as may restore every thing among us to a primitive
purity and splendour : which God may perhaps grant to
the prayers of those who call on him night and day
for it.

But if we never see so happy a time upon earth, we know, if we continue watchful, and *faithful to the death*, we shall arrive at last at a blessed society, of *innumerable companies of angels*, and the *spirits of just men made perfect* ; of whom is composed the *general assembly and church of the first-born, who are written in heaven, who see and enjoy God for ever*. In the view of directing myself and others thither, I have written, and now I do conclude this work.

AN ADDITION.

I HAVE laid out, by all the methods I could think on, for that MS. of Archbishop Spotswood's History, that I mention pag. 491. I once thought I had found it; for I fell on one copy that had belonged to the late Duke of Lauderdale; but it was not that which had belonged to me: yet by that I see, that Archbishop came gradually, and not all at once, out of his first opinion. For in this MS. there is a material difference in the correction that is in the Archbishop's own hand, from the first draught. The first draught is, that Princes *may commit offences deserving deprivation*: but the correction is, *They may fall into great offences*, without any more. A little after he had written, *whatsoever may be thought of this opinion*; which imports some doubt concerning it: these words are struck out; but so that they are still legible. A little after that, the MS. has it, that *by an act of Council, all the errors committed by the Queen Regent were reckoned up*. This is softened, by these words inserted after *errors*; *alleged to have been committed*. Thus it appears, that the Archbishop's first notions had carried him to write in a style that wanted great correction, as his thoughts grew into a better digestion, or as his interests carried him to see things in a different light, from that in which they had at first appeared to him.
